



EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 12

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

Synopsis

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber;

The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation;

The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101: Elusive Heavenly Golden Water

After hearing Di Wei's praise, Li Qiye only smiled and didn't say anything else.

Di Wei saw the four floating swords behind Li Qiye and asked: "You want to take that thing away?"

"I know Grandpa Wei is guarding this place." Li Qiye smiled: "So please go easy on me, I wish to enter."

Di Wei smiled and gently shook his head: "What is this about going easy on you, the most powerful Imperial King of the border and holder of the four swords? According to the rules, you are qualified to enter."

"However, whether you can take the item or not is up to you." Di Wei said: "You aren't the only one to have come here. Even the most powerful general under the Imperial Lord has tried before, but alas, he couldn't take it away."

"I'm quite confident." Li Qiye smiled: "Otherwise I wouldn't have brought these four imperial swords."

Li Qiye couldn't help but chuckle: "Grandpa Wei, are you testing me? The truth is that I might not be too certain. It has been too long so there are virtually no records. Moreover, I think there is more than one name for this item."

“It seems like you have done a lot of preparation.” Di Wei smiled and nodded: “If you can take it away, then it is all yours.”

Li Qiye slightly bowed before speaking with a smile: “Thank you, Grandpa Wei.”

Di Wei shook his head: “There’s no need to thank me. I know that the Imperial Lord back then wanted to take it too, but the conditions weren’t right so he had to give up. It was waiting for the fateful ones. If you are meant for it, then you can naturally take it away. But if not, then all will be in vain.”

“I understand.” Li Qiye acknowledged the fact that he might fail.

Suddenly, Di Wei shifted a tiny bit, but this movement carried the force of a shifting mountain. The stars suddenly turned upside down as a cavernous entrance appeared before Li Qiye.

It was shut tight with two imperial doors. It had an old architectural style with four sword grooves coming together. It seemed that these four swords were sealing the gate.

“Good luck.” Di Wei smilingly said: “If you can take the item away, then my mission can be considered complete. In the future, whether it be on the expedition or to fight for the plateau, I will no longer be tied down.”

Li Qiye gently nodded his head and went towards the entrance.

“Zzz—” Li Qiye took the four swords and pushed them into the corresponding grooves.

“Clank—” The heavy gate finally opened after he inserted all four.

He then entered without any hesitation. Once his figure disappeared inside, the gate slowly closed again.

The cave was not as dark as one would expect. On the contrary, it was very bright with a clear blue sky. One could hear the sounds of crashing waves. This was not a cave drowned in darkness but a vast ocean.

It was difficult for people to expect an ocean waiting behind the entrance of this cave.

“Squeak.” When Li Qiye looked at the sea, he heard a dolphin leap out of the water like a little elf.

Li Qiye smiled and jumped on the dolphin’s back then patted it with a smile: “Little fella, take me to the place where the rainbow rises.”

The dolphin merrily cried out then leaped up high. It took Li Qiye towards the end of the sea through the winds and waves.

It was extremely fast as it carried Li Qiye on this trajectory for a long time. Li Qiye stood on its back and allowed it to go where it pleased while watching the rippling waves of this ocean in silence.

There were many secrets hidden in the Lesser Imperial Devil World, an entire era was buried here. It was once a brilliant era that eventually tracelessly vanished outside of this lesser world.

Eventually, the dolphin stopped after it carried Li Qiye to their destination.

The sight ahead was as beautiful as a surreal dream, capable of ensnaring others. Ahead were many rainbows slowly rising from blue waves all the way to the recesses of the sky. Each of them was heading towards a different direction and destination.

Li Qiye glanced at each rainbow with a faint grin on his face. All of them had a different destination, but only one truly led to that place. The other ones were fruitless paths.

“Only those with the purest of faiths know the real path.” With a chuckle, he took out the Buddhist Lotus and loosened his grip. The flower flew outside as if it had grown wings.

After circling around in the air, it finally stopped in front of a rainbow.

“Buzz!” The flower went into full bloom and sent out a surging Buddhist light. It dyed the rainbow a golden shade.

“That is it.” He immediately knew that the dyed rainbow would take him to the right place.

He set foot on the rainbow and recalled the flower while walking into the sky. The rainbow acted as a bridge to a heavenly kingdom. He was crossing through space from one world to another, from one generation to the next. It seemed that he was going against the current to find out about the past.

Without this rainbow acting as a bridge, one would never be able to reach the other place because it was crossing through time and space. No matter how powerful one might be, they wouldn't be able to pinpoint the coordinates.

There was no sun or moon here. The concept of time did not exist alongside this rainbow either. In this manner, Li Qiye kept on going forward for an unknown amount of time.

Eventually, he made it to his desired location. It was an island in an unknown space.

A refreshing breeze blew by once he reached the island. This was a reason for joy and gave off an indescribable feeling as if one finally met an oasis after a long trek in a desert.

It was not large and there was nothing else on it outside of an extraordinary lake.

Standing by the shore to look at the water, he felt that there was a dreamlike beauty to it. It seemed that it wasn't water flowing within. On a more careful observation, the lake contained flowing golden sand.

This golden sand was very exquisite and gentle to the touch with great moisture. He blinked once and the water in the lake changed. At this time, golden fishes were swimming like little elves, full of spirit. With their swimming, the entire lake exuded a great amount of spirit energy.

Another second passed by and the lake changed again. Now, there were real elves this time. Some were formed by divine swords and others by treasure pagodas or immortal sabers... All were so real yet dreamlike.

If others were here to see these transformations, they wouldn't be able to tell which were real and which were fake. Perhaps everything was fake and all part of an illusion.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, actually knew that everything was real. This was its original state, so no one could discern its authenticity.

Li Qiye murmured while looking at the lake: "Elusive Heavenly Golden Water, after searching for so many moons, who could possibly imagine that it was hidden in a place like this..."

After the sentimental statement, he slowly took out an item left behind by Immortal Emperor Qian Li... the Elusive Heavenly Vase.

In one particular generation, Li Qiye spent a lot of time to find this vase, but he failed. Later on, Immortal Emperor Qian Li found it for him.

The golden water must be stored in the Elusive Heavenly Vase; other items wouldn't be able to contain it. More importantly, without the vase, one wouldn't be able to truly use the water.

“Pluff!” Li Qiye placed the vase in the middle of the lake and allowed it to slowly sink to the bottom.

“Gulp—guk—guk.” The golden water crazily rushed into the bottomless vase that was expediting the process with an extremely powerful force of absorption.

In a short period of time, the vase swallowed all of the water. One could now see the bottom of the lake.

Li Qiye shifted his gaze down to an item at the bottom. It was the size of a thumb and exuded an extraordinary golden brilliance. Each golden ray was as tangible as strings of golden silk.

Moreover, it seemed to have its own life as it crept around slowly.

While looking at it, Li Qiye's brows slightly perched. He took a deep breath and said: “Just like the legends. Everything requires time as a witness. Without time, even the golden water won't do.

No wonder why the Imperial Lord didn't take it back then.”

Li Qiye held the vase and slightly applied a suctioning force onto the item. It was attached to the bottom of the lake and seemed to be very reluctant to leave. However, before the mighty power of the vase, it no longer had a choice and was eventually sucked inside.

After collecting it, Li Qiye patted the vase and said: “A journey of one thousand miles just to take half a step further. Elusive Heavenly Mountain, one day, I will get what I want!”

With that, he put away the vase and left.

Chapter 1102: Challenge

Di Wei looked at Li Qiye who came out from the cave. His eyes slightly shifted as he stated: “You have really done it. You are indeed with no equal, especially with regards to patience. After hunting from one generation to another, the deed has been done.”

“I will be successful in this generation. I have waited for too long, so it is time for me to reap the rewards.” Li Qiye grinned.

“I also pray for your success. It will herald a new generation that even I cannot imagine, an era that has never been seen before.” With that, Di Wei looked at Li Qiye deeply and solemnly said: “Because no one has ever done it before!”

“I shall.” Li Qiye gave a leisurely smile from his heart.

“I hope I can see that day.” Di Wei smiled back. This was a blessing for him as well.

Li Qiye sighed secretly. He knew Di Wei had made his choice. In the end, he said: “When it is time to go, I hope to see you there.”

“Maybe.” Di Wei smiled but didn’t elaborate.

“Grandpa Wei, there is a question I’d like to ask you.” He said while staring at Di Wei.

Di Wei also smiled and replied: “I know what you want to ask. It is about the chosen path of the Imperial Lord, right?”

Li Qiye said in a carefree manner: “Nothing can hide from your eyes.”

Di Wei shook his head: “You have always thought about this matter when you were here at the border. It is just that you couldn’t see through it.” Di Wei lamented softly: “But it is all in the past, just let it go with the wind. Your path and the Imperial Lord’s are different. What’s the point of knowing? What’s the harm of not knowing?”

Li Qiye didn’t ask any further after hearing this answer. He bowed deeply towards Di Wei: “Take care, Grandpa Wei. I hope that we can meet again in an entirely new era.”

“Take care.” Di Wei returned the grand gesture: “Regardless of what happens in the future, there are two things I am proud of in this life. The first is being able to follow the Imperial Lord and the second is knowing someone like you. I have no further pursuits in life except hoping that I can live till that generation where we might be able to meet again.”

Li Qiye nodded his head and left. Di Wei watched his departing shadow until it disappeared from the valley’s entrance.

“Cultivators, what are they truly after?” Di Wei lamented: “Even if one has eternal life, what else is there besides loneliness at the very end?”

The moment Li Qiye left the valley, the girls who were guarding the perimeter turned excited and ran to see him.

Chen Baojiao told him: “Young Noble, some people want to fight you.”

Li Qiye paused and looked ahead. He noticed many people were gathered here, but they stood quite far away from the entrance since they didn’t dare to come closer.

The pair in front of the crowd was Heavenly Emperor Lin and Zhan Shi. At this moment, they stood there calmly; Lin was focused yet carefree while Zhan Shi was as sharp and firm as a javelin.

As for the spectators, they stood far away without making too much sound or carelessly commenting. They could only play nice as spectating bystanders.

Many stared at Li Qiye with fear. It could even be said that those who saw him didn’t dare to breathe out loud.

Today, who in this world wasn’t afraid of Fiercest Li Qiye?! He even dared to kill people from the Soaring Immortal Sect. Was there anything he couldn’t do?

“It seems that the two of you have prepared well.” Li Qiye glanced at Lin and Zhan Shi with a smile.

Lin cupped his fists towards Li Qiye and slowly said: “Brother Li, Brother Zhan and I made a promise to battle you. Today, we have come to formally issue the challenge.”

Despite wanting to challenge Li Qiye, Lin didn’t have any antagonistic thoughts towards him. It was not a battle borne of a grudge!

Li Qiye looked at Zhan Shi and said: “This is a bit surprising. You two should know very well that even if you fight together, you are still not my match. And yet, you are still here today to challenge me.”

“A cultivator has no fear of battle!” Zhan Shi lowered his voice: “Victory and defeat are part of life. Being too afraid to fight is the only true defeat!”

“Good, well said.” Li Qiye clapped his hands approvingly and smiled: “I have many enemies, but those who can truly say these words with ease are few in number.”

Lin took a deep breath and spoke: “Brother Li, our fight this time has nothing to do with feuds or grievances, victory and defeat doesn’t matter either! We know that you are unbeatable, but we want to see your true invincibility this time!”

“I understand.” Li Qiye smiled: “You two felt puzzled about your defeat in the previous encounters as you lost too quickly and couldn’t even get a feel for my power.”

Lin nodded in all seriousness: “We couldn’t see through your strength. No matter what, we want to fight, no matter the result. If we don’t fight you, then even if we have higher accomplishments in the future, it would all be for naught.”

“Okay.” Li Qiye smiled: “Your heart is aiming for the dao, so I shall help you. I won’t borrow external powers or dao and will only use my own power to fight and grant both of you a convincing defeat.”

“Thank you for treating us with respect.” The two of them bowed.

After hearing the conversation, the onlookers held their breaths. This would be a real fight between cultivators, a pure duel.

Li Qiye leisurely said: “Since you two are ready, pick the time and place.”

Lin formally stated: “Tomorrow at this time, at the Skyraising Mountain in the Imperial Border. We will be waiting for your arrival.”

“Alright, I’ll be there.” Li Qiye gently nodded his head and accepted this challenge.

Lin didn’t say anything else. He and Zhan Shi bowed to say goodbye then turned away and disappeared into the horizon.

“A battle between gentlemen.” Someone from the previous generation was moved by this: “I haven’t seen this in a long time.”

“Top geniuses always have some aspects that other people can’t match.” A paragon commented: “Lin is free and unrestrained, Zhan Shi is determined, and Fiercest is straightforward and upright despite his ferocity. They aren’t people that we can compare to.”

The crowd was excited to see this pure fight between cultivators. For the inhabitants of this world, it was easy to find friends who were gentlemen, but much more difficult to have enemies willing to fight with honor.

The three had an unreachable style. This was not only the style of geniuses, but also the style of experienced masters.

“Even an Immortal Emperor at a young age can’t be much better than this.” A God-Monarch spoke with emotions: “What a shame that all three of them were born in the same generation and have to be enemies. Otherwise, they could have become good friends.”

“Even if they won’t become friends, I’m sure they can sympathize and appreciate each other.” Another God-Monarch felt a bit envious: “To be able to meet an enemy like this is also a kind of blessing in life.”

Normally before a battle between geniuses, people would often discuss the outcome. They relished in analyzing who would win.

However, no one bothered to do so today. They only talked about the manner of this duel. Some even felt quite envious of Lin and Zhan Shi being able to fight against Fiercest.

“Hmph, a gentlemen’s duel?” Jikong Wudi snorted after hearing this: “So what! Someone will die anyway!”

With that, his eyes turned cold and exposed a frightening murderous intent.

The Skyraising Mountain was the highest peak in the Imperial Border. It directly pierced into the sky as if the stars were all revolving around it.

Even though the day of the battle had yet to arrive, many cultivators came quite early. For miles around the mountain, cultivators and experts were waiting. Some were hovering in the sky while others stood on the mountains. The majority tried to pick good vantage points to watch this rare battle.

For this particular battle, the atmosphere was very calm. Despite the great amount of spectators, the scene was very quiet. No one wanted to break this calm atmosphere.

Heavenly Emperor Lin and Zhan Shi came early as well. Moreover, each of them carried a wooden coffin along with them. After reaching the top, they placed the coffins beside them.

The spectators were shaken at the sight of the coffins.

“Lin and Zhan Shi are prepared to die in this battle.” Someone couldn’t help but murmur after seeing this scene.

Chapter 1103: Warm Up

The atmosphere of this gentlemanly duel suddenly became more dignified after seeing the coffins. Many people felt slightly apprehensive yet excited.

“What a pity for these two brilliant geniuses. They would shine in any generation and establish some earth-shattering accomplishments.” Many people felt sad for the two.

In fact, before the fight even began, everyone knew that even though the two were strong and their combined power could beat anyone in the younger generation, this was not the case against Li Qiye.

They saw Li Qiye slaughtering God-Monarchs like pigs. No matter how strong these two might be, they wouldn't be stronger than God-Monarchs, especially without imperial weapons.

Regardless of whether this was going to be a fight to the death or not, Heavenly Emperor Lin was still carefree and at ease while Zhan Shi was as calm as a mountain. The thought of death did not affect their dao hearts.

In this aspect, both of them were worthy of admiration. It wouldn't be easy to find geniuses like them who would still choose to fight to the death despite knowing they were no match for Li Qiye.

The world was silent, even the spirited spectators who were

waiting for the fight didn't speak. Lin and Zhan Shi didn't say anything either. They stood there quietly, waiting for Li Qiye.

Moments passed by. Eventually, Li Qiye came in the sky with the girls right behind him.

In the blink of an eye, he was standing on the Skyraising Mountain. He noticed the two and their coffins and had to say: "It seems that you have made your resolve for this battle."

Heavenly Emperor Lin slowly spoke: "I know that Brother Li does not go easy, so survivors are quite rare. Brother Zhan and I also know that we aren't as strong as you, so instead of having to trouble you, we brought our own coffins."

Both Zhan Shi and Lin were indifferent to both life and death as well as the outcome of this battle. In their eyes, all that mattered was the supreme battle about to unfold, a battle in which they could exert their greatest efforts.

"Very well." Li Qiye nodded: "Geniuses are common, but true heroes are rare. On the long path for the dao, it is a great joy in life to be able to meet and fight against heroes."

Lin responded: "It is our honor to go all out against Brother Li. This battle will leave us no regrets in life."

The battle between the three great geniuses of the contemporary was about to begin. No one wanted to miss this.

Li Qiye looked at Zhan Shi and Lin and asked: “If so, do you two have anything else to say?”

“If Brother Li doesn’t mind, we will try one or two moves by ourselves first before joining forces against you.” Zhan Shi spoke with a powerful voice.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “I understand, you two want to test yourselves first. Okay, we can consider this a warm-up before the battle then.”

“Zheng—” Li Qiye took off his imperial armor and dispersed his momentum: “No external forces or dao. Today, I will fight you with my own true power!”

With that, he slowly floated into the sky.

“Boom!” One palace jumped out after another, resulting in thirteen palaces lining up.

The extremely majestic force of the palaces engulfed the world, instantly causing Li Qiye to become supreme. At this moment, even without the imperial momentum, Li Qiye could still loom above the nine heavens.

This was not everyone’s first time seeing his thirteen palaces, but they were shocked all the same. A feeling of awe would rise within while looking at the great constructs hanging in the sky.

Since the start of time, no one had ever had thirteen palaces, but Li Qiye had done so. This achievement alone was more than enough to engrave his name in the annals of history!

However, it did not end there. Next, nine stars rushed into the sky and illuminated its recesses. They turned into a boundless starry sky and poured down their light like waterfalls to protect Li Qiye.

“Nine stars...” Many were astounded to see the sky formed by the nine stars.

However, it didn’t end there as another phenomenon appeared with a buzz. A supreme grand dao rushed upward. It resembled a crescent moon that hovered around Li Qiye. It appeared to be perfect without a single flaw.

“Dao Slashing Sovereign...” A God-Monarch gasped and shouted after seeing the chopped crescent moon.

“Damn! Nine mysterious stars and dao slashing on top of thirteen palaces — how are we going to live in the face of such achievements!” A descendant of a sacred ground took a big hit and fell flat on his butt. He murmured while dazed: “Geniuses are only dogshit compared to Fiercest!”

Other geniuses were out of breath after seeing this. Many were praised as geniuses, and this was a reason for pride while making them complacent at the same time.

But today, if other people called them geniuses, they would think of it as humiliating mockery. Compared to Li Qiye, they were not geniuses, they were only the feces left behind by stray dogs.

The marvelous nine stars and dao slashing were things many geniuses dreamed about, but very few could achieve them. But now, Li Qiye had all of this on top of the unique thirteen palaces.

“A perfect grand dao. How many people in history have achieved such a state?” A God-Monarch commented with emotions.

Li Qiye hovered in the sky and looked at Zhan Shi and Lin: “Who will go first?”

The two glanced at each other real quick. Shortly afterward, Lin took a deep breath and rose to the sky: “I will!”

“Good, I want to see your speed.” Li Qiye smirked while looking at Lin.

Others couldn’t see through his background, but Li Qiye did. Such a matter couldn’t elude his eyes.

“Excuse me then.” He cupped his fists then instantly crossed through space. His speed was too fast, only God-Monarchs would be able to keep up. As he moved through the sky, countless afterimages were left behind and lingered there for a while.

“Bang!” In an instant, he struck Li Qiye’s chest with his knee and sent him flying.

In this split second, he used his supreme speed once more to catch up to Li Qiye.

“Bang!” A powerful punch landed on Li Qiye, causing him to fly straight down.

“Boom!” Li Qiye’s body descended like a meteor from above. He heavily slammed into the ground, causing rocky debris to go flying while leaving a pit in the ground.

People took deep breaths after seeing this. Lin’s speed and power were both impeccable. It could even be said that few in the younger generation could match him in these two aspects.

Nevertheless, Lin didn’t look particularly happy while hovering in the sky.

“Clatter—” Li Qiye came out from the gravel and rushed into the air again.

“Decent speed and sufficient power.” He nodded his head. This insipid action was still a great praise to Heavenly Emperor Lin.

At this time, the crowd stared at Li Qiye and, to their astonishment, noticed that he was completely unharmed!

He didn't fight back at all and didn't defend himself with any merit laws. He used his flesh to withstand two attacks from Lin and ended up unscathed!

Even God-Monarchs were moved. With their bodies alone against Lin's powerful attacks, they couldn't expect to receive no damage like this.

How could people not be astounded in the face of a heaven-defying existence like Li Qiye?

A discerning person murmured: "The mysticisms of thirteen palaces, the protection of the nine stars in the heavens, and the force of dao slashing — with just these things alone, Li Qiye does not need any defensive laws to withstand a fatal blow."

Lin couldn't help but sigh gently after seeing this. He quietly retreated back to the Skyraising Mountain.

At this time, Zhan Shi took a deep breath and rose to stand in front of Li Qiye. He was not a man of many words, but while looking at Li Qiye's palaces, he still commented: "We cannot achieve in a lifetime what you have already accomplished."

"The dao heart is the most essential aspect. With one as fortified as a rock, one will have everything, and this applies perfectly to you. Your dao heart is more precious than anything else. Countless people would be envious of your indomitable heart."

“Thank you for your praise.” Zhan Shi slightly bowed.

Many people could see that although this was a battle of life and death, these geniuses had the same aspirations and appreciated the other’s talents.

Chapter 1104: Mighty Spear

Zhan Shi took a calming breath with a battle spear in his hand. He pointed at Li Qiye and slowly spoke: “[Brother Li, please give me pointers.](#)”

Li Qiye looked at his spear and smiled. He reached out and asked: “Does anyone have a spear? Let me borrow one for a bit.”

“Young Noble Li, this lowly one has a spear, but it is just a vulgar piece of trash, please don’t laugh.” An expert immediately let Li Qiye borrow his spear.

Even though this expert called his spear a common weapon, this was an extremely humble way to put it. His spear was actually quite extraordinary. Even though it was not as strong as Zhan Shi’s, it was still a treasure.

Li Qiye accepted the spear. With a buzz, his majestic and tyrannical blood energy poured into the spear. In an instant, the spear seemed to have gained its own spirit and emitted a zestful light.

Even a piece of scrap metal would become a ferocious weapon under Li Qiye’s majestic energy.

“Go.” He became quite domineering with the spear in his hand and resembled an overlord.

Zhan Shi prepared himself and shouted out loud. Like a true dragon roaring in the sea, his spear slightly moved. Just this little shift caused the stars to move and reversed the heaven and earth.

His technique was not overly embellished with sophisticated and beautiful variations. It was a straight stab, yet the world screamed when it came forth.

The most direct and ordinary move had absolute power. Overbearing, destructive, and powerful — this was Zhan Shi's grand dao. With just the spear in his hand, he was ready to fight continuous battles.

This spear represented his courageous will, one that would never falter.

“Good.” Li Qiye voiced his praise in the face of this technique and responded with the same type of thrust. It was also ordinary without any transformations or techniques. This was the simplest and most natural of grand dao that didn't rely on an overly complicated style. It didn't carry an earth-shattering presence or a startling momentum. Nevertheless, such simplicity encompassed the power of myriad dao within.

“Clang!” The two spears collided with the sparks flying from the collision like the eruption of a volcano. A sound wave assaulted the world like a tidal wave.

“Thump, thump, thump!” Zhan Shi's destructive thrust was not actually stopped by Li Qiye's simple strike. However, he suffered a

backlash vibration that caused him to stagger several steps back and shattered the space beneath his feet!

Zhan Shi stabilized himself and took a deep breath. He had a powerful foundation from previous battles. In a direct confrontation, he had never been afraid of anyone, but today, not only did he fail to move Li Qiye, he was shaken by the first exchange instead.

“Try mine now!” Li Qiye raised the spear all the way behind him and slammed it straight down. At this moment, his spear looked just like a whip that lashed straight out. No matter how fast one might be or where they fled, they wouldn’t be able to evade this blow.

Zhan Shi made up his mind and let out a battle scream before swinging his spear horizontally with both hands to resist Li Qiye’s strike head-on.

“Clang!” His spear was a supreme treasure, but under the impact of Li Qiye’s attack, it bent and couldn’t stop the strike.

“Boom!” Although Zhan Shi still managed to stop this attack, his entire body was sent flying like a falling star straight into the ground, creating a pit.

“Boom!” Small debris shot out chaotically. Zhan Shi climbed out of the pit with a very embarrassed expression. Without a doubt, he was not a match for Li Qiye in spearmanship.

Zhan Shi stared at Li Qiye with an indescribable hint of sadness: “I thought my dao was firm with no one able to shake it, but after seeing Brother Li’s dao today, I finally realize that I am but a frog at the bottom of a well.”

Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head: “From the ones I have seen in the current younger generation, none of them can compare to you in persistence.”

Zhan Shi sighed softly. Even though his dao might be firmer than others, he still had a long way to go compared to Li Qiye.

The spectators were quiet at this moment. Lin’s speed and power as well as Zhan Shi’s determination were top notch, but they were still quite far off from Li Qiye.

Li Qiye gave the spear back to the other person. He stood in the sky and glanced at the two: “You two can come together now.”

Lin and Zhan Shi looked at each other and took deep breaths. Both of them floated into the sky and stood opposite of Li Qiye with solemn expressions.

This was what the crowd was waiting for, the real fight. They were waiting for a miracle from Lin and Zhan Shi, a supreme move. These spectators didn’t want to see Immortal Emperor techniques from their forefathers or destructive imperial weapons either.

All they hoped to see was a real fight between the dao that belonged to the three.

In fact, the fighters had the same idea. This fight had nothing to do with grievances or feuds. This was the purest of fights between cultivators, so they would use their own dao for this contest.

Lin and Zhan Shi were extremely unperturbed at this moment; it was like the calm before the storm.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, stood in the sky with a smile on his face while looking at the two.

“Don’t worry about life and death in this battle.” Lin told Li Qiye: “It is our honor to fight you, so there will be no regrets if we perish. We didn’t waste our time coming to this world by having you as an opponent.”

Li Qiye gently nodded: “Even though I’m a brute, I am excited to have opponents like you two.”

“Brother Li, no need to hold back.” Zhan Shi cupped his fists: “All I want is to see your supreme grand dao.”

“Very well, you will have the opportunity to see it.” Li Qiye slowly responded.

The expressions of those in the crowd darkened after hearing this. A fight between geniuses was an exciting event. The most

blood-boiling climax would be the moment someone was defeated or even killed. However, the people here were sad. Some couldn't even bear to watch.

Everyone understood that without imperial weapons and other means, Lin and Zhan Shi were doomed to fail. Despite knowing so, the two still wanted to fight to the very end with wanton regard for death. They coveted a true fight that used their real power!

A bystander murmured: "Both Zhan Shi and Lin are great examples of good cultivators. It is an honor to know people like them."

"The dreary wind blows while the river freezes. The hero fords, never to return!" Someone mournfully recited [this poem](#).

Li Qiye told the two: "Are you two ready? If so, then make your move."

The two combatants looked at each other, then Zhan Shi spoke: "Brother Lin, even though our time together was brief, to have had a friend like you and to be able to fight together is my greatest honor!"

"Brother Zhan, I feel the same. It is my fortune to have known you!" Lin let out an unrestrained shout and laughed.

At this time, their heroism soared to the clouds. Their open-mindedness was infecting a lot of people.

“The dreary wind blows while the river freezes. The hero fords, never to return!” Someone loudly shouted in order to send the two off!

“The dreary wind blows while the river freezes. The hero fords, never to return!” Others quickly echoed the sentiment to bid farewell.

Everyone understood that from the moment the fight starts, their wish would be granted and they would certainly die!

“Rumble!” At this time, Lin’s and Zhan Shi’s blood energies erupted. The world was covered by their power. Each of their steps caused the earth to tremble. These were their most powerful states, capable of shaking the world.

Heavenly Emperor Lin explained: “Brother Li, Brother Zhan and I meditated and created a new heavenly dao that specializes in a combination attack. We gave it the name Divine Ascension War Emperor! Please give us pointers!”

“Divine Ascension War Emperor Dao, good name.” Li Qiye praised: “I’m waiting for your supreme heavenly dao!”

This dao contained the names of both [Lin and Zhan Shi](#).

“Divine Ascension War Emperor Dao!” Some people murmured and tried to memorize the name of this grand dao.

Perhaps this grand dao was the beautiful but short-lived night-blooming cactus that only blossoms once. After today's battle, the world might not be able to see this supreme heavenly dao again.

In an instant, many people watched with bated breaths without daring to blink. They wanted to see the level of this heavenly dao the two created.

Across the millions of years, many people had created heavenly dao before. However, a combination attack dao was quite rare!

This phrase, 请赐教, is harder to translate. It is a very common phrase in Wuxia; it is a polite phrase to say before combat. Zhan Shi isn't being overly respectful here with this sentence, even though it sounds like it. People will say this to each other before fighting.

This is a poem/song for Jing Ke, an assassin who tried to kill the Qin Emperor despite knowing how hopeless it was. The popular movie, Hero, is loosely based on this story. It is an extremely well-known tale.

Zhan = War, the Di in Lin Tiandi = Emperor. Divine Ascension Zhan Di Dao.

Chapter 1105: Divine Ascension War

Emperor Dao

“Start!” Lin and Zhan Shi began at the same time. At this moment, Lin began to circle around Zhan Shi while increasing his speed. In the blink of an eye, Lin disappeared completely.

Li Qiye was their enemy, so logically, Lin should be spinning around Li Qiye, but he was spinning around Zhan Shi instead.

“Buzz!” In an instant, Zhan Shi’s position was full of light. Strands of heavenly dao laws emerged and turned into a supreme grand dao in the form of a huge domain.

“Rumble!” As this supreme dao began to spread, a door seemed to be opening above the firmament. With great explosions, a dao power like the primordial flood poured down.

It instantly blotted out the world. It was extremely new and bountiful, as if no one had ever used it before. This was the most primal source of the dao.

With it permeating the surroundings, the majority of the spectators here felt their own dao resonating with it. In fact, their dao were happily dancing as they gave their power to Zhan Shi.

It was not the forceful process of stripping someone else’s dao power for one’s own. This process of borrowing was a mutual resonance. The dao from other people here were willing to help

this brand new dao.

“A completely new high heavens dao that belongs to these two.” Amidst the rumbling explosions, the crowd felt their own dao resonating with Zhan Shi’s dao and became quite surprised.

When a genius creates their own heavenly dao, they will have embarked on the path towards the high heavens. This was a road that led to the acceptance of the Heaven’s Will, the throne of the Immortal Emperor.

“Buzz!” Zhan Shi’s domain instantly expanded. This dark field engulfed the entire sky, including Li Qiye.

One could only see darkness inside. Even Lin disappeared and only Zhan Shi stood in the center of the domain.

Zhan Shi was immersed in his supreme grand dao. He was sacred and mighty as if he was the tyrant and ultimate existence in this domain.

This was the two’s grand dao, allowing them to be the masters within this domain. No matter how powerful one might be, they would have a hard time escaping this domain.

“A terrific heavenly dao.” Li Qiye smiled while standing in the dark domain and commented with feelings.

At the center, Zhan Shi held his battle spear once more and

pointed it at Li Qiye: “Brother Li, please give a few pointers.”

“Good.” Li Qiye did not act reserved. He shouted: “Taste my fist!”

Having said that, he jumped into the sky and unleashed a punch.

Myriad Dao Fists, Hell Suppressing Godly Fist. This punch carried the might of immeasurable mountains and headed straight for Zhan Shi. Under this attack, the space of this dark domain greatly trembled as if it was about to cave in.

The power of this fist could destroy all things and suppress gods and devils.

“Clang!” Zhan Shi shouted and thrust his dragon-like spear through the sky again. The spear screamed with a powerful annihilative power.

However, the spear was not the only thing attacking. Along with the force of this spear, the sound of a fist roaring through the wind emerged as well all of a sudden. The combination of the spear and fist could suppress all things. The spear seemed to be much heavier and capable of collapsing the heavens.

“Boom!” Li Qiye’s punch and Zhan Shi’s spear finally met directly.

This time, Li Qiye was the one who staggered backward because Zhan Shi’s spear also carried the heaven-suppressing power of Li

Qiye's own Myriad Dao Fist.

In a sense, Li Qiye was repelled by his own fist.

“Clang!” Zhan Shi didn't stop there. His momentum continued on with another swing of the spear. This attack still contained the Hell Suppressing Godly Fist just like before.

“Open!” Li Qiye shouted against this fierce momentum and unleashed another fist with endless power. It could flip over all things in its wrath.

“Boom!” The power of this fist was too great. Space immediately shattered into little pieces and the dark domain of Zhan Shi sunk as well.

Sky Destroyer Fist, the most destructive punch in the world.

“Pop!” The fist met the spear once more, causing fiery sparks to fly all the way into the firmament and the stars to explode.

“Thump! Thump! Thump!” However, in the second direct confrontation, Li Qiye was still the one who was repelled. He thought that Zhan Shi's spear would contain the power of the Hell Suppressing Fist again.

However, at the moment of impact, the power of the Sky Destroyer Fist was added on top of everything.

Without a doubt, Zhan Shi and Lin's grand dao was absorbing Li Qiye's power. This direct exchange pushed Li Qiye back quite far.

"Brother Li, try this!" Zhan Shi cried out and chopped down with his spear that contained his own power and the two previous fists; one destructive and one suppressive.

In an instant, Li Qiye's speed was faster than lightning. One punch crossed through the void, bypassing Zhan Shi's spear and heading straight for Zhan Shi's chest.

Soaring Immortal Fist — this attack reached the limit of speed. Even if Zhan Shi was faster, he wouldn't be faster than Li Qiye.

However, in this split second, the unthinkable happened. Zhan Shi's spear frantically accelerated and actually managed to stop this attack. Moreover, this defensive maneuver contained all the characteristics and powers from the Hell Suppressing, Sky Destroyer, and Soaring Immortal Fists.

"Boom!" Even though it was just a horizontal sweeping motion from Zhan Shi's spear to stop Li Qiye's attack, it instantly blew Li Qiye away due to all the different powers encompassed within.

To the dismay of the spectators, Li Qiye actually spat out a mouthful of blood from the blow. Everyone thought that this was impossible, but it actually happened.

They assumed that even if Zhan Shi and Lin fought together, they still wouldn't be a match for Li Qiye. But now, the two had drawn blood and shocked the crowd.

Someone murmured: "How can this be? Fiercest can actually be injured?"

Recently, Li Qiye's showing had been heaven-defying to an invincible level. Everyone thought that no one could match him, so his injury today was astonishing.

"Not bad." Li Qiye wiped away the blood at the corners of his mouth and smiled inside the dark domain: "Divine Ascension Dao is just like its name. So Lin acts as the dao foundation while you act as the dao weapon. Your heavenly dao accumulates all the enemy's attacks and in the blink of an eye turns them into your own. In order to have such a great effect, Lin's speed must be the basis while your firm dao serves as the activator."

Zhan Shi admiringly stated: "Brother Li's knowledge is amazing, truly a marvelous thing. You're actually spot on."

"Very well, I want to see what level the two of you have reached." Li Qiye smiled and flew to the sky. He formed a heavenly seal that instantly came crashing down. The sun and moon were annihilated while the dark domain was shaking from this suppression. This seal aimed to destroy Zhan Shi's heavenly dao.

"Activate!" Zhan Shi shouted again and directly attacked with his spear once more.

The result was clear. Li Qiye was still at a disadvantage in this exchange. The Divine Ascension Dao stacked up all of Li Qiye's attacks again, making it the same as Li Qiye facing himself and all of his prior attacks as well.

"Bang!" Li Qiye was blown away once more as he vomited more blood.

"Clang." The sound of the spear resounded across the sky. Zhan Shi carefully walked towards Li Qiye and unleashed an incomparable onslaught. Each of his moves was watertight; no one could shake his momentum at all.

Anyone who met such a firm opponent would find it quite difficult. Zhan Shi's offense and defense were without fault. This type of opponent would give one an extremely annoying headache.

Li Qiye's attack was the culmination of the grand dao. Each technique was profound and mysterious. Even the most simple gesture contained the mysticisms of the grand dao. However, despite his destructive power, he was still only a punching bag under the Divine Ascension Dao and was continuously forced to retreat.

Moreover, as Lin and Zhan Shi's Divine Ascension Dao stacked up even more attacks from Li Qiye, the two became increasingly powerful.

Chapter 1106: Heaven Suppression Fist

This result caused many people to be shaken with astonishment. A few returned from the momentary lapse of concentration and grew ecstatic.

Someone spoke with joy: “Maybe Lin and Zhan Shi’s new grand dao can actually restrain Fiercest.”

“It’s truly amazing.” An old God-Monarch murmured: “This is not only due to their supreme talents but also due to their commendable character that puts all of us to shame.”

“Right, the two of them sincerely poured their hearts into creating this supreme heavenly dao.” Another big shot added with emotion.

No one would doubt the talents of these two geniuses. However, creating a heavenly dao was no easy task. More importantly, it was a combination attack.

Outside of having an incomparable mutual understanding, they must also be genuine with each other while establishing absolute trust.

Keep in mind that the creation of this type of dao requires utilizing every single merit law these two cultivated as well as their cultivation circumstances. Both sides must let the other know everything about them.

Cultivation was an extremely private matter, especially the merit laws from one's sect. They absolutely couldn't be passed down to outsiders. Even brothers from the same sect wouldn't share these laws without great trust.

However, Zhan Shi and Lin had done it, sharing all of their knowledge with each other. It was quite an unbelievable task based on absolute trust. They believed that the other wouldn't steal their merit laws or teach them to a third party.

Such trust was priceless and commendable. Very few people could actually stay true to this since there were plenty of temptations and benefits.

"It is enough in life to have such a close friend." Anyone would exclaim this after understanding the intricacies within.

"Bang!" Li Qiye was blasted away once again. This time, blood was everywhere on his body. It was all his since Zhan Shi had not taken any damage.

It could be said that under the Divine Ascension Dao, Li Qiye was completely suppressed by Zhan Shi without being able to do anything about it.

Li Qiye wiped some blood away, still nonchalant as ever. He revealed a carefree smile: "It is quite an enviable thing to have such trust between the two of you."

“Thank you.” Zhan Shi slowly replied while holding his spear: “I hope Brother Li will go all out so we can see your supreme grand dao.”

The majority of the spectators were shocked to hear this. So Li Qiye still hadn't used his full strength despite showing a power capable of fighting God-Monarchs.

“Very well, I have understood your Divine Ascension Dao as well as its mysteries.” Li Qiye slowly smiled: “It is time for me to start.”

“Boom!” The thirteen palaces emerged in an instant and became incomparably bright.

“Heaven Suppression Fist.” Li Qiye's words were eternal as a fist slammed down from the sky to suppress all things.

“Open!” Zhan Shi shouted. All of the accumulated energy from before condensed on his spear. He thrust it towards the sky with a might capable of killing gods and devils.

However, the Heaven Suppression Fist and the dazzling palaces were above the nine firmaments. It ruled the universe and myriad realms within while freely using their power.

At this time, no matter what it may be, everything was suppressed by this attack, including heavenly dao. The Divine Ascension Dao was no exception.

Regardless of one's might, they could only tremble in submission against this punch from Li Qiye.

This fist caused time to stop with an eternal deterrent. The high heavens lost its brilliance. Nothing could stop it. Even the experts in the horizon instantly knelt on the ground after sensing its power.

“Boom!” Everything returned to the origin, an insignificant beginning before this attack.

The Divine Ascension Dao was annihilated. Both Zhan Shi and Lin were blown flying away. They were completely covered in blood while vomiting more.

This fist didn't only destroy their Divine Ascension Dao, it also gravely wounded them. If Li Qiye didn't show mercy, they would have been rendered to ashes under its suppression.

“What fist technique is that?” With pale expressions, even God-Monarchs felt their knees trembling after seeing the attack. It was too frightening, even for them. The high heavens itself quivered, let alone mere God-Monarchs.

It left behind an inerasable mark in everyone. Prior to this, people were in awe of Li Qiye. But now, they could only fearfully tremble while looking at him, losing even the courage to speak.

“Crackle!” Peals of thunder roared in the sky with clouds gathering in the vicinity. However, the heavenly wrath did not descend.

Li Qiye only smiled coldly at the sky, giving it a quick glance without saying anything.

“Invincible...” The crowd could only describe Fiercest with this word since they couldn’t come up with anything else. Or rather, at this moment, any words used to describe him seemed to pale and be powerless in comparison.

Lin and Zhan Shi both crawled up at this time with bloodied bodies. Even though they were incredible geniuses, they still stared nervously at Li Qiye. His attack earlier was too shocking. Even their dao couldn’t turn that attack into something they could use. It was above all laws, so their dao was immediately suppressed.

“You lost.” Li Qiye slowly said while looking at the two: “However, your Divine Ascension Dao is more than enough to feel proud about.”

All the bystanders were quiet. No one would laugh at the two despite their defeat. Many even felt respect for them, not only because they created the Divine Ascension Dao, but due to them having the noblest of qualities for cultivators.

“What a shame that even though we tried our best, we still couldn’t see your supreme dao.” Lin was in a daze and gently sighed.

However, Zhan Shi was still quite spirited as he awe-inspiringly asked: “We can still fight, will Brother Li accept?!”

Despite being covered in blood with an embarrassed appearance, he was still very lively with a surging battle intent. It made other people respect him even more.

“He still wants to fight!” The crowd was surprised to hear this.

No one would taunt him about not being able to accept defeat or say that he wanted to cheat. They understood that he simply wanted to try once more, regardless of his inevitable defeat. This type of determination was unshakable.

Li Qiye glanced at him and slowly asked: “Again?”

The duo glanced at each other once more. There was no need for words, just a single glance was enough for the two to reach an agreement. They simultaneously nodded determinedly.

Lin solemnly said: “If Brother Li doesn’t mind, we would like to fight you again. Your punch is absolutely peerless across the eons and able to seal the high heavens. I trust that your supreme dao is even more unique. It will be the shame of a lifetime if we don’t get to witness it.”

Li Qiye stared at the two and said: “Think it through carefully. The moment my grand dao comes out, you two will be utterly

defeated and annihilated by its crushing power. When it erupts, even if I wanted to spare you, it would still be impossible.”

“To die by your supreme grand dao is a blessing with no regrets.” Zhan Shi was ready to fight to the very end. His eyes lit up with a surging momentum.

Lin echoed this sentiment: “That’s right, we don’t care about life and death. If we don’t see your dao, we will be full of regret! Real men don’t covet life or feel woe in death!”

People’s expressions changed after hearing this. They couldn’t express their feelings with words at this moment.

“Using one’s life to test the dao — a man should live in this manner.” Someone said with emotions.

Li Qiye continued: “If you are willing to risk it all to see the dao, then I shall fulfill your wish.”

“Thank you, Brother Li.” Both Lin and Zhan Shi cupped their fists. Lin immediately disappeared afterward.

“Boom!” The Divine Ascension Dao emerged once more in this world while Zhan Shi stood in the center with his spear.

“Brother Li, please give us some pointers.” The spear loomed across the sky while its master had a solemn demeanor, just like an invincible god of war.

People were even more hesitant to watch this time since these two were willingly heading towards their demise.

Chapter 1107: Ambush

Li Qiye slowly said while smiling at Zhan Shi: “Good, prepare yourself mentally. The moment my grand dao comes out, it shall be invincible in this world. It is best if you go all out now.”

This bold declaration left others speechless. Only Li Qiye would utter such overbearing and arrogant words. Perhaps he was the only one who was qualified to do so as well.

For someone who has created thirteen palaces, whatever he said instantly became natural.

“Okay!” Zhan Shi shouted. With a loud blast, all of the two’s blood energy soared out and engulfed the dark domain.

With this, the domain became quite devilish. It now had a mysterious crimson color as if it had its own life.

At this time, Zhan Shi was devoid of blood energy. His skin withered as he suddenly aged a lot. All of his blood energy had been drained.

Nevertheless, he still didn’t show signs of weakening. On the contrary, he seemed to be even more powerful with a body made out of gold and a cold layer of skin. There was no trace of softness in his muscles, only the freezing touch of steel.

He was a golden god with a surging battle intent, one that could

sweep through deities and devils. It was as if nothing could stop him in his current state!

“Going all out...” An old paragon knew what this was: “Even if they survive this battle, a few decades wouldn’t be enough to replenish their lost blood energy.”

Earlier, the two lost too quickly after Li Qiye showed his Heaven Suppression Fist. They didn’t have a chance to use all of their blood energy.

“Okay, watch carefully to see the real power of thirteen palaces.” Li Qiye uttered: “The one and only grand dao in all the eons!”

“Boom!” The palaces positioned themselves above the nine heavens and instantly disappeared. It transformed with an unbelievable speed. At this time, everyone could hear the explosions of an endless primordial force descending to drown the Divine Ascension Dao. This power swallowed the entire world.

Even the biggest stars were no more than specks of dust inside the endless primordial assaulting the sky. Even the entire Lesser Imperial Devil World was a tiny ship clutching to its life in a torrential ocean. It was not enough to reach the apex and might be destroyed at any time.

“What will the thirteen palaces turn into?” Everyone was eagerly waiting for the moment the transformation was complete.

Everyone knew that four palaces formed a domain, eight turned into a kingdom, and twelve became the heavens. Then what about thirteen? No one knew the answer to this question since it had never appeared before in history.

“Nirvana Heavens!” A perennial, unchanging figure emerged inside the primordial chaos. No one knew whether this figure was Li Qiye’s real body or a dao body from the future.

It gently sighed and suddenly, time was stopped. It seemed that even after millions and millions of years, this quiet sigh would still exist.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Countless experts fell to the ground. Everyone felt intimidated in the face of this eternal figure. It stood between the heaven and earth, causing everything else to return to their origin.

Ordinary cultivators felt everything stripped from them. In the end, only fear was left.

“Buzz.” In an instant, a grand dao was laid out in the endless chaos. This was an initial form of a grand dao. No one could see what it was, but the moment it appeared, nothing could reach the apex. Even heavenly dao could only vainly struggle before this grand dao.

It could even be said that before this grand dao, all other dao became insignificant insects.

This was not to say that the moment Li Qiye's grand dao came out, he would be unstoppable. To be more exact, its emergence caused even the strongest existences to become as tiny as specks of dust. All were unworthy of mention.

“Crack—” The Divine Ascension Dao couldn't withstand this new grand dao. Many cracks appeared in the domain.

Li Qiye had yet to attack, but the duo's grand dao was already showing signs of collapse.

No one would ever deny the strength of the Divine Ascension Dao. If one of them could become the Immortal Emperor, then this combination attack would turn into one of the strongest Immortal Emperor dao in this world.

However, it was already collapsing to the initial form of Li Qiye's grand dao. If his grand dao was complete, everything would be annihilated the moment it came out.

Everyone knew that his grand dao would be devastating, but they didn't expect for it to be this mighty. Many people turned pale at this terrifying sight.

“Open for me!” Zhan Shi and Lin both roared. Their blood energy surged through the entire dark domain and gathered into many drops of longevity blood.

“Zzz—” All the longevity blood drops began to sizzle. With its

burning came a horrifying power beyond imagination that brought the Divine Ascension Dao together.

“Heaven Sacrifice...” All were aghast. Some were scared out of their minds and couldn’t bear to watch any longer: “Using their longevity blood as an offering to the heavenly dao, why the need to go so far!”

“No...” Some even screamed for the duo; they were unwilling to see this scene.

There was nothing else to say about their determination. Heaven Sacrifice was a suicidal endeavor. Once they burned up all of their longevity blood, even if they could defeat Li Qiye, only death would await them.

Even if the fight were to end before all of their blood was expended, they would still lose a significant portion of their lifespan. They would likely die shortly afterward.

For talented youths like them, they would definitely reach the peak in the future and live for at least several tens of thousands of years.

But after this offering, once they had no more longevity blood to burn, they could only live for some centuries, decades, or even only a few years!

Li Qiye slowly told the two: “You have to think clearly, this is

your last chance.”

“Come, let us witness the power of your grand dao.” Zhan Shi shouted. They increased the rate of blood burning. After a loud blast, the Divine Ascension Dao became whole again.

“So be it.” Li Qiye inside the chaos pushed down his palm. The crushing grand dao sucked everything dry. Time, space, and the power of the grand dao were all affected and on the verge of being destroyed.

“Crack—” The Divine Ascension Dao was about to collapse once more. Little pieces of the dao were falling at a quickening pace.

“Go!” Zhan Shi leaped into the sky and Lin appeared again. The two of them rotated around each other and their domain actually turned into a Yin Yang Fish. It carried the two into the sky. This was their ultimate and most powerful blow.

A courageous strike without any hesitation with the style of a hero never to return.

“Well done!” Li Qiye’s grand dao finally erupted. Wisps of light blossomed and each of them annihilated everything as if wishing to bring about a new age by creating an entirely new world.

No one wanted to see this scene. Regardless of how strong the duo’s attack might be, they would still be blown to smithereens by Li Qiye’s grand dao.

“Buzz!” While Li Qiye was using the strongest attack the world had ever seen to strike the duo, a ray of lightning countless times faster than light swept by. It didn’t make a sound until it traveled its distance.

It was far too fast to the point where no one could see it. What was even more frightening was that the world seemed to be cursed by its coming. Even an Immortal Emperor would be hexed all the same by this curse, causing the entire world to tremble.

“Pluff!” A long while after the lightning’s sound finally rang out, everyone saw an incredible scene. The cursed lightning ray pierced through Li Qiye’s chest. This region was instantly charred.

It was too terrifying and heaven-defying. Even when Li Qiye used his extreme speed with the Soaring Immortal Physique, he still couldn’t dodge it.

No one expected someone to be vile enough to ambush Li Qiye at this moment. No one wanted to commit such a shameless and dirty act. This would make the world mock them, a lifetime of disdain.

Even if some people had expected this sneak attack, the lightning ray was too fast anyway. A Godking still wouldn’t be able to stop this lightning ray to save Li Qiye.

“Bang!” Li Qiye fell down from the sky in front of all the spectators.

Everyone went silly at this second. They couldn't calm down, not even Lin and Zhan Shi who were at a complete loss.

“Heavenly Imperial Malediction!” A God-Monarch calmed down even though he was still scared out of his wits due to this curse.

“Get the hell down here!” The first to react was Mei Suyao. She instantly attacked and crushed the sky.

“Bang!” In the deep recess, someone was knocked down by Mei Suyao and couldn't hide any longer.

“Jikong Wudi...” A spectator shouted in horror after seeing this person forced to reveal himself.

Chapter 1108: Long Distance Chase

The moment Jikong Wudi appeared in the sky, many people's eyes opened wide. They couldn't believe what they were seeing.

"This, this is too shameless." Someone quietly spoke.

"Not good..." Li Shuangyan and the others regained their composure and immediately rushed to the place where Li Qiye had fallen.

"Heavenly Imperial Malediction..." Older people began to calm down after slightly quivering and murmured: "It is way too vicious."

According to legends, this type of powerful and terrifying curse was from the high heavens and would be directed at Immortal Emperors. Even these emperors would have to pay a huge price to survive.

After the endeavor, lightning would descend from the sky to create the Heavenly Imperial Malediction. No opponent would be able to escape this curse. The limit was that it could only be used once.

Zhan Shi and Lin were shocked after seeing the curse pierce through Li Qiye's chest, charring his body. They didn't expect for this to happen.

In fact, no one thought that Jikong Wudi would resort to such a wretched method.

For millions of years during the struggle to become Immortal Emperor, many people engaged in sneak attacks from the shadows.

However, Li Qiye and the duo were fighting a battle between gentlemen. To ambush someone during this battle would result in them being despised by the crowd. Moreover, Jikong Wudi came from an imperial lineage. He was the descendant of an emperor and had three saint aptitudes. Alas, he still committed such a despicable act.

Although people didn't directly call him "shameless," they had nothing but contempt for his action. This made his status in their minds drop all the way to rock bottom.

In their eyes, such an action made a mockery of his fame as a brilliant genius.

The shocked Zhan Shi snapped at Jikong Wudi: "Jikong Wudi, what are you doing?!"

Jikong Wudi stood proudly in the sky while keeping an eye out for Mei Suyao. He glanced over at Zhan Shi and Lin to slowly utter: "Brother Lin, Brother Zhan, I have eliminated a powerful foe and saved your lives. You two should be thanking me."

Mei Suyao coldly looked at him and spewed with disdain: "How

shameless.”

Lin also had a cold demeanor: “We didn’t need you to interfere with our battle. Such a move is truly contemptible!”

Zhan Shi and Lin made it too clear. They were drawing the line between themselves and Jikong Wudi for they did not consider his action a favor.

Jikong Wudi ignored them and flatly said: “Victors shall become kings while losers are treated as bandits. History is written by the victors; from now on, the battle for the Heaven’s Will is between us.”

The duo only snorted dismissively at Jikong Wudi.

Many people here also felt that Jikong Wudi was too despicable and degraded his own prestige.

“Victors shall become kings while losers are treated as bandits. Are you talking about yourself?” A carefree voice came about. Li Qiye was propped up by the girls among the rubble.

Even though his chest was burnt to a crisp, he was still calm and cool. The curse couldn’t kill him.

Mei Suyao heaved a sigh of relief after seeing Li Qiye alive. She knew that he wouldn’t die so easily, but she still felt worried. After seeing him in high spirits, the heaviness in her heart finally

disappeared.

“Thank the lord...” Both Lin and Zhan Shi were relieved as well. If Li Qiye died in this manner, they would be full of regret for the rest of their lives.

“Impossible...” Jikong Wudi, on the other hand, was aghast to see Li Qiye still alive despite being penetrated by the malediction.

“The Heavenly Imperial Malediction is indeed incredible. Alas, such a thing will only act as a supplement for me.” Li Qiye chuckled dismissively.

An old rune emerged from his forehead. It contained the great power of heavenly lightning. At this time, the power of the curse was hovering around it and was refined into the rune.

The Ancient Void Rune was taken from the Void Gate. It could absorb all the curses within this lightning strike. Of course, this was only one of its many mystical effects.

Such a terrifying curse would kill anyone that it had directly penetrated. However, the ancient rune absorbed it and instead became even stronger.

“That’s Fiercest for you... still invincible.” Both his friends and enemies sighed after seeing this.

Even his enemies felt that if he died in such a manner, it would be

incredibly indignant. It would cause the entire generation to become less brilliant.

Only an existence like Fiercest would be able to illuminate an era into a new golden age.

In a split second, Jikong Wudi stomped the sky like an ascending immortal. A spatial gate opened, allowing him to cross this world with a swift speed. Even a God-Monarch might not be able to catch him.

People were speechless after seeing his quick escape. Meanwhile, a paragon revealed the method: “Ascension Physique!”

Mei Suyao snorted and wanted to take action after seeing this. However, Li Qiye smiled and stomped the sky as well to accelerate and gave chase just as quickly. Mei Suyao halted her offense and followed right after him.

The other girls also followed the duo. Meanwhile, Lin and Zhan Shi had forgotten about the duel and chased them as well. As for the spectators, they naturally wouldn’t miss this exciting event.

Jikong Wudi exerted his speed to the extreme. His blood energy seemed to be urging time itself, causing him to turn into a meteor that streaked across the sky. With this speed, it seemed as if nothing could catch him.

However, even if he was faster, he would be no match for Li Qiye.

The moment Li Qiye used his Soaring Immortal Physique, he instantly drew near.

Jikong Wudi was aghast at this sight. His life wheel instantly floated up while his palaces emerged. He used the most powerful longevity blood to fuel his speed even more in a reckless manner. His speed broke through its limit and he soared through the world again with a speed that would put God-Monarchs to shame.

Jikong Wudi was praised for having three saint talents, but this wasn't truly the case. He had a natural born Saint Wheel and Saint Fate, but only a King Physique. Alas, he cultivated the Ascension Physique, one of the eighteen Saint Physiques. It was in the same branch as the Soaring Immortal Physique with a focus on speed.

Even though the Ascension Physique from Jikong Wudi couldn't compare to the Soaring Immortal Physique, he had a Saint Wheel and Saint Fate. This granted him powerful blood energy and life force. The moment he channeled everything, his physique became much faster.

However, regardless of how much his speed was boosted as he soared across the world, he still couldn't shake off Li Qiye.

Time seemed to stop the moment Li Qiye activated his physique. Countless miles seemed to be contained within a single step. He walked, step by step, right behind Jikong Wudi with the intent to chase him to the ends of the earth.

Not too many were able to keep up with them. The closest one

was Mei Suyao; the other experts were left far behind. Even God-Monarchs could only barely match the pace.

Jikong Wudi was both angry and scared to see Li Qiye leisurely following behind him, but there was nothing that he could do. At this time, running for his life was the only option or else he would die a miserable death.

In fact, it wasn't difficult for Li Qiye to catch him. Li Qiye would rather play a game of cat and mouse. The plan was to first scare him out of his mind. It wouldn't be too late to kill him afterward.

During this game, they saw many cultivators along the way. However, due to their lightning speed, only old paragons were able to see them clearly.

A paragon was startled and murmured: "This is too heaven-defying. Jikong Wudi is being chased by Fiercest like a dog that has lost its master!"

Regardless of whether they were watching or only heard about it, the first reaction was to gasp. In the past, Jikong Wudi was incredibly awe-inspiring with a supreme status. As the descendant of an emperor as well as three saint aptitudes, he had many pride-worthy aspects that allowed him to stand tall wherever he went.

But today, the peerless Jikong Wudi was being chased by Fiercest like a beaten dog. This was truly a shocking event.

Li Qiye took his time keeping up with Jikong Wudi and slowly uttered: “Even if you flee to the edge of this world and obtain the protection of gods, I will still take down your head and use it as a chamber pot.”

Jikong Wudi, on the other hand, was driven mad from anger. He wanted to cut Li Qiye into countless pieces. When had he ever been so embarrassed and downtrodden like this?

After running for a long time, he suddenly stopped the moment he made it to a particular mountain and turned around to look at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye couldn't help but chuckle while staring at Jikong Wudi on top of this mountain.

Next, the rest of the girls made it here along with the older experts that wanted to watch the fun event. The others slowly caught up as well.

Chapter 1109: Knowing That There Is A Tiger On The Mountain Yet Still Continuing To Climb

After a huge group of cultivators arrived. They saw Jikong Wudi standing on the mountain without running. They were all quite surprised and had to glance at each other.

“Oh? Not running anymore?” Li Qiye smiled while looking at Jikong Wudi.

Jikong Wudi took a deep breath. He arched his chest in high spirits to once again assume his normal imperious posture and looked down on the world.

He was back to his former self — arrogant and conceited with an imposing momentum. This was a striking contrast to his previous appearance of running like a dog with a dead master.

“Li, you really think this Young Noble is afraid of you?” Jikong Wudi stood with both hands crossed over his chest and coldly said: “Earlier was only a strategic retreat.”

“I see, strategic retreat. To describe fleeing in such a manner, you are indeed the descendant of an Immortal Emperor, how extraordinary.” Li Qiye laughed and clapped loudly after leisurely jesting.

“Li, do you dare to come and fight me?!” Jikong Wudi suddenly

challenged Li Qiye.

This challenge confused many people. Everyone knew full well that he was not a match for Fiercest.

Earlier, he ran for his life, but now he suddenly turned into a different person, actually daring to directly challenge Li Qiye. This was indeed worth thinking over.

“Challenging me?” Li Qiye looked at Jikong Wudi with a mocking glare.

Jikong Wudi pointed at Li Qiye with an imperial weapon in his hand: “That’s right, do you dare to come and fight me or not? If you are afraid, then you will have to call me granddaddy!”

“So you are certain you’ll win.” Li Qiye laughed again.

Jikong Wudi snorted and coldly said: “You are only an insect. Killing you is as easy as turning my hand. I just need one hand to crush you to death.”

In the past, no one would find such words from Jikong Wudi problematic. Back then, he was praised as Deity. Some even considered him to be the best among the younger generation.

But now when he uttered this statement towards Fiercest, everyone felt that he was too arrogant. Even if he had an imperial weapon, there was no chance of him beating Fiercest.

“I actually want to see just what you have up your sleeves.” Li Qiye clapped his hands together: “Even though your goading is quite crappy.”

“I am full of confidence, there’s no need for any psychological tactics against you.” Jikong Wudi declared.

“Whether it is a tactic or not doesn’t matter.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled: “Regardless of the circumstances, I am someone who likes to do one particular thing: shatter the self-esteem of others. They think that they are certain of winning, so I like to defeat and stomp them beneath my feet until there is nothing left of their confidence. Only despair shall remain.”

“Be careful, I’m afraid it is a trap.” Mei Suyao quietly reminded him after seeing him accepting the challenge.

In fact, many people could faintly guess it. Jikong Wudi had completely changed his attitude and brazenly said that he would crush Li Qiye. This made the crowd think that he had something up his sleeves.

Li Qiye smiled and glanced around the area before ordering the girls: “I will be careful, but remember, no matter what happens, do not do anything or it will ruin my plan.”

The girls looked at each other before silently nodding.

Li Qiye stepped onto the mountain and looked at Jikong Wudi with his imperial weapon: “Go ahead, show me all you have.” With that, he revealed a big grin: “Like I said before, even if the deities choose to protect you, your head will still be a chamber pot. You better do everything you can since I’ll chop off your head with one move!”

Being shown such blatant disdain by Li Qiye left Jikong Wudi with an extremely ugly expression. He had always been untouchable. Even though recently, his fame was overshadowed by Li Qiye, he still couldn’t swallow his anger from Li Qiye’s mocking tone.

“Go!” Jikong Wudi shouted coldly.

“Zzz—” In a split second, the four directions were sealed. A temporal vortex appeared right above Li Qiye. He seemed to be lost in a swamp of time with his body sinking down as if he was about to disappear completely.

“Not good, it’s a trap.” Many people were startled. Even the girls shuddered slightly.

No one knew what it was. They only saw time flowing with Li Qiye seemingly disappearing. He involuntarily sank into the river of time and couldn’t return to this world, to be forever erased.

“Little animal, die!” Jikong Wudi was overjoyed to see this. This was the best time to attack. With a roar, his blood energy surged and a Heaven’s Will Secret Law emerged.

“Boom!” Jikong Wudi utilized all of his blood energy, resulting in quite a moving scene. This energy as vast as a sea was channeled into his imperial weapon and instantly dried up.

At this moment, a beastly imperial aura poured down like a terrifying flood breaking the dam.

“Boom!” A majestic figure emerged. An Immortal Emperor came out and unleashed a strike capable of destroying myriad realms.

“Imperial Massacre!” Someone shouted after sensing this terrifying blow.

“Imperial Massacre...” The crowd became absent-minded. This attack meant that Jikong Wudi was untouchable among the younger generation. An Imperial Massacre could destroy all things. Even a Godking might not escape the fate of annihilation.

“Watch out...” Li Shuangyan and the others became worried as well as they reminded Li Qiye to be careful.

Li Qiye was drowning in the temporal river as the attack was approaching. The shocked crowd was wiping their sweat for Li Qiye. Someone commented: “This is too dangerous.”

“Right, a trap below and an Imperial Massacre from above.” Most thought that Li Qiye wouldn’t be able to escape this time.

“Good effort.” Li Qiye smiled in the face of this attack.

With a hum, his cauldron of life rushed forward and spewed out an endless amount of fire with great life force.

Inside the endless fire of life, the Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter was ringing continuously and seemed to be turning into a boundless ocean. Countless runes of the grand dao were floating inside this ocean-like fish. There were also primordial lights flashing inside as if this place was the beginning of myriad dao in this world. It was continuously gestating new heavenly dao.

“Boom!” The Imperial Massacre was stopped by this boundless ocean. It was easy to imagine the might of this attack. It set off a gigantic tidal wave in the sky and instantly brought down many stars.

Nevertheless, the primal chapter still blocked it. The attack from the Imperial Massacre seemed to be endlessly slowing down in this sea full of brilliance. Suddenly, everyone saw the attack explode into countless little bits and pieces. The power of these little parts were all sucked in.

In this process, the primal chapter analyzed the Imperial Massacre's composition and transformation before sucking in everything like a vortex. All the offensive power and grand dao power of the imperial weapon was instantly funneled into the runes of the primal chapter.

In a short period of time, not only did the primal chapter stop the

Imperial Massacre, it also turned the attack's power into its own.

“Impossible...” Jikong Wudi blurted out and was stunned right away. Li Qiye was not annihilated like he imagined! He couldn't believe his own eyes. It was a sure-kill blow, but this was the result instead.

It could even be said that no one understood this event. No one could imagine an Imperial Massacre being taken down like this.

Of course, they didn't know that the primal chapter had a matchless origin. Some people even called it the beginning of all grand dao in this world, or at least a great part of it.

“My turn.” Li Qiye laughed out loud. With a buzz, the fire of life poured down like a waterfall. Strands of universal laws from the primal chapter instantly pierced the vortex and sucked away the forces of time before turning them into its own.

With that, he flipped his palm, causing the stars to mimic his movements.

“Boom!” Myriad realms trembled. This palm attack didn't only have the power of the Imperial Massacre from earlier, but also the power of time from the formation.

The formation quaked as if it was about to break into pieces in the face of these two powers.

Chapter 1110: Divine Ancestor

“No...” Jikong Wudi screamed against the incoming attacks. He instinctively attacked with his imperial weapon.

However, he couldn't unleash a second Imperial Massacre. The first one had already used the majority of his blood energy.

Not even in his dreams would he expect that his perfect attack would end in failure. He really couldn't understand how Li Qiye could stop the Imperial Massacre after being trapped in the river of time.

Not to mention Li Qiye, even a Godking wouldn't have been able to escape such a bleak situation. But now, Li Qiye managed to stop the Imperial Massacre and counterattacked with an even greater momentum.

“Boom!” His second attack with the imperial weapon was quite powerful. It should be able to suppress many experts and repel even God-Monarchs.

However, Li Qiye's two forces were approaching. Even a stronger imperial weapon wouldn't be able to stop them without unleashing another massacre.

“Bang!” The imperial weapon became unstable in the face of this attack. It couldn't protect Jikong Wudi either.

The Immortal Emperor laws from the weapon were severed while the supreme grand dao was annihilated.

“No...” Jikong Wudi screamed as he watched his body being destroyed inch by inch by Li Qiye’s crushing momentum; this scene resembled a grindstone shaving away a blade.

“Halt!” While Jikong Wudi was screaming, a shout came about. With a clank, nine divine swords flew down from the sky. They rotated around like a heavenly compass before slashing straight at Li Qiye.

After seeing the swords, there was no need to look further before knowing who it was. A Virtuous Paragon shouted: “Venerable Ninesword...!”

Many people trembled before the nine divine swords. The venerable was quite notorious as a general under an emperor. Although he was not the strongest, he was still quite scary and capable of deterring the current world.

“Scram!” However, Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at him. The primal chapter instantly devoured the entire power of the formation while Li Qiye blocked the incoming attack with one hand.

“Bang!” His bare hand met the nine swords. It instantly caused these swords to go flying backward. Even Venerable Ninesword was not capable of affecting this result.

“Zzz—” At this moment, Jikong Wudi was completely refined into a bloody mist while he screamed miserably, a scream filled with despair and unwillingness.

Venerable Ninesword shouted: “Little animal!” Li Qiye still killed Jikong Wudi despite his protection — this would be the humiliation of a lifetime.

“Brother Ninesword, think again, do not break our formation. We will kill this junior in a bit to seek revenge for your nephew.” At this moment, another person appeared in a different corner. This was the Nine Worlds’ Chief Ambassador that escaped last time.

Venerable Ninesword glared at Li Qiye with fire in his eyes. Even though it was difficult, he still refrained from making a move.

Li Qiye looked around in the sky and smilingly said: “If you are already here, stop acting like cowardly turtles. After making Jikong Wudi lead me here, have the four of you suddenly turned coward?”

Many people shuddered after hearing this. They didn’t think that there were more experts hiding in this region.

“Buzz.” Outside of the chief ambassador and the venerable, two more people emerged in the sky. All of them took a separate corner to seal every single one of Li Qiye’s escape paths.

They were two old men. One had completely gray hair with a face full of wrinkles. He even seemed to have an unsteady posture.

However, this old man caused everyone to tremble. An ancestor from the Grand Middle Territory blurted out: “That’s, that’s the Divine Ancestor, the legendary ancestor of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom!”

The crowd was astounded after hearing this. Anyone would be wary of the most powerful and terrifying ancestor of this ancient kingdom.

“Divine Ancestor...” Even God-Monarchs were quivering inside. Many people could guess that this ancestor was definitely a Godking.

The reality was that no one really knew his true power because he had not appeared in a very long time. People hadn’t actually seen him in action at all.

However, Li Qiye didn’t care too much for the Divine Ancestor. There was a different person who caught his attention.

The other person in the sky was not old, only around middle-age. However, he wore an ancient style of clothing. He emanated a withered blood energy as if he had lived for countless years.

He didn’t have an earth-shattering atmosphere, but there was an unspeakable feeling to him. He was a divine mountain, forever

unchanging amidst this world.

Among the four, the one that gave off the strongest feeling was neither Venerable Ninesword nor the Divine Ancestor, it was the middle-aged man ahead.

He stood in place with a cold demeanor while glaring at Li Qiye with the intent of seeing through him.

“I have seen him before.” An old paragon stared at the middle-aged man for a long time and became startled: “Back at the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground, he, he is the last sect master of the legendary Thousand Emperors Gate!”

“The last sect master of the Thousand Emperors Gate?” Many people hadn’t heard of this sect before.

The crowd glanced at each other in confusion because this name was too foreign to them.

Even though his identity was revealed, no one really knew if he was the last sect master in terms of order or the only one left in this world.

“He actually came out of the burial ground alive. It seems like that place can truly increase one’s lifespan.” The old paragon murmured to himself.

This man was indeed the last sect master of the Thousand

Emperors Gate. He disappeared from sight after boarding an underworld boat back then. Who would have thought that he would finally come out today?

Li Qiye smiled and slowly spoke while staring at the last sect master: “I’m not surprised at all that the Jewel Pillar Mortal King could cultivate an Immortal Physique successfully from sucking up to you.”

People were slightly jolted after hearing this. Ever since the rise of the Mortal King, people knew that there was an unfathomable character behind him as his backer. However, no one really knew who this person was.

But now, Li Qiye’s words revealed everything to the crowd. So it turned out that this Thousand Emperors Sect Master was the person supporting the Mortal King.

The Thousand Emperors Gate was a lineage with four emperors. Furthermore, it was four consecutive emperors. Back in its era, even the Soaring Immortal Sect was quite hesitant in its dealings with this lineage.

Despite being destroyed, it was still the lineage in this world with the most powerful laws, including Immortal Physiques!

With this last sect master helping him, it was no wonder why the Mortal King could rise and have an Immortal Physique. This was the real reason.

The last sect master stared at Li Qiye and uttered with a chilling glare: “[A monstrosity like you must die in this generation!](#)”

Since the start of time, there have been many Immortal Emperors. However, there were not too many that could be called monstrosities. For example, Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, Immortal Emperor Fei Yang, and Empress Hong Tian!

The last sect master didn't only want to kill Li Qiye as revenge for the Mortal King, a monster like Li Qiye reminded him of someone else who was just as devilish... Empress Hong Tian!

“Kill me?” Li Qiye smirked and leisurely said: “It wasn't easy for you to obtain some lifespan, yet instead of cherishing it, you actually came here to oppose me. I'm considering whether I should capture you alive and slowly peel off your skin until you reveal the whereabouts of the Thousand Emperors Gate's treasury.”

In those days, Empress Hong Tian destroyed the Thousand Emperors Gate. However, there was one difference compared to the Divine Beast Realm. The gate still had many disciples scattered outside. Some of them were of the ancestor level as well. After destroying the gate, the empress didn't try to kill every single one of them, unlike what she did to the Divine Beast Realm when she uprooted them completely.

In this way, there were many fishes that slipped out of the net from the Thousand Emperors Gate. The majority of the legendary treasures from the sect were transferred away.

It was just a casual remark from Li Qiye. However, it excited many people. Some imperial lineages were secretly calculating how many Godkings had to personally take action in order to capture this last sect master alive.

The Thousand Emperors Gate was rumored to have the most amazing treasury in this world. If one could find it, then they would become rich overnight. This even applied to imperial lineages.

The last sect master chillingly responded: “Your death is imminent, yet you still do not repent!”

At this time, many people weren’t even listening to him. They were too busy calculating how to capture him alive.

Treasures always tempted people, especially one from a lineage with four emperors. The sect had been destroyed a very long time ago. Who wouldn’t be coveting all of these unowned treasures?

No real equivalent here. The raw would be demonspawn, but it can also be used to describe an uber genius. It’s one of those words with many meanings mixing together. Very contextual.

Chapter 1111: Immortal Dao Decapitator

“Is that so?” Li Qiye glanced at the last sect master and leisurely responded: “I actually want to see what treasures you brought. If the four of you are together, you must have brought something extremely heaven-shattering. Little existences like the Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom can only take out scrap metal, but you are different. What will you take out? What great treasures are still there from the coffers of the Thousand Emperors Gate?” He started laughing from anticipation after saying this.

The venerable shouted: “Little animal, we brought enough to cut you into pieces!”

His heart was dripping blood at this moment. They worked together to create the great formation. As long as Li Qiye entered, he would become powerless. Even if he was a God-Monarch, only annihilation would await him before Jikong Wudi’s Imperial Massacre.

In their eyes, if Jikong Wudi could kill Li Qiye, he would become famous once more and the throne would be his for the taking in the future.

But who would have thought that the sure-win blow ended with Jikong Wudi’s demise? This forced them to take things to the final step, making them use their ace!

This was something they wouldn’t want to do unless there was

no other choice. Moreover, they definitely didn't want to waste it on Li Qiye.

Li Qiye was quite heaven-defying, so the group knew that he must have some unfathomable dao protectors behind him. Because of this, the four of them decided to work together.

The last sect master even took out an extremely unbelievable item to use as the hidden ace to kill Li Qiye's dao protectors.

However, his dao protectors had yet to appear, but they already had to use it on Li Qiye instead.

“Little animal, even if you are the reincarnation of an Immortal Emperor or the child of deities, you still won't be able to escape death.” The Divine Ancestor shouted as well.

However, Li Qiye interrupted him with a dismissive wave: “Okay, stop boasting. So what if I kill your ancient kingdom's disciples? It is only a sect with two emperors, a bunch of dogs that can't reach the apex.”

Such words left the crowd slack-jawed. A sect with two emperors was only made up of a bunch of dogs? Then other great powers didn't need to exist in this world since they were so pitiful.

But today, no one dared to retort. Who in the current generation could speak such words outside of Li Qiye?

“You...” The Divine Ancestor was trembling with anger.

The sect master of the Thousand Emperors Gate commanded: “Attack now to prevent further complications.”

“Clank—” With his order, the entire area was sealed. The heaven and earth were separated with Li Qiye trapped inside.

Four great decapitators sealed the four corners. They were lever-blades that seemed to be decapitating everything inside the radius.

Li Qiye was at the center of this dead zone and had no place to run due to the surrounding blades.

“Immortal Dao Decapitators.” Li Qiye slightly grimaced at the four blades.

Others didn’t know about them, but he did. They were not only capable of killing immortals and devils, even the heaven and earth could fall prey to their sharpness and incredible origin.

Whoever was inside their cutting range would be in great trouble and escape from this region was virtually impossible.

“What are those things?” Everyone trembled a bit after the decapitators appeared. In an instant, the experts reacted quickly and retreated. The weaker ones couldn’t respond in time and immediately fell limp to the ground.

Regardless of how far away they were, everyone felt an extreme sharpness cutting into their skin.

They felt that both time and space were severed along with the power of the grand dao. It seemed that the moment the blades fell, they would slash the entire world and rip off all relations.

At this time, the chief ambassador, Venerable Ninesword, the Divine Ancestor, and the last sect master each controlled one corner of the blades and aimed them at Li Qiye.

They used their longevity blood to bathe these decapitators while pushing them closer towards Li Qiye.

It wasn't easy to exert the real power of these weapons. Even though the four were quite powerful, they still had to offer their longevity blood. Moreover, the faster the cutting speed, the more longevity blood would be required.

For people close to death like them, these drops of blood were extremely precious. Thus, they only used a small amount to push these chopping blades towards Li Qiye in the center.

The moment the blades cut off the four corners of this region, Li Qiye would be decapitated inside sooner or later.

“Pluff!” Blood dyed his clothes red while the blades had yet to cut him directly. Even though they were countless miles away, the

terrifying edges had already left horrifying cuts on his body and made his blood spatter.

“Open!” Li Qiye shouted. His blood energy soared to the sky and began to derive a worldly law.

However, the forces of time, space, and grand dao had all been severed. It didn’t matter if one had powerful blood energy or the most profound laws in this world, all would become quite weak and be unable to exert their true power.

Li Qiye channeled a merit law with incredible defensive power. However, this defense became quite feeble without the grand dao supporting it. Under the force of the decapitators, the laws seemed fragile to the point of being negligible. It was instantly cut into pieces by the blades.

“Pluff! Pluff! Pluff!” Even more lacerations appeared on his blood-stained body shortly afterward.

“Open!” Li Qiye roared again and tried multiple times to counterattack. Alas, he couldn’t escape the all-severing property of the decapitators. His invincible arts were instantly severed while more wounds appeared on his body.

Venerable Ninesword cruelly shouted: “Little animal, keep on struggling. We will flay you into thin pieces just like fish.”

They continued to slowly empower the decapitators without any

anxiety. The blades were still quite far from Li Qiye, but the sharpness emanating from them was still hurting him.

This scene made many people gasp and shiver. One paragon murmured: “They are still not cutting him directly. They’re so far away, but Fiercest already can’t withstand them. If we were in his place, we would have been cut to little pieces already.”

“Even Godkings might not be able to escape from this type of immortal blade!” An aghast spectator mumbled.

Everyone had seen Li Qiye’s powerful body before, but today, it was covered in wounds even before the blades reached him. How could they not be afraid of such terrifying blades?

“Open for me now!” Li Qiye howled again, but he was a struggling dog that couldn’t resist the blades. There was no spot on his body that was still untouched.

The four on the other side sneered repeatedly as they watched Li Qiye about to be cut into little pieces. They even deliberately slowed down so that the world could see the fate of those who challenged their prestige — a fate of being flayed into thin slices.

“What now?” Bai Jianzhen noticed that Li Qiye was no longer able to stand straight and could fall over at any time. With a shaken expression, she asked: “Should we help him?”

“No.” Mei Suyao shook her head: “The Young Noble must have a

reason for telling us not to interfere earlier. We cannot ruin his business.”

“This is only his normal strength.” Li Shuangyan felt pain from seeing all the wounds, but she didn’t dare to take action: “Young Noble still has many killer moves left.”

She was aware of his full arsenal. At this time, he still hadn’t used an imperial weapon yet!

“Pop!” Eventually, under the constant channeling from the four, the decapitators inched closer. Li Qiye couldn’t hold back and suddenly fell over. He tried to get up several times but failed.

“It’s over for Fiercest.” Many people were shocked to see this. Some were even unwilling to watch.

“Bang!” While Li Qiye sat there awaiting death, a white hand descended from the sky and struck the four corners of this location, causing the earth to tremble.

Even the Immortal Dao Decapitators were shaken by this attack. Their brilliance started to flash uncertainly.

Someone shouted in high spirits: “Is that a Godking attacking?”

“Who dares to interfere?!” The venerable’s group was jolted from the quaking. They added even more longevity blood to control the decapitators. The blades emitted a terrifying immortal light.

Anyone who came close would be slash into pieces by these rays.

Chapter 1112: Bu Lianxiang's Rage

The crowd felt a chill after seeing the power of the decapitators. Just the immortal light alone was enough to deter people from approaching. Not even God-Monarchs would be willing to take such a risk.

However, in the face of this mighty power, the attacker felt no fear. A stomp came from the sky.

“Boom!” The blades that were slashing up the four corners were shaken once more.

It did not stop there. The stars above began to move. In the blink of an eye, the world seemed to disappear, replaced with a region of stars. With the flip of a palm, countless planets as large as the sun sped forward. In the blink of an eye, this area seemed to be the beginning of the world. The user was moving myriad existences as the ruler of the universe.

“Boom!” The whole world quaked. Even the powerful blades couldn't withstand such a horrifying onslaught. They were instantly blown away and the space created by them was shattered.

In the middle of this void, a supreme woman stood there like an immortal with a beauty indescribable by the brush.

A silver galaxy flowed where she stood. Wherever she was would be the center of the sky. She alone was the master of everything in this space.

She held the fallen Li Qiye who was stricken with injuries and stained with blood.

“How are you feeling?” She spoke with an expression full of pain while embracing him.

“I’m, I’m fine...” His pale self struggled to open his eyes. It seemed that he couldn’t hold on any longer and immediately fainted.

Meanwhile, the four old men in the corners staggered backward from the woman’s attack.

They were shocked to be at a disadvantage despite having the immortal decapitators. This was especially true for the Divine Ancestor. His face twisted; he was praised as the number one existence in the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom, but today, he was easily repelled by someone. One could imagine just how powerful and scary this woman must be.

The woman’s eyes immediately turned fierce after examining Li Qiye and noticing that he was full of bloody wounds. Everyone felt their hearts skipping a beat. It seemed that time itself skipped a beat because of her.

At this time, she neither screamed nor shouted, yet they all could feel her rage. Her wrath was a reason for gods to tremble.

“Who, who is she...” Someone quietly asked after seeing the woman saving the dying Li Qiye.

“I have seen her before...” The ancestor that had been to the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground before murmured: “She climbed up one of the underworld boats. People call her the Middle Continent Princess. Who would have thought that she is coming out in this generation as well!”

The woman was indeed the Middle Continent Princess, but not too many people had heard of her title. As for her name itself, perhaps no one in this world still remembered it.

Perhaps Li Qiye was the only one in the present who knew her name — Bu Lianxiang.

“You shouldn’t have attacked him.” She grimaced with a cold voice.

The Divine Ancestor’s group recalled their decapitators. The last sect master of the Thousand Emperors Gate looked at her and chillingly spoke: “You shouldn’t meddle with our business.”

The Divine Ancestor gravely added: “We will kill this little animal no matter what. I don’t care who you are. Be smart and leave now, but leave that kid behind.”

“You all deserve death!” The angered Bu Lianxiang immediately soared to the sky with one hand still hugging Li Qiye. She flipped

her other palm to attack the four.

“Kill her!” The four didn’t hesitate at all. They offered their longevity blood to power the decapitators again to slay her.

“Boom!” The nine worlds trembled. Under the swaying of her palm, the silver galaxy shattered while the stars began to move. The entire universe was within her palm.

The silver river immediately blew away the immortal decapitators. Without a doubt, this scary celestial stream in her hand was much more powerful and heaven-defying than the blades.

“Go again!” The four aghast ancestors screamed and stopped minding the price. They even burned up their longevity blood to kill the princess.

“Pop!” Bu Lianxiang spun around and, with one kick, shattered all of the venerable’s nine divine swords.

“Ahh!” The kick went on to penetrate his chest. His body fell down from the sky.

At the same time, her fair palm swung forward and destroyed myriad laws. The Divine Ancestor roared and used the most powerful technique in his life — the combination of two emperors’ Heaven’s Will Secret Laws.

“Boom!” Despite using two different secret laws to defend himself, he still couldn’t escape. All laws shattered before the might of her palm. The ancestor could only watch as his body broke into little pieces. His mangled flesh fell down; this was a terrible and unsightly way to go.

“Shit!” The Nine Worlds’ Chief Ambassador was scared out of his mind. He turned and fled, but Bu Lianxiang casually reached out with a finger.

“Whoosh!” Her finger attack smashed his skull, causing his brain to spatter everywhere before he even had a chance to scream.

Among the four experts from the previous generation, only the last sect master of the Thousand Emperors Gate was able to survive one blow from her. The other three were instantly killed.

Within the blink of an eye, she annihilated three heaven-defying ancestors, including the strongest person of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom. This was truly a shocking scene.

“Die!” At this time, the last sect master knew he couldn’t run away even if he wanted to. He understood just how powerful his foe was and could only risk it all. He unleashed an attack accompanied by thousands of golden dragons. The deities emerged with great explosions. Figures of emperors appeared. At this moment, he seemed to be the lord of the emperors above the nine heavens.

“Scram!” Bu Lianxiang’s Immortal Physique slightly shifted to

stomp on this world. She instantly stomped down on the sect master's head. The thousands of golden dragons screamed; the deities were annihilated along with the images of emperors.

“Crack!” The breaking of bones resounded. Everyone could see his skull being instantly crushed.

“Ah—” Under the crushing Immortal Physique, he was ground into a bloody mist that drifted away with the wind.

People were speechless because of this for a very long time. Their mouths were wide open, yet no words came out.

Three saints aptitude, a true one. The princess' talents were different than Jikong Wudi's.

Jikong Wudi was only praised as having three saint talents, but he had a natural King Physique that eventually became a Saint Physique.

On the other hand, the princess had three natural saint talents. Moreover, she cultivated an Immortal Physique as well!

At this time, with Li Qiye in her embrace, she turned around and swept her gaze through the crowd. Everyone uncontrollably shivered and quickly retreated.

Even an existence like the Divine Ancestor was only an ant in her eyes. Such a person was too scary.

She ignored the others and left with Li Qiye. The other girls regained their thoughts and quickly followed her.

People gradually calmed down after she faded away into the horizon. Even Old Immortal from the Rampaging Divine Mountain was astonished as he murmured: “The marvelous immortal arts from the Middle Continent Ancient Kingdom. Could it be that she is at grand completion for her Immortal Physique?”

If even someone like Old Immortal was shocked, it would be enough to show just how mighty Bu Lianxiang was. People still quivered when they recalled how easy it was for her to dispatch the four people earlier; it was as if they were mere insects.

“Is it really a grand completion Immortal Physique?” Another wondered in awe.

If it was truly a grand completion Immortal Physique, then it would be too scary. According to legends, a peak Virtuous Paragon with a grand completion physique could assail Immortal Emperors.

“Who is she?” After a good while, more people calmed down. One person asked: “Is she one of Li Qiye’s dao protectors or another Era Evader?”

“She is the Middle Continent Princess, a mythical existence.” Only those who had lived through several generations would know a character of this level. He went on to say: “She used to be the

number one beauty in the nine worlds with three saint aptitudes. She once caused rains and winds in the nine worlds and massacred till blood flowed like rivers.”

A junior curiously asked: “She’s that terrifying?”

The ancient existence gently nodded: “Back in the distant Ancient Ming Era, the Middle Continent Ancient Kingdom was the only lineage who could fight them. Another legend states that their marvelous immortal arts came from the immortal world itself. They possessed the most powerful strength in this world...

“... Back in that era, the princess was rumored to be the only one who understood the clan’s marvelous arts. Later on, she still swept through the nine worlds even though this kingdom was destroyed. Even the Ancient Ming couldn’t do anything to her.”

This existence paused for a moment before recalling with emotion: “Keep in mind, this old era belonged to the Ancient Ming while Immortal Emperor Tian Tu was hailed as their greatest Immortal Emperor.”

“In this age, the Ancient Ming tried to hunt her down, but she still came out unscathed. This is enough to prove her power. Unfortunately, she lived in that old era. If she was born in the Emperors Era, she would have become an invincible Empress.” The old man murmured quietly.

Chapter 1113: Love And Hate

More people began to wonder after the storm: “Could it be that this princess is Li Qiye’s master or dao protector?”

The majority of the crowd found this statement to be quite logical, and one even nodded: “Only a heaven-defying person like her would be able to train someone as invincible as Fiercest.”

In just a moment, people clamored about and discussed the princess.

“He still didn’t use his full strength.” In the horizon, Zhan Shi was silent for a long time before he softly sighed.

Earlier, Li Qiye was on the verge of death due to the immortal decapitators. Everyone thought that he couldn’t oppose the Divine Ancestor’s group. However, Zhan Shi and Lin who had fought against Li Qiye understood that Li Qiye still didn’t use his full strength even on the brink of demise.

He was still hiding his strength at the very last second.

“Just what kind of opponents will be able to make him go all out?” Lin had a bitter smile. Despite his incredible background, he still couldn’t see through Li Qiye. The person was like an unfathomable abyss, no one could see through him.

No one was aware of just how dangerous and immeasurable he

was.

“Maybe even the death of gods wouldn’t be enough to fill this abyss.” In the end, Lin could only emotionally make this comment.

“We are still not his match in the end.” Zhan Shi gently sighed as well.

Lin agreed with this assessment: “I’m afraid neither of us can surpass him regardless of our achievements in the future. He will become a legend, his achievements will forever be unsurpassable.”

Zhan Shi had nothing to add. After fighting with Li Qiye and witnessing his strength and supreme grand dao, he felt helpless. Perhaps one could even say that he felt despair.

With a rock-solid dao heart, he was not so easily shaken. A guy like him would not underestimate himself, but he felt his pride and self-esteem shattered and littered on the ground after fighting Li Qiye.

It was helpless and futile to try to overcome Li Qiye. This was the feeling of being a tiny blade of grass before a divine mountain. The two of them were simply not on the same level.

“We can only say that this is fate!” He acquiesced to being a victim of destiny: “We won’t be able to overturn our defeat.”

“But losing to Fiercest is not a shameful matter at all.” Lin forced

a smile: “Regardless of how incredible one might be, they would only face defeat before Li Qiye. Heaven-defying, devilish, whatever. All of these things are not worth mentioning before him.”

“I guess you can put it that way.” Zhan Shi chuckled awkwardly. They could only comfort themselves in this manner.

Although this type of comforting was not part of their nature for they did not wallow in self-pity, they were indeed powerless before Fiercest.

“Brother Zhan, the green hills are still there along with the clear flowing water. This little brother will take my leave now.” Eventually, Heavenly Emperor Lin said goodbye.

Zhan Shi cupped his fists and sentimentally replied: “Being friends with Brother Lin is my biggest blessing, I hope that we will be able to meet again.”

“I hope so too.” Lin felt a bit dejected and returned the gesture: “I’m afraid my sect will not let me out so easily after returning this time. No matter what, I hope we can see each other again, whether it be decades or centuries from now.”

The duo had grave injuries after fighting against Li Qiye. They would need a long period of recuperation after returning to their sects. For Lin, it was an utter defeat, a great humiliation to his sect. It was likely that they wouldn’t let him leave so easily afterward.

“If it is meant to be, we will meet again.” Zhan Shi felt sad as well. Despite their short time together, there was a great saying to describe this situation — friendship is not predicated on the time spent together. He and Lin were friends that could trust each other with their lives.

“Goodbye.” Lin cupped his fists and drifted away to disappear into the horizon.

Zhan Shi watched his departure and gently sighed. He told Old Immortal who was standing next to him: “Ancestor, let us return. This generation belongs to Fiercest, I should leave this stage.”

Old Immortal didn’t respond. He was confident in his sect’s disciple, but he had also seen Li Qiye’s power with his own eyes. Regardless of how powerful Zhan Shi might be, he couldn’t compete for the Heaven’s Will against Li Qiye. To forcefully do so was akin to courting death.

Some time passed. Li Qiye eventually woke up and found that all of his injuries had been treated.

“You’re awake.” A beautiful face full of concern came into Li Qiye’s view.

Who else could it be but Bu Lianxiang? She sat next to him and kept him company. It seemed that she had been here the entire time.

Li Qiye looked at her and gently nodded: “Thanks, Lianxiang. Without you saving me, I don’t even want to imagine the consequences.”

Her stare eventually turned cold along with her response: “You weren’t pretending just to look pitiful?”

“Pretending?” Li Qiye revealed a forced smile: “That would be toying with my life; just one misstep would have ended it all.”

“Really?” She quipped: “What have you ever refrained from doing? Hmph, such reckless undertakings are just a daily occurrence to you.”

“What can I do if you choose to think that way?” He smiled wryly and tried to get up. However, the motion affected his wounds, causing him to bite his teeth from pain.

She quickly helped him and scowled: “You are wounded everywhere, so stop acting strong. You can posture all you want after you are healed!”

Even though she was discontent and voiced her complaints, her actions indicated otherwise for they were full of love.

He rested on her thighs and looked at the beauty inches away. He gently sighed after seeing her flawless features and sighed: “After so many years, you are still so beautiful and enchanting, as if there have been no changes. Back then when everyone called you the

prettiest girl in the nine worlds, they were truly correct.”

She maintained her glare and spoke with a distant tone: “What now? Why the sudden change of tone? Are you trying to trick me into doing something?”

“Am I really so rotten?” He treated her jade legs as a pillow and smiled: “I am only expressing my feelings. If time could flow backwards, I definitely wouldn’t have been able to stop myself from chasing after you, the nine worlds’ greatest beauty.”

“Hmph! Going back in time!” Her eyes turned cold like a blade piercing straight through him.

“Okay, okay, I shouldn’t have said that.” He quickly raised his hands to surrender: “What I’m trying to say is, is it too late if I try to chase you now?”

She proudly glanced at him with a noble appearance and uttered: “Hmph, that depends on your sincerity. If you can prove it, then I can think about it.”

“Just think about it?” Li Qiye smirked: “Remember, I am a man loved by all. Whoever meets me will harbor nothing but adoration; flowers blossom before my appearance. If you think too much, someone else will rob me first.”

“Go die!” She rolled her eyes at him: “Even if you are adored by all and flowers blossom before you, I still wouldn’t want you!”

Despite her answer, she unconsciously felt a sweet sensation in her heart. This was like a quarrel between two lovers.

“Time is always heartless.” Li Qiye gently and movingly spoke: “But people are full of emotions.”

Bu Lianxiang turned quiet while staring at the man resting on her thighs. She couldn't help but gently caress his face. It was a real and natural sensation; an indescribable feeling permeated through her heart.

Millions of years of chasing... this was not a dream right now. Back then, she could only yearn for him under the moonlight. However, when their eyes met from far away, it seemed that it was destined for the two to be together in this lifetime.

Back then, she was only a young lady, but there had always been someone silently watching and caring for her in secrecy...

Throughout the long years, she had suspected that everything was fake. There were indeed lies mixed in with truths. However, this moment right now was reality. By touching his face, she knew that it was real.

Eventually, she softly spoke while still touching his face: “You owe me.”

“After millions of years of entangling with each other, I don't

know who owes who exactly.” Li Qiye gently sighed: “But at the very least, I don’t want to trick you in this generation because this could be my last.”

“Hush.” She pressed her finger against his lips and gently shook her head: “I don’t want you to say such unlucky words. You are eternal and can live on for millions of generations. Even when the high heavens wither, you will still be able to live on.”

Chapter 1114: A Love Lasting For Million Years

“Eternal? Millions of generations?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile: “If I lived for that long, I will become the oldest of monsters.”

“Aren’t you already that right now?” She leered at him: “Who in this world has lived longer than you?”

“Which is why I’m a little tired of living.” He leisurely laughed: “Throughout the long years, I have experienced everything there is to experience, so maybe it is time to end it all.”

“Such nonsense again.” She angrily glared at him and said: “I won’t let you say such ominous things. You have already lived for millions of years, so it shouldn’t be difficult for you to [live for a billion more](#).”

“Another billion years...” Li Qiye gently sighed and shook his head: “A few things aren’t up to me to decide.”

She told him with a completely serious expression: “Even if you don’t want to, I still hope that you can live on. Even if it not for yourself, you have to live on for my sake.”

“What about you?” Li Qiye revealed a rare smile: “How long do you plan to live for?”

“I don’t care to live for an interminable time.” Her extremely beautiful eyes were fixated on him: “Being able to prolong my life this time was a chance given to me by the heavens. As long as I can stay by your side and be your company, to be able to see you in this generation... it doesn’t matter how long it lasts. Several years, dozens of years, or even centuries. None of this matters.”

She gently stroked his face and earnestly said: “This is more than enough for me, I do not wish for anything else. I am only a little girl chasing after you with no other unrealistic desires.”

Li Qiye contemplated for a long time before looking at her and spoke earnestly as well: “Lianxiang, come with me.”

She asked with a stoic demeanor: “To the place in the legends?”

Li Qiye seriously nodded: “Yes, that place. My journey will begin there, and it might be a very long one. I will need someone to keep me company.”

Bu Lianxiang turned quiet once more while staring at him. She eventually answered in a soft tone: “Legend states that our Bu Clan might be from there.”

“Yes, but it is not a legend, it is the truth.” Li Qiye nodded: “If you come with me, then it is also a return of sorts.”

She didn’t answer and seemed to be thinking about something.

Li Qiye reached out and gently touched her face: “The grand dao is endless. Maybe what I really need is someone who knows my past.”

After a long time, she held his hands and softly spoke: “I love this place, the nine worlds, but I can also accompany you to the ends of this world, or any other location. But you must know, I cannot follow you from one generation to another, to the very end of your journey.”

With that, her clear eyes seemed to be illuminating Li Qiye’s heart as she continued: “Your life is destined to be brilliant and colorful. Your path is destined to be long. I cannot walk with you to the very end, to see the terminus of this world.”

“I can keep you alive...” Li Qiye blurted while staring at her. He rarely said this to anyone, but if he was really determined, he could truly keep someone alive indefinitely.

“No.” Bu Lianxiang gently shook her head and interrupted him gently: “I have lived for a very long time from the Ancient Ming Era until now, from the Middle Continent all the way to the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground. For me, the length does not matter. As long as I can feel my own heartbeat, I will be satisfied. Living for millions of years isn’t as great as each time I received your letters as a little girl...”

Li Qiye didn’t know how to respond. He didn’t want to force her.

She gently caressed his face and spoke in a serious yet gentle

manner: “It is not that I am unwilling to accompany you. The grand dao is endless, so I don’t want you to see me wilt. I also don’t want eternal life if it means not being able to see the sun again. I only want to stay by your side right now. Whether it be for a short or long time doesn’t matter.”

“Maybe, I am too selfish and can’t handle too much...” She gently sighed with an indescribable sense of melancholy.

Li Qiye held her hands and stopped her: “No, it is not your fault but mine because I have lived for far too long.”

“And in the future, I will need to keep living.” He sighed and didn’t say anything else.

The two held each other’s hands in silence. For the two of them in the present, life and death were not important. The only things left were their pursuits and desires.

Over the next several days, Li Qiye’s injuries healed extremely quickly. He seemed completely fine, alive and kicking.

In fact, his injuries weren’t severe at all. The majority were only flesh wounds. He only did what he did to wait for Bu Lianxiang to take action.

In these few days, the Imperial Border was very lively. The three

great empires were marching together towards the Expedition Path. This matter shook the entire border.

This grand event caused a huge stir in the border itself, and not just to the cultivators.

Since the last time several empires went to the expedition, no one had done so in a very long time. But now, the three strongest empires were ready to go, how could people not be surprised?

Moreover, the expedition this time was led by the legendary Kingdom of Emperors. This was even more astonishing to the border.

Because of this, not only were there cultivators watching the Expedition Path in the distance, many kingdoms and nations of the border also came to observe. They wanted to use this chance to watch what would happen when the strongest empires in the Imperial Border entered the path.

The path was located deeper in the border. This was a cliff with a vast expanse ahead. No one could see the end or what was on the other side.

The Expedition Path was similar to the Evil Slaying Platform in this regard — same starting point, similar questions.

Outside of cultivators and experts, there were many Imperial Kings present as well. These kings were far weaker than the three

great kings, but one day, they would be just like the three empires with their entire kingdom embarking on this journey. Thus, they required more experience.

“Rumble!” The sky vibrated with the coming of a great imperial momentum. A great army emerged on the horizon. Three great kings led their cavalries into everyone’s sight.

In an instant, the three cavalries rushed forward and went to the outskirts of the Expedition Path. The three great kings glanced at the void ahead as their expressions became more dignified.

Many had trod on this journey in the past millions of years. However, to personally go was an entirely different matter. All three kings became quite serious.

The other Imperial Kings were quietly giving their blessings in hopes that the empires could reach the other side safely.

However, no one knew if this was possible or not. After such a long period of time, none of the kingdoms who had entered the path had returned or sent any messages back!

“Rumble!” While many cultivators were focusing on the armies of the three empires, the earth suddenly quaked as if a giant bull was turning.

Among the explosions in the distance, many great soldiers came along like a torrent of steel. The surging imperial momentum

made the entire Imperial Border quake continuously. The border was but a small boat lost in the stormy sea that could capsize at any moment.

“Where is this great army coming from?!” Many people felt their knees giving way after seeing this new army. Even experts from the previous generation turned pale.

A dark mass was approaching with an imperial momentum that suppressed everyone present. God-Monarchs were not spared from trembling.

“This is an invincible army capable of sweeping through the nine worlds.” Even experienced ancestors were aghast and quietly murmured.

The majority of cultivators didn’t know where such an army was coming from. Even though they had many questions, they didn’t have the guts to ask at this moment before the endless army.

This is an expression that comes out to be one billion. It is not literal here, I’m sure.

Chapter 1115: The Journey Begins

Even the Imperial Kings were shaken to see this mighty army of heroes. One of them murmured: “The Kingdom of Emperors is one of the rare behemoths in our border.”

They were very wary of this great army because this particular kingdom had already turned into a legend in this place. Ever since the strongest behemoths back then entered the Expedition Path, no other kingdoms dared to oppose it.

The three current empires were strong, but even if they combined forces, they were still quite weak compared to the Kingdom of Emperors.

This mighty army was led by Zhan Qi. The moment this army reached the base of the path, the atmosphere of this region became extremely solemn. Its might alone was enough to render everyone breathless.

It was indeed invincible. At the same time, an existence like Zhan Qi wouldn't be weaker than any Godking, further augmenting this army's prestige. Anyone would feel quite insignificant before this army; they would feel like a mantis trying to kick a carriage down.

The world was silent. This heroic army from the kingdom did not make a single sound. The armies from the three empires were quiet as well. Of course, the spectators were too afraid to say anything.

After an unknown amount of time, someone spoke: “Li Qiye is here.”

The majority of the spectators turned around and saw Li Qiye approach in the sky. He wore his imperial armor and exuded an engulfing imperial momentum like an invincible Imperial King. Outside of Mei Suyao and the other three girls, the awe-inspiring Middle Continent Princess was present as well.

Everyone held their breaths upon his arrival. No matter who they were or which sect they came from, no one dared to say a word in front of Li Qiye, let alone show signs of disrespect.

Today, Li Qiye was qualified to provoke anyone and any lineage!

“Your Majesty!” The heroic army cried out upon his arrival. Their chant shook the world and scared countless people.

Many paled and staggered backward in confusion after seeing the reverence this army showed towards Li Qiye.

No one knew how he became their master. This was a force capable of fighting against any Immortal Emperor’s legion. If Li Qiye brought this army outside, then it would be too frightening. Any lineage would have to take the long way around him.

Li Qiye quietly glanced at the great army and then Zhan Qi. Afterward, he turned towards the far horizon.

Evil-eyed Emperor spoke with gravity: “War Emperor, are we ready to depart?”

Li Qiye was still looking towards the distance as he answered: “Wait a while, someone should be coming!”

“Who?” Erudite Emperor also asked: “In the Imperial Border, is there still someone worthy of making our armies wait?”

“[Di Wei](#).” Li Qiye only said a name without looking at the kings. He was still waiting to see if the person would appear or not.

The truth was that he already knew the answer in his mind; he knew what Di Wei would pick, but he still hoped that the guy would change his mind at the last second.

For Li Qiye, rather than risking it all by placing his trust in the plateau and becoming its cannon fodder, he wished for Di Wei to enter the Expedition Path with the four empires.

He knew what would happen the moment the plateau decided to go to war. There was still a chance by entering the Expedition Path since there were some uncertainties and a sliver of hope, but only death awaited those staying at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau...

After hearing the name “Di Wei,” the three kings were astonished. They also stared into the horizon like Li Qiye with great hope.

In their minds, if Di Wei actually followed them on the Expedition Path, then their chance of success might be even higher.

Others didn't know who Di Wei was, but since they were three Imperial Kings, they knew just what kind of existence he was. He was the personal bodyguard of the Imperial Lord and knew many secrets of the Imperial Border as well as his lord. Of course, his strength was indisputable. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been the personal bodyguard of the Imperial Lord.

Moments passed and there was still no sign of him in the distance.

Li Qiye turned away and sighed. He knew that Di Wei had made up his mind and didn't change his decision.

The three Imperial Kings were disappointed as well, but this matter couldn't be forced.

Li Qiye looked over at Zhan Qi and spoke with a solemn tone: "Are you prepared?"

Zhan Qi looked straight at him with determination in his eyes before nodding.

Li Qiye placed one hand on Zhan Qi's head. With a metallic clank, pieces of the imperial armor on Li Qiye's body flew out towards Zhan Qi. In the blink of an eye, the imperial armor was on

his body instead.

“Boom!” Li Qiye’s imperial momentum resembled a flood breaking a dam. It endlessly entered Zhan Qi’s body. As Zhan Qi was accepting this unbelievable momentum, his body trembled along with the ground.

Eventually, all of Li Qiye’s momentum transferred over to him. With buzzing noises, wondrous images emerged behind Zhan Qi. He became the new supreme Imperial King that ruled over all the kingdoms in this world, an emperor that was personally presiding over an expedition.

“Today, I bestow upon you the title of War Emperor. You shall lead the heroic legion of the Kingdom of Emperors to embark post haste onto the Expedition Path!” Li Qiye announced with his hand placed on Zhan Qi’s head.

While kneeling on one knee, Zhan Qi accepted the bestowment. He then prostrated and shouted: “Your Majesty is everlasting and invincible across all the eons!”

“Your Majesty is everlasting and invincible across all the eons!” The heroic legion prostrated as well and shouted loudly with their eyes upon Li Qiye. This would be their last prostration.

Li Qiye lifted Zhan Qi up and solemnly said: “Your Majesty, rise. From now on, you are the Imperial King of the Kingdom of Emperors.”

Zhan Qi formally said goodbye to Li Qiye once again, and the legion behind him did the same.

Li Qiye sighed after looking at the sky before telling Zhan Qi: “It is getting late, go now.”

With a serious demeanor, Zhan Qi’s fierce eyes looked over at the other three kings. The kings nodded after glancing at each other. Triumphant turned around and looked at his own cavalry: “March!”

“March!” Evil-eyed and Erudite issued commands to their troops as well.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” In the blink of an eye, the imperial soldiers from the three empires flew into the sky and paved a path made of Regal Gold.

“Rumble!” The three empires were the first to embark on this road into the Expedition Path.

A cultivator murmured after seeing this: “So this is the Expedition Path.” Many people understood that the Expedition Path was paved with Regal Gold.

After getting on the path, the three armies continued on. The legion from the Kingdom of Emperors also got ready.

Zhan Qi looked at Li Qiye for a long time before bowing again. He

didn't look back and ordered: "March!"

With that, he led the great legion onto the Expedition Path.

Li Qiye watched the march for a long time in silence.

"Rumble!" After the heroic soldiers entered the Expedition Path, the battalions in the rear picked up the Regal Gold that had just been paved.

Just like this, the four empires continued forward while the soldiers in the rear kept on breaking the path to recover the gold. In this fashion, they went further into the vast expanse.

In spite of this, the Regal Gold was being damaged each time it was paved. After a certain amount of usage, the momentum inside would be depleted and it would become scrap metal.

Someone murmured: "What is waiting at the end of the Expedition Path?" Virtually all the cultivators were looking at the imperial soldiers building and breaking the path into the vast expanse.

No one could give him an answer since no one knew just how long this path was.

An Imperial King murmured: "In the legends, the Kingdom of Emperors has a vast amount of Regal Gold. With the addition of the Regal Gold from the three empires, maybe even three

generations of all of the remaining kingdoms digging wouldn't result in as much as the amount gathered here."

A different Imperial King added: "If they can't reach the other side despite having so much Regal Gold, then we should just stop thinking about it. If we excavate for another ten generations together, then it might be possible."

Meanwhile, Li Qiye kept on watching until the heroic legions disappeared into the void. His gaze still didn't move.

The only thing he could do now was to pray for them and hope that they could reach the other side safely, that there was a place for them over yonder.

"Let's go." A cultivator spoke some time after all the imperial soldiers disappeared from sight.

At this time, most of the cultivators had already left. The Expedition Path was just like the Evil Slaying Platform. There was no answer regarding the final destination.

Di Wei = Imperial Guard. It could be a title, but it feels weird to have this as a particular title because there should be more than one guard. It would be a cooler word if it was meant to be a title.

Chapter 1116: Hard To Say

After a long silence while looking at the emptiness, Chen Baojiao, who was standing next to him, asked softly: “Can they do it, can they reach the other shore?”

“I don’t know. We can only pray for their safe arrival.” Li Qiye withdrew his gaze and gently sighed.

Li Shuangyan comforted: “Don’t worry, they can definitely reach the other shore. The millions of heroic soldiers could sweep through the world with nothing able to stand in their way.”

Li Qiye only smiled wryly after hearing her encouragement: “I hope so.”

The Expedition Path was a road full of the unknown. The success rate might depend on one’s strength or it might play no part at all. There was even a chance that different people would find different things on the path and find different things on the other side...

They had to be the ones to find the answer since no one was privy to the path’s ultimate end.

“Both the path and the platform are just eternal mysteries, like the underworld itself.” Even Bu Lianxiang lamented. She didn’t comfort Li Qiye with words, but she did hold his hand tightly.

Her words made the girls even more curious, so they stared at her

for a bit. This was because Bu Lianxiang back then boarded the underworld boat. Her presence today meant that she had successfully prolonged her life. The girls were curious about what she saw after boarding the boat.

There were many legends about the boats flowing along the underworld river. Some believed that the river ended at the deepest location of the earth, flowing to the underworld palace of hell. However, some also thought that it was a path to the immortal world. Only the immortal world could prolong someone's life...

Regardless of the final destination, the girls were curious all the same. They knew very well that Bu Lianxiang was the only person who prolonged her life. Of course, the last sect master of the Thousand Emperors Gate also did the same, but he was now dead.

“Don’t look at me.” Bu Lianxiang gently shook her head: “I can’t explain a few things clearly. You have to personally experience it.”

“Certain things aren’t necessarily real even though you are seeing it, especially regarding the underworld boats.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Is there really an underworld?” Even so, Chen Baojiao still asked because she had seen with her own eyes the wonders in the sky at the underworld river back then. They became questions buried in her heart.

Li Qiye only smiled at her question. Bai Jianzhen was curious as

well because she saw Bu Lianxiang at the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground too.

Bu Lianxiang shook her head gently: “I can’t give you an answer to this question. The underworld boat didn’t go to a hellish palace, or at least mine didn’t. Perhaps only those who gain an entirely new life would be able to reach the very end of the river unlike the others.”

“I heard War God Mu lived for another generation.” Mei Suyao became interested about this mystery. She glanced over at Li Qiye.

In fact, Li Shuangyan and the others also did. Back then, Li Qiye chose the boat for the War God Temple’s ancestor and the princess. It was likely he was the one who understood the underworld the most.

Li Qiye smiled wryly at the excited girls. He gently shook his head: “Don’t look at me either, I also don’t know. Or rather, no one really knows about this. War God Mu indeed lived for another generation, but he never talked to anyone about it after returning. Who knows what he saw there, not even his disciples are privy to this.”

The girls were a bit disappointed after hearing this. Back then, there were too many unsolved mysteries at the burial ground.

“Alright, let’s go.” Li Qiye took one last glimpse at the expanse. The heroic legions had disappeared into the void already.

The girls turned around and left first. They wanted to let Li Qiye and Bu Lianxiang stay together, so they went in front. Bu Lianxiang and Li Qiye were holding each other's hands. She looked at the girls and slowly asked: "You still haven't told them?"

"Tell them what?" Li Qiye revealed a faint smile before sighing: "Some things are better left unknown. Plus, it is not certain that they will have to face it eventually. They are different from us; we are old monsters that have lived from one generation to the next. They are still young and in the spring of their youth. They might not need to face the darkness in this world."

"Unlike you who have been enduring the darkest aspects of this world from the Desolate Era to the Ancient Ming Era and even to the present day." Bu Lianxiang looked at him and softly said: "There are things you are still burying in your heart, things that you are reluctant to share with others."

"One could say that it is one of my missions." Li Qiye sighed once more: "This is the price of immortality. Others do not need to bear this burden or even know about it. The world is full of unimaginable darkness, not everyone needs to face it. It is better for them to think that this world is one of light."

Bu Lianxiang didn't know how to respond while looking at this man beside her. After millions of years, he had learned too many things. Some cursed him as a murderer, the evil hand behind the curtains, a bloodthirsty maniac.

However, since the ancient eras and especially during the extremely grim Ancient Ming Era, without his struggles, just how

long would it have taken for this era to end? He had always been facing the darkness alone, the true burden his alone.

Li Qiye looked at her and gently said: “If you are willing, I can help you live for another generation. I have the power and the means to do so this time. I have absolute confidence in being able to make my way to the end of the underworld river.”

“There’s no need to do so.” She sighed and shook her head: “To live for another lifetime might sound wonderful, but I know that there is a price one must pay to obtain this. People who have done so are unwilling to talk about their experience. There’s no need to think any further, I can faintly guess what I will have to face.” She held his hand intensely and spoke with gravity: “Personally, I feel that I have lived long enough. Living for one or ten more generations won’t make a difference. It is meaningful and worthwhile enough to be by your side, even if it is only for a short time.”

“Plus, right now, I still have at least several centuries or even a thousand years more.” She continued: “This is an ample amount of time for me.”

“Several centuries...” He repeated. For cultivators, centuries or even a thousand years was not a long time, but it was enough for Bu Lianxiang.

She looked at him deeply and said: “Once the Heaven’s Will appears, I will send you off on your journey and then stay here waiting for that day to come. That is all I want.”

She spoke very softly in a gentle manner. However, each word carried a lot of weight. They seemed to be engraving themselves straight into his heart.

“I will stay and protect the nine worlds until the last day of my life.” She spoke softly: “Or rather, I will leave something behind for you in this world. Regardless of the passing years and the outcome in the future, your traces will be eternal here.”

“That day will come.” He answered with a sense of helplessness in his heart. Regardless of how powerful one might be or how long they lived, there were always some things that would make them feel helpless.

“I have no regrets today.” She spoke sincerely: “Although I will not be able to see that day, I believe that you will be able to succeed because my man has never failed before. No matter the era or the opponent, my man will be the man laughing in the end!”

“Yes, I will be the last one smiling when I return triumphantly one day!” He solemnly said: “You will be able to see that day.”

“I will definitely see it regardless of whether I am still in this world or not.” She held his hand tighter: “But that doesn’t matter. Just know that I am very happy and content right now.”

The two held hands and continued forward in silence. Li Qiye couldn’t express his feelings at this moment.

Chapter 1117: Meeting Little Autumn Again

Li Qiye and the girls came to the boundary between the Imperial Border and the Devil World. They were standing next to a lake and watching its calm waters.

Chen Baojiao asked: “What are we here for?”

“We’re going to the Nihility Temple.” Li Qiye answered calmly.

“Nihility Temple?” Li Shuangyan was a bit startled: “The temple that Little Autumn always talked about? I thought it was located in this realm.”

“You can say that it is both in the lesser world yet not.” He smiled and threw the Buddhist lotus into the lake.

“Burple! Glop! Burple!” Once it was thrown in the water, the calm lake suddenly boiled. The water whirled around like boiling water.

Li Qiye jumped onto the lotus and told the girls: “Come, this will lead us to the highest point in this world, the Nihility Temple.”

The girls jumped onto the lotus without any hesitation.

“Splashhh!” The unimaginable happened. A huge whirlpool appeared on the lake’s surface and sucked everything inside,

including Li Qiye and the others on the lotus flower.

The girls were looking around during the swallowing process. It was swirling quite fast, but not a single drop of water touched them. It seemed that this lake was sucking them into another world.

This scene was truly too magical and bizarre. The girls didn't know that this lotus had such a use.

After a while, the girls heard a crashing sound. The water rose again and the swirling water keeping their lotus afloat became tranquil.

They found themselves in the middle of the lake again. If it wasn't for the different scenery, they would have thought that they didn't move at all and were still at the same lake as before.

Li Qiye took a quick glance around and said: "We're here."

The girls observed their surroundings. There was a medium-sized mountain in front of them, but it gave off quite an incredible feeling, as if it encompassed all the spirit energy and Buddhist affinity in this world. The mountain itself had a layer of zen and the most profound and complex dharma.

This was a seemingly ordinary yet completely extraordinary mountain. It didn't have towering Buddhist lights or an extraordinary presence. However, it had the appearance of being

washed by countless years. It resembled a meditating Buddha that had been freed from the withering of time.

There was an old and small temple at the top. No one knew when it was built since it was too archaic to make out any discernible clues.

Those with sharp eyes would be able to see a plaque at the entrance. It looked like it was about to fall down and had the words “Nihility Temple” written on it.

The words were almost too faint to see. They had been baptized by the endless time and faded into blurriness.

While looking at this wondrous temple, Bai Jianzhen became cautious and asked: “What kind of temple is Nihility? How does it compare to the eighteen temples on Spirit Mountain?”

“The eighteen temples cannot compare to it at all.” Li Qiye noticed her vigilance and slowly explained: “All the monks here right now are retired Buddhist Lords.”

“These monks were all Buddhist Lords from the Buddhist Kingdom?” The girls were frightened after hearing this.

Just think about it, the Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva was enough to scare Godkings. Just what kind of existences are these Buddhist Lords then?

This seemingly inconspicuous old temple had monks who used to be Buddhist Lords. Just how frightening was this?

Li Shuangyan took a deep breath and murmured: “This Nihility Temple is too scary.”

“The most dreadful part about it is not the monks inside.” Li Qiye flatly said: “However, it is indeed quite scary. For generations now, countless Godkings and True Gods have fallen inside.”

“According to the legends, Immortal Emperor Fei Yang and Immortal Emperor Hao Hai have been here as well.” Mei Suyao had a serious and respectful expression on her face while looking at the temple.

“Yes, both of those emperors have been here before.” Li Qiye nodded: “Back then, Immortal Emperor Fei Yang only arrived due to trickery while Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was more forceful. However, Immortal Emperor Hao Hai didn’t seize any advantages and had to leave in the end using all of his might. After leaving, he never entered the Buddhist Funeral Plateau again for the rest of his life.”

The girls were amazed after hearing this. Even Immortal Emperors couldn’t do anything to the Nihility Temple.

Li Qiye got off the lotus while looking at the mountain. The girls were right behind him. All of them, including Mei Suyao and Bai Jianzhen, looked quite serious.

If there was a most difficult fight in one's life, then this absolutely frightening situation ahead could be it. Even Mei Suyao felt nervous and greatly uncertain.

“Damn bald and stinky donkeys, get the hell out here. Stop hiding in your lair!” Before the group made it to the base of the mountain, they could hear some cursing coming from the distance.

“Stinky donkeys, do you hear me or not? Are you all deaf?” This incessant cursing didn't stop and instead became increasingly louder and more vulgar: “Asses, listen to your uncle well. I want to dismantle and burn down your crappy temple!”

The girls glanced at each other, especially Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao. The two of them found this voice very familiar.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, smiled wryly and shook his head. He knew who was swearing.

Sure enough, on top of a boulder at the foot of the mountain was a worm. To be more accurate, it was a little dragon with a body full of glittering golden light. It radiated waves of lights and had a very sacred appearance. Others would think that it would transform into a golden dragon and fly into the nine heavens.

However, who would have thought that this worm that resembled a dragon would have such an abusive foul mouth? It completely contradicted its holy appearance.

After cursing for a while, it seemed to grow tired and rested on the boulder instead.

“Don’t tell me you have been cursing this whole time?” Li Qiye smilingly asked while looking at the fella lying on the boulder.

The little guy heard Li Qiye’s voice and looked over. It was ecstatic to see the group and lunged forward: “Boss, Little Autumn knew you would personally come here! With your presence, you will meet god, slay god, meet devil, slay devil and kill all the bald donkeys in there!”

Li Qiye slapped the chest on the worm’s back and scolded with a smile: “Okay, Little Autumn, stop sucking up.”

Ever since it received the fortune at the World Tree, it underwent a great transformation and was turning into a dragon.

“Hehe, Boss and everyone is here now. I can rest assured this time. We should attack that broken temple together and burn everything down.” After seeing that his backing was here, Little Autumn turned quite bold and let out a cocky laugh.

“How did you get here?” Chen Baojiao was very curious. It seemed that Little Autumn had been here for a long time even before the opening of the lesser world.

It was full of hot air as it declared with great confidence: “Hehehe, little girl, look again and see how amazing I am. As a

natural divine dragon, is there a place that I cannot reach among the nine heavens and ten earths as well as myriad realms?”

“Less boasting!” Li Qiye laughed and kicked it flying: “[The Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva told me that you have been using my name to intimidate others?](#)”

After being found out by Li Qiye, the worm let out an awkward laugh and said: “Boss, you should at least give me a little face. Even though those bald donkeys are ignoring me and letting me do as I please, I did rely on my own ability to come here. If I didn’t have such peerless abilities, how could I have come to this place?”

Little Autumn was right about this. Even though its secret arrival was due to the tacit consent of Spirit Mountain, it wouldn’t have been able to get here without its ability to travel.

“Alright, I know how amazing you are.” Li Qiye looked at it with one eye and said: “Why don’t you go in then?”

The raw would be — you have been using my name like a fox exploiting the tiger’s might. This does sound a little weird and too formal. Idioms are so common in China that it has become part of normal conversations, so they sound less contrived in many scenarios versus the concise English meaning.

Chapter 1118: Nihility Temple

“Ah—” Little Autumn forced out a laugh after hearing this. It arched out its chest to put on an awe-inspiring front: “Boss, this little one has never been afraid of anything. Meet god, slay god; meet devil, slay devil. However, in the nine heavens and ten earths, who is more impressive and mighty than Boss? Little Autumn was waiting here to see you knock the teeth out of those monks. Otherwise, I would have burned this place down to the ground long ago...”

The worm declared with great valor, as if it would do something like that. The girls could only smile at the obvious boasting.

“Alright, stop!” Li Qiye slapped it directly this time and teasingly scolded: “If you are really that strong, then I command you right now to bring that broken pot here.”

This really scared the worm into quivering several times. Its neck shrunk while it smiled awkwardly: “Oh, oh, Boss, I was just kidding, just kidding. Please don’t think I was serious. I am only a servant without any ability or courage. How can I be capable enough to go grab that pot?”

“This matter as grand as the heavens needs Boss to personally take care of it. In the nine worlds and myriad realms, no one but you can take that pot, not even Immortal Emperors.” He didn’t stop sweetening up Li Qiye.

Despite the incessant flattery, these words had their truth. If the

thing inside could be taken so easily, an Immortal Emperor would have done so already.

Li Qiye angrily glared at him and said: “Well stop uttering so much nonsense. Be good and stay here for me, stop causing trouble.”

Little Autumn’s skin was thick to the extreme. It cheerfully smiled without blushing at all. Of course, if Li Qiye told him to scold and curse at the base of the mountain, it would be happy to do so as if it was its unquestionable duty. However, to tell it to kill its way into the Nihility Temple? It knew its own strength very well.

It had suffered in the temple before. Without Li Qiye’s help, it would have been trapped inside until now, so it knew just how frightening the temple was. Because of this, after arriving, it could only curse at the base of the mountain while not daring to go in at all.

“All the monks in the temple, listen well! My Boss, the tyrant of the nine heavens, the person who will reign over this era, his venerableness has arrived today! This is an honor for your broken temple, so hurry and come to greet him...”

Little Autumn was playing the fox borrowing the tiger’s might. It stood below the mountain and boldly yelled at the temple with great arrogance. An uninformed person would think that it was a villain that recently came across some success.

“No one will think you are mute even if you speak less.” Li Qiye seemed to enjoy slapping the fella.

Little Autumn cheerfully laughed and said: “I am adding to Boss’s prestige, to let the old monks know that you are here.”

Li Qiye shook his head and smilingly scolded: “You are underestimating them too much. Even if they didn’t leave the temple, they would still know who is coming. Whether in this place or even in the entire Buddhist Funeral Plateau, how many things can elude their Buddhist eyes?”

Little Autumn couldn’t refute this claim. It obediently shut up since it knew how terrifying these monks from the past were. In fact, the monks here were even scarier than before.

Li Qiye glanced at the peak and solemnly reminded the girls: “Everyone, stay here. Do not take half a step onto the peak or it will bring about a disaster. Once you are in the process of being converted by the dharma, I won’t be able to shift my focus to save you.”

The girls glanced at each other. They had seen the horrifying power of conversion back at Spirit Mountain. If these monks were all retired Buddhist Lords, then one could easily imagine how mighty they would be. Their ability of conversion must be even stronger than Spirit Mountain’s.

“I’ll come along and open a path for you!” Bu Lianxiang quickly said after seeing Li Qiye wanting to go up.

In the group, she was the only one who was qualified to say this. She was the strongest, and even Godkings had to show her some sensibility.

However, Li Qiye denied her: “No, this isn’t a place that can be solved by force. It is actually the most unwise thing to do.” With that, Li Qiye seriously looked at her to say: “If force could be of use here, then there wouldn’t have been a need to wait until today, and it wouldn’t be my turn either since Immortal Emperor Fei Yang would have done it back then.”

“We will be facing ourselves, our greed and desires, not opponents.” Li Qiye smiled: “This requires me to fight by myself instead of borrowing external forces.”

She looked at him and eventually nodded her head: “Be careful. If it looks bad, retreat right away.”

Li Qiye smiled and went up the mountain. Little Autumn also shouted while watching: “Young Noble, be careful, never listen to that broken pot!”

Even though Little Autumn normally loved to brag and was a bit unreliable, it was more serious than anyone else when it came to big events. Plus, it knew what Li Qiye was about to face, so it became worried for him too.

Li Qiye didn’t look back or say anything. He slowly climbed up the mountain. There was no need for him to turn around or say

anything, the others just needed to wait for his triumphant return.

Little Autumn looked at the girls after Li Qiye entered the temple and said: “We should move back a little bit, it is about to begin.”

The girls followed the worm to a safe distance before stopping. At this moment, everyone was watching the temple, full of worries. Little Autumn was the same; it kept pacing back and forth.

Its goal was different from Li Qiye's. Li Qiye came here for the Space Scripture while it was only here to vent its anger. Back then, its master died in the Nihility Temple, which was why it was swearing right outside of it. Even though it knew that this had no effect on the temple, it did so to feel better.

Li Qiye entered the temple. There was no majestic gold and jade or carvings of dragons and phoenixes. The entire temple could be easily described by the word “ancient.”

One monk with his palms placed together came to lead the way for Li Qiye. His hair and eyebrows were all white while he himself had a friendly demeanor. Who would ever be able to imagine that such a monk used to be the Buddhist Lord of the Buddhist Kingdom with a matchless dharma?

The monk didn't ask Li Qiye anything. Just like Li Qiye said before, nothing could escape their eyes. Even without asking, they knew what he was here to do and what he wanted.

Li Qiye stood quietly in the main hall and looked around. There was nothing else here, not even a Buddhist statue. Nevertheless, he kept on gazing as if something extremely beautiful was attracting his eyes.

He stood there for a long time while the old monk waited as well with the same pose. He didn't bother Li Qiye by saying anything.

After a while, Li Qiye stopped looking and asked the old monk: "When will Di Shi come out with his true body?"

"Amitabha." The monk didn't have an oppressive Buddhist affinity or its power of conversion. He was extremely ordinary as he responded: "Buddha will come into this world one day."

These two had no need to show off their power. They looked incredibly normal because at their level the dharma was virtually the same and neither could convert the other. Forcefully doing so would only result in losing face — a waste of time.

Li Qiye laughed and spoke: "His coming will be the start of the great disaster."

"Amitabha. Break and rebuild. Without breaking, there can be no rebuilding. The new generation requires a new order as well as a new master." The monk replied without haste.

Li Qiye only smiled and let this go: "I hope for such a day as well. I'm not a pessimistic person, but I am not too optimistic about you

guys.”

“Amitabha.” The old monk let out one last chant with nothing more to say.

Li Qiye went into the inner hall with the monk still leading the way. They met other old monks with the same plainness. Of course, they were once Buddhist Lords as well with a boundless dharma capable of converting Godkings.

But now, all of these terrifying existences were willing to stay here as ordinary monks. There was an unfathomable mystery that outsiders couldn't imagine or know about.

Of course, only truly great people could be welcomed into the temple by another monk. Even Godkings wouldn't receive such a reception so easily.

Chapter 1119: Myriad Thoughts Pot

Eventually, he entered the innermost area of the temple. This place contained a pit that seemingly reached the entrance of hell. There was nothing else in this place outside of darkness.

The old monk slowly left while Li Qiye smiled.

“You came again.” In the dark pit, a strand of divine intent emerged. It was not a sound, only a pure intent without emotions, just like a universal law.

Li Qiye sat freely next to the pit. He gazed into its abyss and smiled: “Are you speaking for yourself or for Di Shi?”

“Are you looking for me or Di Shi?” This law-like divine intent from the bottom of the pit could be heard clearly.

“You are only a broken pot without life and emotions. Why do you like to act like this so much?” Li Qiye quipped.

“I am the Myriad Thoughts Pot; one thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil. My will can turn into anything, so who says that I do not have emotions?” This divine intent pulsed like a universal law.

Many people didn’t know what the pot was, but if they were to understand its true essence and origin, they would be jumping from horror.

The Myriad Thoughts Pot was one of the Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures. After millions of years, many people presumed that these treasures did not exist even though their legends had been passed down this whole time. No one had seen them before, hence the assumption that they were mere fabrications.

Li Qiye smilingly said: “Buddha or Devil, it doesn’t matter. Even if you have a strand of Buddhist intent, it is without emotion. Thus, you will forever be a broken pot.”

The thing in the deep pit did not become angry. It seemed to speak with its divine intent: “One thought will turn into myriad thoughts. If you leave your desires here, I will gain another thought.”

Li Qiye burst out in laughter and said: “It seems like I have to take back my words. Despite only being a broken pot without emotions, you do know about some other things, such as poisoning the mind and instigating the weak.”

“Don’t forget, I have become a devil, an emperor and a Buddha before. These are the desires left behind by the people in this world for me, they are not my desires.” The intent answered.

Li Qiye pondered for a moment and had to concede in the end with a nod: “This is indeed you. You are still you, a broken pot. My accusation that you were bewitching me is only based on the emotions and desires others left behind.”

It wouldn't be correct to say that no one had seen the pot's true form before. For example, Di Shi, the Imperial Lord, and the Devil Lord had seen it before. However, regardless of who they might be, they would never be able to escape after seeing the pot itself.

One thought to become Buddha and another to become Devil — these weren't empty words.

Those who had heard about the Myriad Thoughts Pot knew of a certain legend very well. It stated that after obtaining the pot, it could realize their dreams and desires no matter what they might be.

As for whether this was real or not, no one had ever found evidence or heard of it happening. Few were able to see the pot, let alone obtain it so that it would realize their dreams.

As one of the nine grand treasures, it was only a broken pot without life and emotions. However, after people left their desires here, they also left a mark on the pot. Everything changed from this.

The traces from these people and their emotions and desires seemed to come back to life. Because of this, the Buddhist Funeral Plateau and the Lesser Imperial Devil World came into existence.

The intent spoke: "You are truly an existence that has lived for millions of years, your perspective is different from the others."

Li Qiye smiled and continued: “Your emotions and thoughts have nothing to do with me. I came here hoping that you would move your butt since I want the item at the bottom.”

“You want the Space Scripture, right?” The divine intent emerged in the form of a law.

Li Qiye didn’t bother hiding anything. In fact, it was pointless to do so before the pot. It consisted of myriad thoughts. The moment the person had an idea in their mind, it was already clear before the pot.

Li Qiye leisurely replied: “Yes, I want the Space Scripture. You just need to move over so that I can take it.”

“You can’t open it.” The intent answered in a precise and clear manner.

Li Qiye smiled and took out an old box that contained three keys. The three keys were from the deal with the War God Temple back then. Mu Shen gave these keys that had been stored at the War God Temple for a long time to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye casually threw the three keys into the pit and said: “What do you think now? I know everything about this place. Back when time and space shifted, you came down to this place. This was not due to chance or because someone in the darkness wished for it. It was due to the destruction of a grand era! Someone hid the Space Scripture here as well, so I brought the keys to open it.”

“This has nothing to do with me.” The intent responded with clarity: “Just like you said, I am only a broken pot. The Nihility Temple is in charge of this place right now, so if you want it, you need their permission.”

“I know.” Li Qiye smiled: “As long as you move, leave the Nihility Temple to me.”

“Are you only thinking of the Space Scripture?” The intent revealed its thought.

He looked at the deepest location in the pit and confirmed: “I’m only here for the Space Scripture.”

“Don’t you want the Myriad Thoughts Pot?” The divine intent emitted a glittering law full of temptation for Li Qiye.

If Li Qiye was a miser, he wouldn’t be able to stop himself from palpitating with greed due to the irresistible temptation of this glittering golden light.

Li Qiye took a deep breath. His dao heart was as calm as the water at the bottom of a well. He laughed in response: “Is this your own thought, or is it the remnant desires speaking? Or is it Di Shi’s will?”

“Does it matter who is saying this?” The divine intent was like an enchanting magical spell. It was tempting Li Qiye like the whispers of a supreme beauty in his ears: “I am the Myriad Thoughts Pot, I

can fulfill all your dreams. Whether you want to become an Imperial King over the nine heavens or an everlasting immortal or even an omnipotent existence, I can realize all of your wishes...”

Li Qiye laughed and leisurely denied: “Such temptations are not effective on me. Myriad Thoughts Pot, you wanting to seduce me with this little snare... you really are looking down on me.”

He glanced into the depths and continued: “Even the broken pot itself cannot tempt me. I will fulfill my own dreams, there’s no need for the pot to do so. If I have to rely on it, then what will I be in the end? Only a puppet.”

“You think the pot will manipulate you? It is only a broken pot, it won’t manipulate everything.” The divine intent answered like the clear sound of a bell: “You have seen Di Shi and the Devil Lord. They have never been manipulated, or rather, [the thing being manipulated was the pot, not them.](#)”

“I know that full well.” Li Qiye laughed in response: “The pot itself cannot manipulate everything. However, it can control desires. The moment a person’s desires reach a certain degree, they will no longer be able to distinguish themselves from their desires. This is why these realms exist!”

“The pot didn’t turn a world into the plateau and the lesser world.” Li Qiye slowly went on: “The thing that created this place was the ambition of many people.”

“Then what are you afraid of?” The divine intent rose again.

“Because I have an ambition that nothing can contain!” Li Qiye pointed at his heart: “I will hold my ambition and hopes in my heart. If I let them out, the result will not be something as simple as the Buddhist Funeral Plateau!”

This whole part is a bit confusing to me. I don't know if the divine intent is the pot speaking or not. At one point, it claimed to be the pot, but in this passage, it is referring to the pot as a separate entity. But then again, Li Qiye was questioning who was speaking earlier, so maybe they are different yet the same.

Chapter 1120: A Gambling Bout

The pit had no reaction and the divine intent didn't emerge again to answer Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smiled and instead added: "Myriad Thoughts Pot, countless people covet you. Even true immortals go crazy because of you, but for me, you are only a broken pot that will bring about endless troubles."

"You truly don't want it?" The divine intent emerged again with the same appearance of a universal law as before.

Li Qiye smilingly answered: "To tell the truth, it would be a lie to say that I am not tempted by the Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures. As one of them, the pot is indeed something that makes the heart go wild. However, I do not need it. Even without it, I can still fulfill my dreams."

The Myriad Thoughts Pot was something everyone would want. Even Immortal Emperors were no exceptions. If immortals existed in this world, they would crave for the pot as well. Li Qiye felt the same way about the heavenly treasures.

However, he didn't want the pot as it would bring about too much trouble. For generations now, many had taken possession of the pot, but ultimately, those who had it in their hands all met bad ends.

This was not to say that the pot would bring about nightmares.

On the contrary, it could give someone everything, even their wildest dreams and needs. Alas, possessing it meant that their desires would escalate without bounds until they lost control. In the end, they wouldn't be able to tell whether they were in charge of their desires or the other way around.

In the very distant past, a forgotten age that couldn't be traced, more than just one person had obtained the Myriad Thoughts Pot. None of them were ordinary people; all were supreme and brilliant for generations.

However, this didn't matter. None of them could control their desires after obtaining the pot. Eventually, they brought about their own unimaginable doom.

And there's no need to speak about the ones further in the past, Di Shi was the most recent example. In the endless river of time, few knew about Di Shi. Many had never even heard of this name.

However, Di Shi was absolutely as great as any Immortal Emperor and was comparable to even someone like Immortal Emperor Fei.

But in that old era, after Di Shi obtained the Myriad Thoughts Pot, [the Buddhist Funeral Plateau came about!](#)

Li Qiye eventually stared and smiled at the pit: "I'll come back again to take the Space Scripture. Let's go with that."

He chuckled after seeing a lack of response from the pit and stood up to leave.

Li Qiye went back to the main hall. The old monk placed his palms together to greet him and asked: “Benefactor still wants to have a scripture debate?”

“That’s right.” Li Qiye smiled: “I’m bored of fighting and killing. Aren’t you monks known for your supreme dharma? Very well, I will take you down using the dharma.”

“Benefactors want to make a bet then?” The old monk was not angry at Li Qiye’s impolite words. He maintained his palm gesture while still speaking respectfully.

Li Qiye looked at him and said: “Old monk, don’t try to dig a pit for me to jump into. I’m not here this time to bet against you guys.”

“The Nihility Temple always has wagering available.” The old monk revealed a kind expression. Anyone would feel comfortable in his presence.

“Wager your sister!” Li Qiye coldly glared at him: “Only the careless would jump into your trap! I am not here to bet. I only want the Space Scripture, not the Myriad Thoughts Pot!”

“Benefactor used to be so ambitious back then...” The old monk still gave off the same amicable feel. Those who were unknowing

would actually consider him as a loved one.

“Ambitious your sister!” Li Qiye coldly retorted: “Back then, your grandpa didn’t understand the intricacies and you bald donkeys fooled me. Luckily, I realized in time or else I would have truly fallen into the trap.”

“Benefactor’s remark is incorrect.” The monk said: “Those not in the same household won’t enter the same door. Benefactor is predestined to be with the Nihility Temple, it is fated by the heavens...”

“Okay, there’s no need to act like a swindler before me. I can also become a Buddha with one word. Everyone is on the same level, so you don’t need to speak such lies.” Li Qiye interrupted the old monk: “I only want the Space Scripture.”

The monk calmly asked: “Benefactor does not want the Myriad Thoughts Pot?”

Such ordinary words were full of a fatal temptation, the most lethal enticement in this world.

Not wanting the Myriad Thoughts Pot? Anyone would grow angry upon being asked this question. This was one of the nine grand treasures, things that even Immortal Emperors couldn’t resist!

Li Qiye looked at him with disdain and said: “Monk, this is what

you said to fool Immortal Emperor Hao Hai back then. These words were spoken to trick Immortal Emperor Fei Yang as well.”

“Benefactor is mistaken again.” The old monk spoke kindly: “The Nihility Temple always treats others with sincerity. We clearly explained the dangers inside without hiding anything. A Buddhist practitioner does not lie, Benefactor should be aware of this.”

Li Qiye answered: “You are right about that. Immortal Emperor Fei Yang was as treacherous as a ghost. He was capable of deceiving others into drinking foot-washing water while others would find it prohibitively difficult to swindle him. Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was not a fool either, but he was too confident and ultimately fell into your trap. This was why he never entered the plateau again for the rest of his life.”

Immortal Emperor Fei Yang was the first to come here with the intention of obtaining the Myriad Thoughts Pot. However, he was different from the other emperors. During his youth, he was extremely cunning and tricked many people down to their underwear before taking that from them as well.

The emperor realized the trickery of the temple very quickly and reacted in time. He understood the mysteries within and instead tricked his opponents and received a stone Buddha from it.

In contrast, Immortal Emperor Hao Hai whom people considered to be even more heaven-defying was tricked and suffered a big loss. Moreover, he could only keep this anger to himself, he never told any outsiders about it.

This emperor was truly stunning. Some people once listed him among the top ten strongest Immortal Emperors. He had been to the World Tree before and obtained one of the miracles there. Moreover, there was a rumor that he obtained part of the Space Scripture.

Among the old emperors, most thought that even though Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was still weaker than Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, he was definitely more brilliant than Immortal Emperor Fei Yang.

During his visit, he didn't only want the legendary Space Scripture, he desired the Myriad Thoughts Pot as well. After all, since time eternal, no emperor had been known to have obtained any of the nine heavenly treasures.

If he could obtain the pot, then perhaps he would become the prime emperor and surpass Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng.

He was influenced by this greed as well as his absolute confidence in himself. In fact, it was understandable that he was so complacent. After all, an invincible emperor could illuminate many generations.

But who would have thought that this invincible emperor actually willingly fell into a trap? Despite losing the gamble, he still forcefully left and the Nihilism Temple couldn't do anything to him. Unfortunately, this left a mental scar in his mind for the rest of his life; he never dared to set foot onto the plateau again.

“Goodness, goodness.” The monk responded.

“Myriad Thoughts Pot.” Li Qiye chuckled and said: “There’s no need for this gamble. It is not a wager against you monks, it is a competition against oneself! Immortal Emperor Hao Hai didn’t understand this back then, so he lost to himself in the end.”

The old monk only smiled and didn’t say anything. They would not reveal this intricacy, the person would need to rely on themselves to understand it. Only those who realized this would be able to escape, such as Immortal Emperor Fei Yang.

“Okay, I will debate the Nihility Scripture with you lot, who will come first?” Li Qiye sat in the main hall and spoke leisurely: “I trust that you all have prepared well.”

The old monk sat down in the main hall as well and kindly responded: “Benefactor is able to become Buddha with one thought, but this little monk will boldly overestimate my own abilities to debate against you.”

“You monks have finally changed the opponent for me.” Li Qiye laughed while looking at the old monk: “After the big commotion last time, all of you are afraid that I have understood your strategy, so now, they are changing it to having you start instead.”

“Goodness, goodness.” The old monk didn’t say anything else besides chanting with his palms placed together.

“Whatever, I can handle anyone who comes out.” Li Qiye said: “Same rules as before. If I win, you must let me take the Space Scripture. If I lose, then I will stay behind. If there’s a tie, everyone can just leave.”

This part is abrupt and confusing in both versions. I’m not sure of the implications without further context and lore.

Chapter 1121: Buddhist Debate

“Humm—” Waves of Buddhist lights radiated from the old monk. Each of the rays seemed to be their own Buddhist World with billions of worshippers and monks...

The three thousand worlds sang Buddhist songs. Each brilliant wisp eventually turned into individual profound dharmic beliefs.

These lights that could convert billions of existences represented different Buddhist paths.

A Buddhist wheel rose from behind the old monk's head. It could carry the three thousand worlds. A golden lotus emerged beneath him and raised his body...

This monk no longer looked ordinary like before. He had become a Buddhist Lord capable of converting deities with just one phrase.

A Buddhist light also emanated from Li Qiye. He shouldered the entire universe as the world rotated around him. Both sacred Buddhas and deities had to prostrate before him. His words became the only laws in this world while his dharma became the universal order.

In the nine heavens and ten earths, only his dharma was allowed to exist for eternity. All the other laws were baseless and false before its might; they weren't worth mentioning and were no longer even allowed to exist.

At this time, the monk formed a mudra and spewed out a mantra: “Where are you from?”

Li Qiye smiled while forming a lotus mudra with his hand. He responded with the most orthodox Buddhist speech: “From the heavens.”

“What is the will of the heavens?” The monk’s mudra continued with Buddhist hymns engulfing the three thousand worlds in an awe-inspiring manner. Anyone would kneel before him and his non-dispersing Buddhist aura for an eternity.

“One cannot measure the heavenly providence.” A lotus flower blossomed in Li Qiye’s palm that then began to wither into nothingness.

However, its withering brought about a new lotus bud and the creation of a new world.

In this way, people saw the process of destruction and rebirth in a continuous and never-ending cycle.

“How vast is the heavens?” The monk asked once more. His words resembled a deluge of heavenly flowers, like the coming of a fairy from the heavens or the reincarnation of a golden dragon.

Li Qiye revealed a smile full of mercy. It was capable of shielding the entire era and converting all the creatures within as well as

washing away the darkness of the world. He maintained this eternal smile and answered: “Impossible to explain, futile to disclose. Borrow my eye of wisdom so you can see it clearly.”

The monk smiled. A Buddhist eye shot out a spiritual light. At this second, this eye allowed him to see the great momentum of all generations. It illuminated the eras and gauged the nine heavens above and hell below. He eventually said: “I cannot see the heavens even with the eye of wisdom!”

“The heavens exist before the eye of wisdom!” Li Qiye answered. The soul swayed while the sun and moon became resplendent. The Yin and Yang turned chaotic. In front of them was only one world and one blue sky... These visions emerged before their eyes.

While Li Qiye was debating against the old monk, Li Shuangyan and the others saw an unbelievable scene at the base of the mountain. They saw the Nihility Temple suddenly disappear as a vast Buddhist sea took its place.

A supreme Buddha sat in this vast sea and a huge lotus flower bloomed beneath him. He sat there with his eyes closed and a motionless mouth...

Even though the supreme Buddha did not speak or take action, the moment anyone saw his Buddhist light, they would feel the urge to worship him and listen to his scripture on their knees.

Mei Suyao and the girls were experienced. With discolored faces, they immediately protected their dao hearts while using their

fastest speed to run away from the mountain.

“Shit! After so many years, this damned place didn’t weaken at all and instead actually became more and more powerful. This is simply inconceivable.” Little Autumn was aghast in the face of this scene and kept on cursing.

The girls had serious expressions. Those with shallow dao hearts would have been converted already. Such a scene would jolt just about anyone.

Mei Suyao knew more than the other girls. She glanced at the Buddha with its eyes closed and murmured: “What is that, is that the legendary Di Shi?”

“No, I’m afraid not.” Little Autumn shook its head: “This might be the ambition of the broken pot. When someone leaves their desires behind for the pot, they would be amplified to no end. This must be Di Shi’s thought to become Buddha back then!”

Little Autumn took out a large piece of metal. It was only a scrap without any value. It then threw it into the Buddhist sea.

The unthinkable happened. The piece of metal continued to break apart while expelling its impurities. Eventually, this large piece of scrap turned into a small refined metal full of Buddhist light.

A while later, an even more inconceivable transformation

occurred. It turned into a small lad, or rather, a novice monk. It prostrated before the lotus flower of the Buddha and began to chant scriptures. The light on its body became increasingly bright.

Everyone was shocked to see this scene. The girls took deep breaths of disbelief. If outsiders were here, they would be astonished as well.

A piece of metal actually turned into a monk in such a short period of time. Perhaps people would attribute this to a type of illusion.

“Is this a demonization?” Bai Jianzhen’s eyes were wide open. She felt incredulous while looking at this myth-like event.

One must know that even if a piece of metal was lucky, it would require countless years and baptisms before becoming a demon. For anything that wanted to become a demon with its own sentience, they had to undergo years of refinement before reaching the final step.

But now, this metal became a person in almost no time at all. This broke everyone’s common sense.

Li Shuangyan turned pale and murmured: “This power of conversion is too terrifying.”

“It is not the power of conversion.” Bu Lianxiang gazed at the sea and slowly explained: “There is something in there, something

unimaginable. It has the most terrifying power in this world.”

She was referring to the Myriad Thoughts Pot. It had an unimaginable power and no one knew just how mighty it was.

“It’s that broken pot.” Little Autumn swallowed a mouthful of saliva. Its old master wanted to seize the pot and had to pay with his life.

It could only stand there filled with greed since it didn’t dare to mess around. Plus, even if it wanted to seize the pot, it knew full well that this was an impossible endeavor.

Not to mention the fact that it had to compete with the pot first, it would also have to flip over the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. Such a thing couldn’t be done by even Immortal Emperors.

“Truly horrifying.” Mei Suyao commented: “No wonder why Immortal Emperor Hao Hai never wanted to enter the plateau again. So he wasn’t only afraid of Spirit Mountain, it was the entire plateau.”

She understood why such an invincible being chose to stay away from the plateau completely.

This scene lasted for a while before the Buddhist light slowly dispersed along with the sea and the gigantic Buddha.

The girls held their breaths. They wanted to go up the mountain

since they didn't know the result of the debate.

Eventually, Li Qiye showed up at the entrance of the Nihility Temple.

The girls were moved to see him and their anxious minds were finally relieved.

“Success!” Little Autumn's voice was shaking from excitement: “He really did it, he finally defeated those bald donkeys!”

Li Qiye slowly went down the mountain while the ecstatic group immediately rushed forward and gathered around him.

At this moment, his body was quivering and he couldn't stand straight. The girls were quite frightened and quickly went to hold him.

“Young Noble, how are you?” Chen Baojiao was quite worried after seeing Li Qiye's pale face and extreme fatigue.

“It's fine, help me sit down.” Li Qiye struggled to take a deep breath as he gasped in between.

The girls helped him sit down with haste while Bu Lianxiang channeled a pure power of the grand dao into his body. This slowly restored his blood energy as his face turned pink again.

“Are, are you alright?” Even Bai Jianzhen was worried. It was rare to see Li Qiye in such a sorry state.

Even if they couldn’t watch the debate, they could imagine the perils within.

“I’m actually better off.” Li Qiye smilingly said: “You all should go and see that old monk. He probably can’t even stand right now. He’ll probably have to stay in bed for some years.”

“Hahahahaha! He still has a way to go before competing with me!” Li Qiye burst out into laughter. He finally won in the scripture debate against the Nihility Temple. No wonder why he was so excited.

Chapter 1122: Leaving

“Don’t get too excited, take a deep breath first.” Bu Lianxiang spoke in a serious manner after Li Qiye’s shout. She continued to pour the purest dao force into Li Qiye’s body.

Li Qiye took a deep breath and calmed his emotions. The thing that excited him the most was not obtaining the Space Scripture but rather defeating the monks in the temple.

Of course, winning using force was not worthy of this much excitement. But now, he used his dharma to defeat the monks there. Moreover, it was a test on the Nihility Scripture, the thing these monks understood the most.

With the help of Bu Lianxiang’s dao force, Li Qiye recovered quite quickly.

“Hehehe, Boss, do you have it right now?” Little Autumn excitedly stared at him.

Li Qiye looked back and laughed: “Of course! Since I beat those monks, the Space Scripture is naturally in my hands now.”

“The Space Scripture?” Bai Jianzhen gasped. He didn’t specify what he was after before coming here to challenge the monks. But now, she was quite shocked to hear this: “One of the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures in the legends?”

“Yes, that’s it.” Li Qiye nodded.

The girls glanced at each other. Bai Jianzhen was the most astounded. The Space Scripture, a mythical artifact that the world thought didn’t exist.

The nine scriptures were desired by even Immortal Emperors, but today, Li Qiye had actually obtained one of these legendary scriptures.

She murmured: “Legend states that Immortal Emperor Hao Hai had obtained the Space Scripture in the past as well.”

This was her misunderstanding. Because the emperor had been here before, she assumed that the Space Scripture was left behind by him.

“To be exact, he only obtained a very small portion of the scripture, just one chapter.” Li Qiye smilingly said: “The Space Scripture in the Nihility Temple has nothing to do with him.”

In fact, the emperor actually wanted the Space Scripture after coming to the Nihility Temple back then. Alas, he failed the gamble.

“Heh, no one has seen the real Space Scripture for millions of years now.” Little Autumn smirked and showed off its knowledge: “When the young Immortal Emperor Hao Hai climbed up the World Tree back then, he found a scroll left behind by the

forefathers that contained techniques from the Space Scripture.”

“As for the Space Scripture in the Nihility Temple, it has an even greater origin since it was given birth by the natural order. It is a supreme item in this world.” The worm went on: “Of course, when we say that no one has ever seen it before, we’re talking about the Desolate Era until now. In fact, back in the untraceable eras, a supreme existence had found it before and cultivated it to an unfathomable level. Otherwise, there would be no Lesser Imperial Devil World, this was a place created out of thin air...” Little Autumn was very knowledgeable about the scripture. The reason why it knew so much was due to its master wanting the book back then. As a True God, he challenged the Nihility Temple, but unfortunately, it ended in his demise.

Chen Baojiao curiously asked: “The scripture has been at the Nihility Temple for so long, has no one else tried to cultivate it?”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “To the monks of Nihility Temple and even the entire plateau, merit laws and techniques, including the Space Scripture, are not important to them. These things do not matter, they only need Buddha in their hearts.”

“With Buddha in their hearts, they will have everything.” Li Qiye continued on: “They are eternal in this sense. It is a belief to the level that nothing else is worth caring about.”

“The dharma in the Buddhist Funeral Plateau is a bewitching spell, one might even call it an evil art.” The quiet Bai Jianzhen added. It seems that she had quite a negative opinion towards the dharma of the plateau.

Li Qiye only smiled and didn't comment in response.

“Hehehe, Boss, what about the broken pot? Did you get it as well?” Little Autumn looked up and down at Li Qiye and grinned.

Li Qiye looked at it with one eye and said: “If I obtained that pot, would you still be standing here right now? The entire plateau would be in chaos right now if that was the case.”

“That's true.” The worm scratched its head and said: “Aizz, what a shame, leaving that supreme pot to those bald donkeys.”

Li Qiye coldly stared at it in response: “Even if you got your hands on the pot, could you handle it? You'll go crazy in less than three days.”

“Well...” The worm rubbed its palms together in embarrassment. It knew Li Qiye was speaking the truth.

Not anyone could withstand the pot. Without sufficient willpower, its master would go crazy right away. Since time eternal, only incredible existences like Di Shi could handle the power of the pot as well as control it.

“What is this broken pot you two are talking about?” Li Shuangyan was curious. She heard them talk about it many times, but Li Qiye never revealed what the pot was.

Li Qiye said insipidly: “Myriad Thoughts Pot.”

“Myriad Thoughts Pot!” Mei Suyao was shaken while murmuring: “The legend is true. The plateau truly hides one of the Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures!”

Bai Jianzhen’s expression changed: “I thought they didn’t exist...”

Her view was the same as many others.

Li Qiye smiled a little: “How can there be smoke without fire? Many things become legends for a reason.”

The girls couldn’t help but look at the Nihility Temple again. Who would have thought that such a humble-looking temple was actually hiding the Myriad Thoughts Pot?

Bai Jianzhen realized something and muttered to herself: “So Immortal Emperor Hao Hai came here for the Myriad Thoughts Pot...”

Li Qiye shook his head and said: “Such a thing does not come so easily, even for Immortal Emperors. Plus, obtaining it is not necessarily a good thing. There are many treasures in this world, not everyone can get something that is beneficial.”

The girls were quiet. The nine heavenly treasures were not things they dared to dream about.

“Hehehe, Boss, since you’ve obtained the Space Scripture, will you, hehehe, teach me a couple moves?” Little Autumn was drooling at this moment.

Li Qiye glared at it and said: “Don’t worry, I will teach you a couple moves, but don’t disappoint me. If you don’t try harder to strengthen your bloodline, you better watch yourself or I’ll banish you for an eternity.”

As a Space Crossing Worm, Little Autumn had a very rare bloodline. It had an unparalleled advantage regarding spatial comprehension. In other words, it was born as a genius with regards to space.

However, it loved to play around and couldn’t truly tap into its natural bloodline. It wasn’t until after they took a trip to the World Tree that its bloodline finally leaped forward.

“Hehehe, Boss, don’t you worry. Just say the word and I will train day and night to not let you down. In just a few years, I will become the master of space...” Little Autumn patted its chest and voiced its promise.

Li Qiye only glanced at it briefly before ordering: “Come, we’ll take our leave.”

“Boss, wait for me!” Little Autumn quickly chased right after him like a cute puppy.

Li Qiye didn't only want to leave the Nihility Temple, he also wanted to leave the lesser world. He did everything he wanted to do here, so he no longer sought anything else.

Before leaving, he looked back at the lesser world one last time.

“Goodbye, Lesser Imperial Devil World. In the future, you shall be no more.” Li Qiye sighed.

Such words startled the girls. Chen Baojiao had to ask: “Why do you say that the lesser world won't exist anymore?”

“In this generation, the lesser world will turn into ashes.” Li Qiye slowly answered.

“That monk is really going to take action?” Bu Lianxiang knew more than the rest and was quite surprised as well.

Li Qiye gently nodded and stared at her: “Yes, so if the remnants of your Middle Continent leaves now, there is still a chance.”

“Once one steps into the plateau, one will forever be a monk.” Bu Lianxiang said: “It's not like you don't know this.”

Li Qiye sighed again. He naturally understood this logic.

“What about the dark cultivators and imperial soldiers who are

still here?” Li Shuangyan murmured while looking at the lesser world.

“Into ashes.” Li Qiye gently sighed. He didn’t want to stay here any longer and turned away to leave.

Chapter 1123: Space Scripture

Li Qiye and everyone else went back to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau and settled in at the Buddhist City. For Li Qiye, he had fulfilled everything he wanted to do during this trip and could leave whenever.

He was staying behind in order to witness the ascension of the Eternal River School's ancestor and to lend the person a hand if necessary. After all, Mei Suyao was following him, so she wasn't considered a stranger.

Ever since the inception of the sect, the river school had produced many supreme geniuses. Among them, quite a few had reached the Godking realm.

However, for cultivators, including those at the Godking level, there was something that they could never escape and lacked the power to face — death.

After millions of years, how many people who have lived for a long time actually faced death with peace and calmness? This was the case for the brilliant ancestors from the Eternal River School as well. They couldn't openly face their impending demise, so quite a few of them entered Spirit Mountain to become sacred monks in search of everlasting life.

With the grinding of time, their dharma eventually reached a certain level, allowing them to ascend to the Buddhist Kingdom.

According to the beliefs in the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, once the sacred monks' dharma reached this level, they would ascend and become a true Buddha with eternal life.

The day for ascension drew near, so Li Qiye's group chose to stay behind. Moreover, the girls had never seen an ascension before, so this would broaden their horizons.

Inside his chamber at the Buddhist City, Li Qiye used the pentagate to seal his room and opened a box.

This ancient box was matchless and had weathered countless years. He carefully looked at this box; it was seamless without any gaps and looked just like a big rock.

The only thing that could give others clues was the round dent in the box. It didn't look like it was engraved but rather formed by nature. The round dent and the box had always been one.

After seeing this round dent, Li Qiye smiled and said: "Man proposes but the heavens disposes. Without planning, how can there ever be success?"

With that, Li Qiye took out a treasure disk. It was the Fragmented Realm Spatial Disk. This was the supreme treasure of the Nantian Clan. He took it back then from Young King Nantian.

This was one of the keys to obtaining the scripture. It required the Myriad Thoughts Pot to move as well as the other three keys

itself. This disk was necessary to open the box for the Space Scripture inside.

Later generations believed that the disk was created by Immortal Emperor Fei Yang, but the truth was not so. This disk had been passed down from an archaic age.

In fact, when Immortal Emperor Fei Yang entered the Nihility Temple, he also wanted to confirm the existence of the Space Scripture. Alas, he didn't have the three keys, so all was in vain. He had to retreat and come up with a second plan, which was to trick a stone Buddha from the temple.

“Clang—” After placing the disk into the round dent, a gentle click came about. The stone box actually broke open with plumes of light shooting out.

Li Qiye was happy to see this familiar light. Only the nine heavenly scriptures would emit such a light. This was the Space Scripture without a doubt.

It emerged before Li Qiye with a sacred light. Its glow made Li Qiye uncontrollably excited.

He had three out of the nine right now: the Space Scripture, the Physique Scripture, and the Death Scripture. In the future, perhaps it wouldn't be impossible for him to gather all nine.

The grand beginning gave birth to the Nine Words, the Nine

Words created the Nine Treasures, and from the Nine Treasures came the Nine Scriptures! This was an irresistible scripture.

Li Qiye opened it and found the writings inside to be profound to an inconceivable level.

He was quickly immersed in an unimaginable world while given the ability to see through its constructs.

He saw straight into the profundities of the grand dao. The most mysterious aspects of the Space Scripture presented themselves, causing him to feel intoxicated.

Other people, including peerless geniuses or even Mei Suyao with her immortal bone, wouldn't be able to understand the scripture in a short period of time, let alone grasping its fundamentals.

Peerless geniuses would require centuries or even a millennium to understand a scripture on the level of the nine heavenly scriptures. However, it wasn't too difficult for Li Qiye to do so. He had spent millions of years researching the nine heavenly scriptures and treasures.

He had even obtained a few chapters from the Space Scripture before along the long years. Of course, these chapters were incomplete and were far lesser than the real scripture.

Nevertheless, with so much past research, he had quite a deep understanding of the Space Scripture. So today, with the scripture

in his hands and actively unraveling its mysteries, he was a fish in water or a tiger with wings. This feeling couldn't be described with words.

He was thirsty for knowledge, a cotton boll absorbing the misty dew from the Space Scripture. He wished to grasp all of its mysticisms.

In the next several days, he was lost in its wonders and locked himself inside his room.

The girls knew that he was studying the Space Scripture, so they didn't bother him.

Meanwhile, the Buddhist affinity grew increasingly stronger at Spirit Mountain. Buddhist lights emerged in an uprising manner as well.

Eventually, this light could illuminate the entire plateau. Even those who had never seen the world before understood that something big was going on.

“The ascension is about to take place.” Someone knew what was about to happen after seeing the light cover the plateau.

Mei Suyao, in particular, paid great attention to the changes at Spirit Mountain because the person ascending this time was her ancestor. The moment the ancestor ascended, one would be able to see the elucidation culminated from everything the ancestor had

learned in their life.

This elucidation had a significant meaning to the Eternal River School, so Mei Suyao must take it. She wouldn't want other treasures, but the elucidation must be hers for the sake of her school. Her present self didn't require it, but the other disciples were in dire need of this new source of knowledge.

"I wonder which ancestor from your sect will ascend." Chen Baojiao was very curious about this ordeal as well. She had only heard about it but had never seen it with her own eyes.

"I don't know the details." Mei Suyao gently shook her head: "The elders could only guess that one of our ancestors is about to ascend, but not which one in particular. We can only find out on the day itself. I heard the elders said that some of our ancestors at Spirit Mountain have incredible attainments on the dharma."

The Eternal River School, as a sect with three emperors, had never lacked talents. A conservative estimate listed at least ten big shots from the school entering Spirit Mountain. The weaker ones were of the protector level while the strong ones were Godkings.

"Clang—" While many were still curious about the ascending ancestor, a heavy roar came about. It was not overly loud, but it seemed that everyone at the plateau could hear it.

"The gate to Nalanda is opening." Someone shouted, prompting many to immediately look over to Spirit Mountain.

Sure enough, the gate was indeed opening today. It was as deep as an ocean with no end in sight. It seemed that beyond the Buddhist gate was a boundless world capable of accommodating the nine heavens.

“Buzz!” Many people were startled to watch this opening. Shortly afterward, a light suddenly descended from the sky. Another Buddhist portal emerged in the sky above Nalanda.

This portal gave the illusion that by walking through it, one could cross the entire world and time itself.

The torrential Buddhist light cloaked an area with chanting monks.

“Buddhist Kingdom, the Buddhist Kingdom in the legends!” Many were astonished to see the kingdom on the other side of the portal. A big shot intensely stared at it in order to peep at the mysticisms inside.

The crowd quickly held their breaths. Very few had ever seen the Buddhist Kingdom. For millions of years, no one had ever been able to enter this kingdom that granted immortality outside of ascending sacred monks.

And so, the portal in the sky and the kingdom beyond it was full of temptation for many people. In a flash, several powerful figures shot up. They wanted to soar into the Buddhist Kingdom.

Chapter 1124: Shaking The Plateau

“Amitabha, merciful Buddha.” These powerful cultivators forcefully rushing into the portal were engulfed in a mighty and holy Buddhist voice: “Return from whence you came. Only the destined ones are allowed entry to this door.”

“Boom!” This voice stopped and pushed away the powerful attacking figures all the way out of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.

After seeing this scene, many people trembled with fear. No one else tried to rush in any longer. One could imagine just how powerful the existences were inside the Buddhist Kingdom after seeing the quick dispatch of the other big shots. They didn’t even have the strength to fight back while being expelled from the plateau.

“The Buddhist Kingdom has several high Buddhas outside of the Buddhist Lord.” A person murmured to himself while staring at the portal in the sky.

“Squeak!” Mei Suyao and the other girls were attracted by the portal as well, but they heard the opening of a door and immediately turned back to see Li Qiye leaving his room.

The girls noticed that Li Qiye had a very strange expression at this moment. It was indescribable; in short, Li Shuangyan, who had followed him the longest, had never seen this expression before.

She didn't know what this demeanor represented and asked: "Young Noble?"

Seeing him like this made all of them feel uneasy.

"Stay here." Li Qiye glanced at the portal in the sky and issued an order before stepping into the air.

"Buzz." A path leading straight to the portal above the Nalanda Temple was paved beneath his feet.

"What's going on?" The girls were completely confused to see Li Qiye heading in that direction.

Mei Suyao murmured: "Something big is about to happen. A single misstep will lead to destruction." She was lost as well, but she knew the gravity of the situation. In the past, she had invited him to go to Nalanda, to the Buddhist Kingdom, but he said no right away. Yet at this moment, he was going by himself.

"Look over there, it's Fiercest!" A sharp-eyed fella noticed Li Qiye rising into the air over yonder.

Today, the title Fiercest deterred the entire world. All the powerful existences in the Mortal Emperor World were quite wary of him. He killed the Mortal King, defeated Zhan Shi and Heavenly Emperor Lin as well as slew Jikong Wudi. Was there any youth who still dared to compete with him?

“What is he doing? Does he want to seize the Buddhist fortune at the Buddhist Kingdom?” Someone muttered to themselves while watching things play out.

A human expert excitedly claimed: “Fiercest is truly too bullish. He looks like he wants to challenge the entire plateau.”

At this moment, a large group wanted to see Fiercest going against the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. They yearned for a miracle where Fiercest defeated the plateau.

In an instant, Li Qiye entered Spirit Mountain and was only a short distance from Nalanda.

“Benefactor, please return.” While he was only one step away, the image of the Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva appeared in the temple alongside a chant capable of converting the world itself.

“Radiant Bodhisattva.” People were quite wary of this person. Even stronger cultivators didn’t dare to come close.

“Since I am now here, all of you have two options.” Li Qiye glanced at the Buddhist portal ahead with a glare that pierced into the depths of the Buddhist Kingdom: “Either open the portal and let me in or I will smash this portal apart and flip over this land.”

His attitude was quite firm at this moment, leaving no room for negotiation. Each word carried a resounding and forceful momentum.

“Domineering enough.” Both cultivators from the human race and the other races were lost in admiration. For many generations now, not too many people dared to challenge the plateau in such an arrogant manner.

“What is going on?” Mei Suyao and the girls became more perplexed as the event unraveled. Mei Suyao was especially confused because Li Qiye didn’t seem to care about the Buddhist Kingdom before.

But now, he was trying to go there with an unshakable determination. Nothing could hinder his path.

After staying near him for so long, the girls understood that their Young Noble was playing for real this time. Today, if anyone tried to stop him, he would surely slay them all and ruthlessly wash the plateau with blood!

“Amitabha, goodness, goodness.” Radiant Bodhisattva seemed to know that he couldn’t change Li Qiye’s mind and disappeared.

Li Qiye looked at the portal and boldly uttered: “Open the portal now or I will smash apart your Nalanda Temple.”

The tone was flat, yet it carried a cold and ruthless intent filled with the urge to kill. Each word clearly displayed his determination.

“Amitabha—” A loud chant came from Nalanda. This chant could convert the world while all the monks in the plateau prostrated.

“You’re courting death!” With a cold aura, Li Qiye directly stomped towards the portal. He wanted to forcefully climb to the kingdom.

“Merciful Buddha.” The chant soared to the sky from the Nalanda Temple. A Buddhist light engulfed the nine heavens as one Buddha emerged after another. They formed a mudra of the word “Myriad” and slammed it down to suppress Li Qiye.

“Merciful Buddha!” All the monks at the plateau were prostrating. This surging Buddhist aura in the air made the world lose its colors.

Li Qiye’s eyes turned cold. He shouted and summoned the Heaven Sealing Pentagate. His two hands lit up as he initiated an attack.

“Boom!” The pentagate shattered the sky and destroyed all things. Five eternal creatures jumped out of the gate — Sun Consuming Bird, Moon Eating Wolf, Star Devouring Ant, Heaven Shrouding Eagle, and Earth Sealing Rat!

All inhabitants of this world quivered after these five beasts rushed out. Everything was insignificant and wretched before them — not enough to reach the apex. They crushed the sky and immediately turned into five separate grand dao.

“Boom!” The five grand dao combined to turn into an eternal corridor. This was a temporal corridor that could stop everything, including the erosion of time.

“Boom!” The Buddhist word “Myriad” that could suppress divine beings stopped before this long corridor. It couldn’t move half a step closer.

Pentadao Timeless Seal — this was the ultimate attack of the pentagate. Under this eternal seal, even deities and Buddhas would have to halt their advance.

“Is that a Heavenly Annihilation?” After sensing this ultimate attack, even cultivators millions of miles away trembled. Some paled and lost their minds.

Li Qiye crazily roared: “Open for me!” The thirteen palaces leaped into the sky. It immediately turned into a vast expanse. No one knew if the current or future Li Qiye would come out of this new world.

Nirvana Heavens! At this time, Li Qiye was holding a green lamp with a flickering black flame within.

“Hum—” The three vessels all emerged. With a loud explosion, a boundless amount of blood, life, and creation energy all rushed forward to stop the power of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.

Even the plateau appeared to be insignificant in the face of this

power.

“Anyone who tries to stop me today will die, whether they be Amitabha or Di Shi!” Li Qiye roared. The green lamp opened and the dark flame immediately poured out into the sky.

The sky was instantly incinerated by this dark flame. Myriad dao turned into smoke. At this moment, regardless of whether one was a True God or an emperor, even an immortal would turn into ashes.

“Merciful Buddha—” A sacred Buddha that loomed in the sky wanted to counter against this terrifying flame. However, his scream was the only result. He was rendered into cinders before one could even blink!

“Stop me and die!” Li Qiye’s voice resounded across the nine firmaments. The Declivity-Mountain Bell in his hand unleashed a blow.

“Boom!” The ultimate attack, a Heavenly Annihilation, appeared before this world.

Divine Mount Meru! A mountain protected by deities and Buddhas emerged from this attack. Nothing could stop its momentum.

“Bang!” The entire plateau quaked like a tiny boat in the midst of a torrential storm.

“Crack—” Even the strongest portal protecting the Buddhist Kingdom began to crack in the face of this paramount strike.

Countless people were forced down to their knees. Even paragons and God-Monarchs were trembling with fear. They felt that they were merely ants.

“This, this is his true power, a power capable of slaying Godkings!” Everyone was aghast. They understood that Li Qiye’s previous bouts were only warm-ups. He was just casually playing around.

“How, how could he be so invincible? Gods and Buddhas will all be annihilated!” A paled paragon couldn’t get up from his kneeling posture.

“Those are only avatars. The Buddhas in Nalanda still haven’t come out yet. Regardless, I’m afraid the Buddhas might be severely wounded from such an attack.” A God-Monarch was quite discerning and explained despite being horrified.

Chapter 1125: Qian Suyun

Both God-Monarchs from the previous generation or matchless geniuses of the current generation had to keep their heads low before Li Qiye's invincible and domineering display. Regardless of who they might be, all they needed to do was kneel at this moment.

“Amitabha—” Many sacred Buddhas came forward from the opened gate of Nalanda. The Buddhist light was revitalized once more at the plateau. Its affinity empowered their bodies.

Loud explosions roared across the plateau. The billions of monks here began their chants to strengthen the Buddhas' great dharma.

All the experts here were watching with bated breaths in fear. They felt that they were nothing before Li Qiye and the plateau.

Li Qiye was not afraid to see these Buddhas coming out. He coldly glared at them and uttered: “Not to mention all of you, even if Amitabha climbs out of his coffin or Di Shi comes back from the perpetual everlastingness, don't even think about stopping me or I will break your Buddhist Kingdom at all costs!”

“Merciful Buddha.” These venerable Buddhas began to chant. The light on their bodies turned into long swords that descended from the sky while transforming continuously. They were both the destroyers and protectors of the world.

This was the furious Buddhas subduing evil! Many people

palpitated in the face of this incoming wrath. The storm was fast approaching; there will be an end regardless of the outcome.

Many even thought about leaving the plateau. However, they were suppressed by its power, so escaping became quite difficult.

He coldly glared at the Buddhas. With the green lamp in his left hand and the dao sword in his right, he declared in a tyrannical manner: “Very well. Come! Today, I will show the world what is considered Buddha slaying!”

“Goodness, goodness.” Right when the great battle was about to erupt, a Buddhist voice echoed from the kingdom as if it was coming from the ancient past, as if it had never dispersed even after millions of years: “Let him in, he and I are connected by fate.”

“Amitabha, we accept the decree.” The Buddhas placed their palms together and immediately went back inside Nalanda. The Buddhist light disappeared along with them.

“The Buddhist Lord!” A knowledgeable person knew who the speaker was right away.

Li Qiye recalled his thirteen palaces, green lamp, and dao sword and resumed his ordinary appearance.

He gazed intensely into the portal to look at the deepest location within. His expression was extremely strange and unreadable.

“Hum—” A Buddhist bridge descended from the kingdom with many lotus flowers blossoming below, giving off an incomparably sacred and supreme atmosphere. This bridge alone made many people feel a sense of reverence.

Li Qiye was quiet. He didn't say anything as he stepped onto the bridge. It carried him into the deepest region of the Buddhist Kingdom.

The spectators finally calmed down after seeing him disappear. They all stood up immediately.

“Is he falling out completely with the Buddhist Funeral Plateau?” Many people were drenched in cold sweat after recalling the scene earlier and quickly began to discuss among themselves.

In fact, after a long talk, there was no conclusion because they didn't know why Li Qiye suddenly broke all pretenses with the plateau. He seemed as if he wanted to fight to the death.

In fact, even Li Shuangyan and the others were confused by Li Qiye's actions. They didn't know why he suddenly turned serious or who might have caused it.

The only person who was still in a daze was Little Autumn. It looked at the supreme portal in the sky aimlessly. Eventually, it regained its wits and blurted in shock: “Could it be her?!”

“Her? Who are you talking about?” The girls became curious right away as they surrounded it.

“I don’t know.” It quickly shook its head crazily and answered: “I really don’t know. It is only a story, no, a legend shrouded in mysteries.”

“What kind of legend?” Mei Suyao inquired further.

“Uhh, I don’t know.” It completely shut its mouth at this time. It was clear that it was unwilling to reveal what it knew.

“You really don’t know?” Chen Baojiao fiercely stared at the worm. All the other girls were glaring at Little Autumn as well; it was as if they were going to beat him up.

With a pained expression, it shook its head: “Ladies, even if you beat me up, nothing will change. A few things are taboo and can never be discussed. Just like your Young Noble, he has his bottom line and off-limit topics. This matter is one of his reversed scales; whoever dares to touch it will definitely die a miserable death. He will make them suffer a fate worse than death as they howl in agony for an eternity.”

Mei Suyao glanced at the other girls. Judging from Little Autumn’s expression, they couldn’t pry into this matter any further.

Even though they wanted to know what was going on, no one

dared to ask.

Deep in the Buddhist Kingdom, a sacred Buddha could be found sitting there. It was the Buddhist Lord. Contrary to everyone's imagination, the Buddhist Lord didn't have an avatar of endless height. They also didn't emit glittering golden light or have an aura capable of granting salvation.

The Buddhist Lord ahead was very slender, a woman, in fact. Who would have thought that the Buddhist Lord of the kingdom was actually a woman?

She was not peerlessly beautiful, but she exuded an indescribable wisdom and spirituality. If it was possible to become an immortal, then she was definitely the prime candidate.

One would suddenly feel that she was born bearing the will of the heavens. No one in this world was more spiritual than her.

Li Qiye came closer to look at the all-too-familiar face. Shortly after, countless emotions began to rampage in his heart. He didn't know how to describe it.

Li Qiye looked at her for a long time before speaking: "I always knew that you were still alive."

"I also know that you have always been searching for me." The girl met his gaze. She was unstained by the mundane world and distant from the rowdy mortal realm. Even though she wasn't

wearing a Buddhist robe or decorated with Buddhist marks on her forehead, she was still a true Buddha. As long as the heart has become Buddha, the flesh was no longer important.

“The Su’er I know has always been a strong woman.” He slowly spoke while looking at the woman who had attained the true dharma.

She slowly replied: “The mundane world has passed, all have turned into smoke.”

“I’m a little confused. It doesn’t matter whether you are the Buddhist Lord or the old Qian Suyun. I don’t understand why you chose this path. This is completely different from the unyielding and defiant Su’er that I know.”

Qian Suyun was a name no one had heard of before, but it had an extraordinary place in Li Qiye’s mind.

Qian Suyun, the current Buddhist Lord, calmly answered: “Everyone has their own path. You have yours and I have mine.”

Li Qiye revealed a wry smile and said: “Zhan’er told me that the kingdom had a new Buddhist Lord, I never thought that it would be you. All along, I believed that you were alive and that you were avoiding me. I didn’t think you would enter the Buddhist doctrine.”

“I know you have been searching for me. The past is gone now.

You don't owe me anything. I wasn't avoiding you back then, I was simply searching for my own path." Qian Suyun had jumped out of the three realms and escaped from the Samsara.

He stared intensely at her and spoke with a voice full of power: "If you need a path, I can give you a path, no matter what it is!"

"No." She gently shook her head: "I will find my own path. I might be a weak woman, but I don't need your protection." She calmly looked at him and answered in a natural manner: "You feel that you still owe me, but this is far from the truth. Back then above the nine heavens, I betrayed my father, my race, and the entire world. However, this was not because of your instigation. I was simply staying true to my own pursuit and beliefs..."

"Or, as you said, I was born to be a defiant person. Regardless of your involvement, I would have taken that step anyway. I must say that without you, perhaps it wouldn't have caused such a great upheaval."

"Just know that you do not owe me anything. I told you the secret back then and followed you to this world out of my own volition. It wasn't due to my misstep or the fact that the entire world was chasing me, forcing me to flee to this place. It was because I wouldn't be able to find the answer that I wanted over there, so I came to this world in hopes of forging a path towards my goal." She spoke very earnestly. It was this sincerity and genuine tone that emphasized her detachment from emotions. Each word was like the statement of a bystander, as if all of this had nothing to do with her.

Chapter 1126: Eternal Parting

“Find an answer?” Li Qiye bitterly smiled: “You entered the Buddhist doctrine because you were finding an answer? That, that really isn’t like you.”

Qian Suyun looked at Li Qiye. Her eyes were extremely clear with a childlike innocence, showing off her peerless charm.

She said: “I know what you are thinking. I have never doubted you. Even now, I believe in your determination and abilities. No, I believe in everything about you.”

“But you still didn’t come to me.” He spoke earnestly: “I don’t know what condition you were in before coming to the plateau. Whether it was a sense of loss or confusion or something else, it doesn’t matter. If you are willing or if you think that you are forced, that there exists something beyond your own will, I can take you away right now even if this place is the plateau.”

His eyes became incomparably profound and sharp to the point of being quite frightening. Anyone would be moved by this glare. He could massacre everything with whatever means necessary.

“I believe your words and your ability to carry it out.” Qian Suyun nodded seriously: “Just like back then, even in the middle of the mighty army while being chased by emperors and deities, you were still able to take me away from the peril. You have always been able to keep your word.”

“But my decision to adopt Buddhism does not have much to do with the plateau itself. They neither converted nor tempted me. I might be a weak woman, but you should know that nothing can convert or make me give in. There is no power that can invade my mind.” With that, her clear eyes seemed to be able to illuminate the entire world. Everything was put to shame by her innocent and limpid gaze.

She continued on freely: “I joined the plateau because it is connected to me. It shares the same beliefs, so I chose to stay here to cultivate and become a Buddhist Lord.”

The current Qian Suyun was incredible, but in the past, there was a little girl that looked just like a frail elf. Despite her seemingly fragile appearance, her heart had an extremely powerful ability while she had an incomparable mental fortitude!

Li Qiye paused for a bit before speaking: “You should know that the Buddhist Funeral Plateau will still not be able to avoid the inevitable fate. In the end, it will still require a baptism of blood.”

Qian Suyun was as calm as the water at the base of a well: “I know. No one will be able to escape the eventual fate. If they want an answer, they must pay with blood.”

She glanced at him in a serious yet innocent manner: “I know that you require an answer as well, but the answer you seek is completely different from mine. All I want to know is who listens to the prayers of all sentient beings.”

“Right, an answer...” Li Qiye smiled wryly after hearing her response. He sat down right on the ground and gently sighed: “Since time immemorial, the rarest thing is to have a pure heart. After so many years, you are still the same. You’re still you without any changes.”

“The same goes for you.” She replied: “After millions of years, your heart is still the same. Your determination has never been shaken even during the dark era, even during the rainy storms. You have never doubted or wavered before.”

He sighed again in silence. After so many long years, it would be difficult to find someone who understood you. Eventually, he smiled and continued: “We both want an answer. You wish to find an answer for all sentient beings while I want to search for it for myself, just because I need to know.”

“No, in my mind, no one is more remarkable than you.” She calmly added: “Who would dare to say that you are selfish? Throughout history, you have been guarding the nine worlds the whole time. Even in that other place, you were working for the human race, to open up a place for them to live.”

“I don’t think that I am that great at all.” Li Qiye freely smiled: “I have never been a savior or a guardian of the human race. Even though I destroyed the Ancient Ming, even though I made the gods bleed in that sky, I can only say that I did it for my own sake. My hands are stained with their blood and also the blood of the human race.”

“This is your courage. You will not make compromises because of

your own ideals or show mercy just because they are of the same race.” Her innocent eyes flashed brightly: “You are you, you will never make compromises or falter. The human race and the nine worlds are not enough to earn your mercy. This is a type of perseverance. You were able to make it this far and earn this glory because of your rigidity. This is why the nine worlds still exist while the human race brought about the extremely prosperous Emperors Era.”

“If you put it like that, it seems like I don’t have anything to worry about.” Li Qiye laughed out loud: “For as long as I can remember, I never cared about what others said, but if Su’er says so, there’s no reason for me to not keep on going.”

She looked at him deeply and said: “No matter the time, I will always see you as a source of pride. You are the one true to your heart, only you will be able to trample all things as either the protector or the butcher. I’m not as good as you in this regard since I lack your courage.”

“Even when you kill to the end of the world and cause rivers of blood to flow and regardless of how people curse you for an eternity, scold you as the evil hand or the devil, you still keep walking forward. Blood was not a reason for mercy, criticism was not a reason to waver! You will always be you!” Even her calm eyes were slightly shaken at this moment.

Li Qiye stayed silent for a long time. Many things still couldn’t be let go. Just like in the past when they fought together and faced the same perils. They held hands to surpass the arduous and difficult periods — this past made them unable to truly feel

indifferent towards each other.

Eventually, he lifted his head to look at her: “I’m satisfied to hear you say this. Whether I’m the dark hand behind the curtains or the guardian of the nine worlds, none of it matters.”

She revealed a faint smile. Despite her lack of supreme features, her smile was extremely pretty; it was peaceful like a lotus blooming in the snow. This was a gentle beauty that softened the hearts of others.

“No matter how vast this world is or if the reincarnation cycle truly exists, I will always be proud of you.” Eventually, her words engraved themselves into his heart.

He eventually sighed and said: “Regardless of how much time passes and the eventual end, I will still be the same.”

She commented: “You and I are like that, not even time can erase us.”

The two of them gazed at each other before smiling together.

They immersed themselves in tranquility at this moment. Everything else became insignificant as time seemed to stop.

Qian Suyun eventually broke the silence: “Let me touch you.”

Li Qiye stood up and inched closer towards her. She gently reached out with her fair hand and caressed his face.

After a while, he gripped her slender hand tightly while staring at her radiant eyes. She met his gaze and said: “I am sorry that I cannot fight with you and follow you to the end of this world.”

“No, we can only say that our dao are not the same.” Li Qiye kept on holding her white hand: “Back then in that world, during my most difficult period, you were my friend and always supported me until we returned to the nine worlds. When you left, I understood that we didn’t share the same path. Your will is for the common people while my path is one paved with blood. No matter the era, I can only sleep on a sanguine ground.”

“Goodbye, you who I love the most. I have nothing worth remembering or worrying about in the mundane world, I am very satisfied to see you one last time.” Eventually, she withdrew her hand and restored her calm and transcendent temperament. At this moment, she was the Buddhist Lord of the Buddhist Kingdom, freed from the Samsara.

Li Qiye took a deep breath and spoke decisively: “Goodbye, Su’er. No matter how long it takes, one day, I will stand at the end of the world!”

With that, he left without looking back. This was the last time for him. Everything would disperse into smoke afterward.

Qian Suyun watched him leave. She eventually closed her eyes.

The moment she opened them again, they became a pair of Buddhist eyes. A hymn surged into the air while a Buddhist wheel descended.

From now on, Qian Suyun no longer existed in this world. The little girl in the past was gone as well. Only a Buddhist Lord that focused on all sentient beings remained!

Chapter 1127: The Storm

Many eyes in the plateau were on Li Qiye as he left the Buddhist Kingdom. Many people were shaken. Some audibly gasped when they saw him come out unscathed.

An old God-Monarch murmured: “So heaven-defying, he was able to leave safe and sound.”

Challenging the entire plateau and crushing the portal while leaving the Buddhist Kingdom in one piece — this was too heaven-defying. Even the greatest geniuses wouldn’t even dare to think about such a thing.

In a short amount of time, the plateau became quiet to the extreme. Fiercest had left an indelible impression on everyone’s minds.

In the present, no one was able to do this. It could even be said that for many more millions of years, very few would challenge the plateau like this.

“That’s Fiercest for you. It’s no wonder why he can overshadow Jikong Wudi and even get Goddess Mei to follow him. Who can compare to him in the current generation?” Even the most brilliant genius had to lament and the most arrogant crowd had to keep their heads low. They admitted their shortcomings before Fiercest.

Li Qiye was quiet as he walked into the Buddhist City.

“Young Noble—” The girls were relieved to see him return safely. They were worried that he would be fighting the Buddhist Lord after entering the kingdom.

Li Qiye sighed and gently waved his sleeve after seeing them: “I’m a little tired, I’ll go back and rest first.”

With that, he turned and entered his bedroom.

The girls glanced at each other after seeing his demeanor. They were all confused from not knowing what actually happened.

In his bedroom, he quietly sat in a chair with a cold expression. At this moment, he has turned into a withered tree. Nothing else in this world mattered to him.

He severed his ties with the world as he rested emotionlessly as if petrified. He did this for some time before finally returning to his former self.

“The real storm is approaching, this is nothing. The world will always leave behind some regrets.” Li Qiye looked out the window and gazed towards the far horizon.

In the distant years, he and Qian Suyun had faced adversities together. They experienced the most dangerous and desperate situations. During that time, they never abandoned each other.

Regardless of how hard it was or how many deities and emperors chased them, they still marched forward hand in hand while facing the bloody rains and storms.

Alas, the inseparable pair eventually parted ways. They had their own wills and ideals.

Just like Qian Suyun said, the two wanted an answer. However, their answers were different.

Once upon a time, their roads were the same, but Qian Suyun's focus was on sentient beings while Li Qiye's focus was on his own path. All of his being was fixated on a baptism of blood. His era was doomed to be grotesque and grisly.

He didn't try to hold her back because she was a very smart woman. She had been through enough and he didn't want her to experience more years of killing. He didn't hope that she would have even more sleepless nights in the future.

"Farewell, Su'er." He sighed. There were no tears or sadness. Everything was within his expectations.

"Young Noble, are you alright?" He heard the girls whispering.

He looked up and saw the girls standing right there with worried expressions, including Mei Suyao.

He felt warm inside as he asked: "How long have I been sitting

here for?”

Time came and went, but no matter what happened, there had always been people accompanying him. Even though he knew that many people couldn't follow him until the end of the world, this was more than enough for him. What else could he ask for?

“Five days.” Li Shuangyan said: “Why are you like this?”

They were very worried about him because their Young Noble rarely showed this kind of weakness. They could easily guess that something big had happened.

“Nothing, there's no need to worry about me.” He smiled and shook his head.

“Something unfavorable is happening to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.” Mei Suyao was relieved to see him back to normal and immediately told him the news.

“What happened?” His eyes narrowed as a cold glint flashed across his pupils.

Li Shuangyan quickly explained: “The Heavenly God Sect wants to attack. The Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom are sharpening their blades as well. The Eternal River School received a message that these three sects are working together to siege and destroy our Cleansing Incense.”

“They also heard that the Soaring Immortal Sect will come down for sure. If the Heavenly God Sect meets any resistance, the soaring sect will definitely lend them a hand.” Mei Suyao added with haste.

The Grand Middle Territory was very far from the southern Barren Earth. The news of this attack shouldn't have come so quickly, but the Eternal River School was paying great attention to this. The moment they noticed something, they instantly sent the message to Mei Suyao.

“Naive fools!” A terrifying murderous glint flashed in Li Qiye's eyes.

Mei Suyao continued: “My ancestor told me to tell you that our school is ready. With your command, we will fend off the enemies for you.”

The ancestor's message was very clear — the Eternal River School was willing to support Li Qiye.

“No.” He stood up with a chilling glare: “I appreciate your old geezers' goodwill, but I will personally return. If I don't massacre them, they won't know what it would feel like to tremble in fear! If people dare to touch Cleansing Incense, I will let the Mortal Emperor World cower to let everyone know that opposing me will not end well.”

“Even the Soaring Immortal Sect is no exception!” He was raring to fight.

“I have asked the elders to create a dao portal for Young Noble. You can return to the Grand Middle Territory at any time. I will go back with you.” Mei Suyao spoke.

She was an intelligent person and a good strategist who was well-prepared for any situation.

Li Qiye shook his head: “You should stay here since someone from your school is ascending. Let me deal with this.” Li Qiye then looked at the others: “Go prepare. We will let Lianxiang know that we are going back.”

After leaving the lesser world, Bu Lianxiang had been in isolated cultivation to learn about her galaxy.

The Heavenly God Sect was moving quite swiftly. This was a premeditated war. Moreover, the real mastermind this time was the Space Trample Mountain! The Heavenly God Sect was only the vanguard.

Even though the mountain only had one emperor, he was also the most recent emperor. They still had a lot of power and many of his generals were still alive today.

In this generation, they were quite ambitious and wanted to push Jikong Wudi towards the imperial throne. After all, they had sufficient resources to do so. More importantly, Jikong Wudi had the potential to become an emperor as well.

Alas, even under the protection of Venerable Ninesword, Jikong Wudi was killed by Li Qiye. This enraged the Space Trample Mountain as it was a direct challenge to their authority.

The ancestors and generals did not want this result and they had no intentions of a peaceful resolution since revenge was the only thing on their minds.

At the same time, the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom wanted a part in this as well. They swore to never reconcile with Li Qiye. Thus, when the mountain wanted to attack Cleansing Incense and seek revenge, how could the kingdom not agree? These two imperial lineages immediately began to move.

Another thing to note is how similar this event was to the past. Back then, the Heavenly God Sect seized territories from Cleansing Incense and began their attack. In the end, Cleansing Incense was defeated and lost their kingdom. The Heavenly God Sect then erected the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom in the land that once belonged to Cleansing Incense.

However, that was only in appearance. In fact, the shadows of the Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom had always been there during that war. For example, the greatest evidence was the Tetra-War Bronze Chariot falling into the hands of the ancient kingdom.

Otherwise, the Heavenly God Sect wouldn't have been able to defeat Cleansing Incense. Even though Cleansing Incense was in

decline, it was still an imperial lineage with secret resources and powers. It wasn't something the Heavenly God Sect could compare to.

Today was no different than the past. The Heavenly God Sect was only acting as the cannon fodder for the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom and Space Trample Mountain.

Chapter 1128: Siege Before The City Walls

“Rumble!” Overnight, a grand army trampled the mountains and rivers. More than tens of thousands of disciples from the Heavenly God Sect rushed towards Cleansing Incense like a flood.

Many sects in the middle region were frightened by this sudden mobilization from the Heavenly God Sect. This was especially true for the smaller sects within its territory. They became timid in the face of this grand army.

“War.” Many experts present took note of this with changed expressions after seeing the tens of thousands of disciples.

Someone murmured in a daze: “The Heavenly God Sect finally decides to attack Cleansing Incense.”

Cleansing Incense and Heavenly God Sect had always been mortal enemies. It was perfectly described by two common phrases: swearing to never co-exist and vowing to never share the same sky. Everyone in the middle region knew about this.

But after that war, the two sects had a long period of peace without conflicts. So today, the attack from the Heavenly God Sect came as a surprise to many people. It came too suddenly without any foreshadowing.

Of course, the big powers that knew more about the story understood that this event was not so simple.

“Rumble!” The army of tens of thousands immediately ran to Cleansing Incense. The entire sect was completely surrounded and under siege.

“Clank—clank—clang!” Alarms rang in Cleansing Incense along with spinning circular lights. A grand formation immediately protected the sect. The gates were shut tight in preparation to fight.

The surrounding army didn’t make a single sound, but their weapons were ready. Arrows were drawn while their artifacts emitted frightening glows.

The harsh atmosphere from the army below the city pervaded the entire area.

Many small sects outside of Cleansing Incense fled without a trace while the vagrant cultivators escaped even faster.

Many great powers paid attention to this fight as well. Some even sent their experts here as scouts because they wanted to know the outcome of this fight. It could change the entire political climate of the middle region.

“Heavenly Jewel Mortal King, what is your intention?” Someone finally came out from the incense sect in the face of the siege. It was their first elder, Gu Tieshou.

His cultivation was much deeper than in the past, but he had also grown older as his hair was completely gray.

In recent years, Su Yonghuang, Chen Baojiao, and Li Shuangyan had been in charge of the sect. But now, with Su Yonghuang back in the Su Clan and the other two at the plateau, Gu Tieshou, as the first elder, had to take charge of the situation.

On the side of the Heavenly God Sect, the Heavenly Jewel Mortal King didn't speak. An old man eventually came out.

His hair was completely blanched as well, but his back was straight and he had a powerful glare that could penetrate the sun and moon.

“Heavenly God Ancestor!” Gu Tieshou was moved to see this old man. He knew that things weren't looking good this time.

The experts in the distance glanced at each other as well. The Heavenly God Ancestor could be said to be the creator of the sect. It became powerful under his leadership. Rumor has it that when Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was still in this world, he even praised the ancestor.

His appearance today meant that this war would continue until death. The previous war made Cleansing Incense fall into a sharp decline, so this one might take it to the brink of destruction.

“Your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect conspired with heretics to

kill the cultivators of this world. Today, my Heavenly God Sect will carry out justice in place of the heavens.” His words were quite emphatic, everyone could hear him.

With a cold expression, Gu Tieshou retorted: “There are plenty of things to say to frame someone! If your sect wants to fight, we don’t mind trouble either. Come! We will not bat an eye.”

Although Gu Tieshou was not a contemporary master, he was a courageous man both in the past and present.

“Go!” The ancestor shouted while coldly glancing at the ancient sect. In his eyes, the sect was already doomed.

He believed that it would be a breeze to destroy the ancient sect right now due to his backing. Not anyone in this world would dare to offend them and no savior in this world would be able to rescue the ancient sect.

“Kill!” The great army roared and immediately divided into three sections before sweeping through the sect like a flood. They focused on the main branches of the sect like three sharp daggers aiming for the heart.

A Cleansing Incense disciple shouted: “Brothers, blow the horn! Kill them!” His name was Nan Huai ren.

“Blmmm—” The horn resounded across the entire sect along with pounding drums, causing the earth to tremble. In the blink of

an eye, the entire sect was boiling with a thirst for battle. All of its disciples were ready to fight to the end.

Luo Fenghua cried out: “Kill all of these dogs!” In his armor, he rode forward as the vanguard with a grand momentum.

“Kill!” Zhang Yu and Qu Daoli led the other disciples forward as well with no intentions of retreating. They ferociously rushed forward to meet the great army from the Heavenly God Sect.

Today, both Luo Fenghua and Zhang Yu had their own achievements. They had climbed to the Heavenly King realm and were strong enough to become protectors or elders in the sect!

The three hundred disciples from the Cleansing Jade Peak had found some success. They were taught by Li Qiye back then and didn’t let him down since they were now the core force of Cleansing Incense. In the past few years, there had been some illustrious exploits from this group.

“Kill!” The two armies clashed with an earth-splitting impact. Blood began to flow like rivers. The Heavenly God Sect had the numbers advantage, but the disciples from Cleansing Incense were fierce warriors. They resembled ferocious tigers leaving their mountain and mercilessly killed their way through their enemies.

“Buzz—” At the same time, another battle was raging on inside the sect itself. The Cleansing Incense disciples there were forming powerful battle formations to halt the sieging army.

These battle formations were prepared by Su Yonghuang. Later on, Li Shuangyan took over and, due to her training, the formations were much stronger than before.

The carnage continued with the Cleansing Incense disciples fiercely stopping the Heavenly God army. Each disciple was ferocious and persistent. They wanted the blood of their enemies to wash every inch of this land!

“How interesting, daring to attack Cleansing Incense when your grandpa is here!” The fiercest in the sect was Niu Fen. He shrank into his shell and rolled forward through all obstacles. Blood jetted along with flying pieces of human flesh.

Despite having more disciples, the Heavenly God Sect didn't have the advantage.

The three hundred disciples from the Cleansing Jade Peak had an extremely fierce display. They were an unstoppable calvary that rolled through the enemy's ranks under Xu Pei's leadership.

Many powerful cultivators were astonished to see the excellent showing from the Cleansing Incense disciples. Even the Heavenly God Ancestor's expression sank.

Although the previous generation of the sect was quite weak, the younger generation has become a firm pillar of support. This made the sect grow several times more powerful and could oppose the Heavenly God Sect on even footing.

“The older generation of Cleansing Incense is quite mediocre, but their youths are shining like stars with boundless potential. Such a sect can be described as being very vibrant in great spirits, it will definitely be able to rise.” A spectator murmured.

Even a sect master from a great power added: “No wonder why the Heavenly God Sect is in a rush. The younger generation of Cleansing Incense has such great potential. Once their wings are fully grown, it would be the end of the Heavenly God Sect.”

“Ancestors, summon the imperial weapon!” The Heavenly God Ancestor commanded with a dark expression after seeing the great army failing to break through.

At this point, more than ten ancestors appeared in the Heavenly God Sect’s camp. Despite their withered blood energies, their momentum was still quite powerful.

These dozen ancestors were controlling an imperial weapon. This was an artifact Cleansing Incense lost in the previous war!

“Boom!” They aimed straight at Cleansing Incense. After a loud blast, the gates to Cleansing Incense were instantly shattered. The majority of the disciples in the same direction were blown away. No one could stop such an invincible attack from an imperial weapon.

“Retreat!” Gu Tieshou was alarmed to see this and immediately commanded: “Counter with our own weapons!”

Chapter 1129: Mysterious Prisoner

“Boom! Boom!” More explosions resounded. Cleansing Incense also used their own imperial weapons — the Violet Imperial Hammer and the Black Tortoise Rod!

Of course, it wasn't easy to utilize the power from these weapons. Those from the older generation, like Gu Tieshou, were even more powerless in using them. In the end, Xu Pei's group had to retreat to the main mountain of the sect and worked together to use the two imperial weapons.

The Heavenly God Ancestor commanded: “Press the attack!” The other ancestors continued to use their imperial weapon to open a path straight to Cleansing Incense.

Xu Pei's and Nan Huaiaren's groups controlled one imperial weapon each. They used their imperial laws to protect the sect from the oncoming onslaught of the other weapon.

Even though the sect had the rod and hammer, they were still too young; there existed a big gap between them and the Heavenly God ancestors.

Nevertheless, they managed to hold their ground against the offense for now, resulting in a stalemate.

“All of you, follow me.” The Heavenly God Ancestor didn't care about this field. He brought along several hundred experts to go straight for the Heavenly Crow Peak.

His goal was very clear. He wanted the manuals from the sect, especially their Immortal Emperor laws! In his eyes, destroying Cleansing Incense was only a matter of time. Even if his sect couldn't break through right away, his backing was still there.

Because of this, he needed to rush ahead and seize the merit laws first. His sect required these imperial laws the most. If they had some, then perhaps one day, they would be comparable to imperial lineages.

“Kill!” The disciples guarding the Heavenly Crow Peak screamed and went to face the intruders.

In their eyes, the Heavenly Crow Peak was the heart of Cleansing Incense. Their treasures and merit laws were all located here. If the enemies could take down this place, then Cleansing Incense would lose for sure.

“Scram!” There was no need for the Heavenly God Ancestor to take action. The several hundred experts rushed forward to kill the Cleansing Incense disciples.

“Ah—” Shrill screams resounded. The Heavenly God Sect came prepared as they had prepared to rob these merit laws. These experts were all chosen carefully; they were experts among experts.

In the blink of an eye, these experts killed all the disciples guarding the Heavenly Crow Peak. They easily entered the peak

and headed for the triangular square.

“Clang—Clang—Clank—” When these experts were rushing in, a man that was chained to a shrine stood up.

“Clank!” The man tore off his chains.

More metallic clanks echoed from the chains. This man took action right away. The two chains on his wrists resembled flood dragons leaving the water and went straight for the experts.

“Ah—” Now it was their turn to scream. The two iron chains pierced them like meat skewers, all several hundred of them.

The disparity in power was too great. Despite their great number, they were no match for this man.

“Who are you!” The Heavenly God Ancestor was startled. This happened too suddenly, so he couldn’t even react in time to save them.

“Clang—” The stout man didn’t say anything and swung his chains down with a ferocious and unstoppable momentum.

The aghast ancestor summoned his weapon and unleashed a supreme art to fight against this man.

“Rumble!”

They took their fight to the sky. The unknown man used his chains as a weapon to stop the ancestor.

Even though the ancestor had been famous for quite a while and the world was scared of him, he couldn't seize the upper hand against this man. On the contrary, he was completely suppressed.

Everyone was shocked to see this. Many experts in the distance murmured: "That's an imperial lineage for you, crouching tigers and hidden dragons are everywhere."

Even the disciples and elders from Cleansing Incense were astounded because, from their memory, the burly man had always been locked in that place. No one knew who he was or what his background was. Even the first elder, Gu Tieshou, didn't know where he came from.

They didn't expect that the chained man was so powerful.

"Boom!" The ancestor's defensive treasure was struck by the iron chain. He vomited blood and fell down from the sky. He staggered back more than ten steps before he could stabilize his body.

His face was unsightly to the extreme. His illustrious fame was notorious at one point, but today, he was not a match for this unknown person. How could he not be furious?

He finally shouted: "Dao brothers, please lend me a hand to

destroy Cleansing Incense!”

The more naive spectators were surprised by this. So it turned out that the Heavenly God Sect didn’t come alone, they still had some backings.

“Rumble!” The void suddenly opened at this time. A vast mountain emerged before everyone. It pierced straight into the sky. Waterfalls fell down for a thousand miles with divine eagles circling about. Here was the dwelling of green flood dragons...

This majestic landscape suddenly appearing in the sky stunned everyone. They thought that a secret realm had shown itself to the world.

A Virtuous Paragon from the previous generation shouted: “Space Trample Mountain!”

Someone blurted in horror: “Space Trample Mountain! It’s finally here.”

This was a lineage created by Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Despite only having one emperor, many people believed that it was comparable to a sect with three emperors because many of his generals were still alive and guarding the mountain.

“Rumble!” While people were still gazing at the scene in the sky, a cavalry soared out from this flying mountain and entered the aerial space of Cleansing Incense.

This cavalry did not boast numbers — only a few hundred. However, it gave off the feeling of a bloodthirsty primordial monster.

Even before it joined the fray, one could already smell a bloody stench as if its appearance signaled the start of a massacre.

Leading this cavalry was an old man in black with a spear hanging on his back. He made others shudder uncontrollably due to his dangerous aura.

“Era Sentinel General!” In the horizon, an ancestor from a great power recognized this old man and blurted in shock: “A general directly under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!”

After hearing this, those who had heard of his name were frightened. This was a ferocious general under the emperor. Later on, he patrolled the Mortal Emperor World for the emperor. People were quite scared of him.

“A centipede dies but never falls down!” Era Sentinel coldly glared at the burly man with an oppressive murderous intent: “But today, no matter what power Cleansing Incense still has hidden, it won’t be able to escape demise. Your disciples should never have offended people whom they can’t afford to offend!”

The crowd was astonished to see Era Sentinel personally leading a cavalry into this battle. Even the disciples of Cleansing Incense knew that they were in dire straits.

The burly man turned serious as well. He knew that he had met a formidable foe!

“Xue Hongyi, you shouldn’t have come here.” A voice sounded at this time: “Back when your Space Trample Mountain schemed in the background and ordered the Heavenly God Sect to invade Cleansing Incense’s territory, these old bones didn’t want to bother with you. But now, your mountain actually comes to bully my Cleansing Incense, do you think we have no one to stand up for ourselves?”

A person emerged above the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. No one knew when or how he got there.

It was an old man that didn’t resemble an expert at all. He had an especially wretched and lowly appearance when he opened his mouth to reveal three yellow teeth. He simply lacked the style and bearing of an expert.

“[Old Devil!](#)” Everyone from Cleansing Incense was stunned to see him. Even Gu Tieshou couldn’t believe his eyes.

This person that came out of thin air was a celebrity at Cleansing Incense — Old Devil. He was a wretched old man that spent all day with women down at the [Happy Crimson Pavilion!](#)

Even new disciples didn’t care for Old Devil because everyone knew that he was only a lecherous grandpa.

Who would have thought that when Cleansing Incense was on the verge of demise, this perverted and wretched old man would come out to face Era Sentinel?

Era Sentinel's eyes lit up with a terrifying light after seeing this old man as if he wanted to see through him.

“[Mu Shaodi](#), is that you? You are the handsome and matchless Mu Shaodi?” He mentioned a name without any certainty.

Formerly known as San (Three) Gui (Sly/pervert/ghost) Ye (Grandpa/old person). Couldn't come up with a good title back then that included all three words, so I left it in pinyin. His nickname has the number three because he is good at three things: spending money, lying, and fooling around in brothels. It's harder to implement three than third and it makes the nickname even longer. Old Devil Three, Eccentric Three, Pervert Three, Old Three; blah.

The name of the brothel.

Mu Shaodi used to be Young Emperor Mu. In that particular context, it was the right title but in later chapters, I found that it is more likely to be his name than title. Mu Shaodi = Young Emperor Mu

Chapter 1130: Mu Shaodi

Old Devil smiled, revealing his three yellow teeth alongside his wretched demeanor: “I have forgotten about it. It has been a while since someone last said my name.”

“What, he, he is Mu Shaodi!” Everyone’s jaws dropped to the ground after hearing this. Even the spectators on the horizon were shocked as well. Old paragons from the previous generations didn’t dare to believe their own eyes.

“But this is too outrageous, he, he is the number one genius of the Grand Middle Territory back then?” An undying who had seen Mu Shaodi before couldn’t believe his eyes.

This old undying carefully analyzed Old Devil. No matter how he looked at him, there was no semblance of Mu Shaodi in this wretched old geezer.

Both the young and old of Cleansing Incense were skeptical as well, especially those above the protector level.

For them, Mu Shaodi was the same as a god. Many of them worshipped Mu Shaodi. Even though they had never met this ancestor before, they still admired him all the same.

Mu Shaodi was the strongest genius 50,000 years ago and competed with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong for the Heaven’s Will with a record of three defeats to three victories. Even though he failed to shoulder the Heaven’s Will in the end, his fame still

spread far and wide in the nine worlds. Even his lifelong enemy, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, had nothing but praise for him.

At the same time, outside of being an exceedingly powerful genius, rumor has it that he was quite a dashing man with a gallant temperament. He was also heroic and famous. During his generation, countless saintesses and princesses adored him.

No one, especially those who had seen him in the past, would believe that the handsome and heroic youth that once stood above the world was now this lowly old man before them.

Gu Tieshou was slack-jawed. Even though he had never seen Mu Shaodi, he had met Liu Sanjian who had left an inerasable impression in his mind. Mu Shaodi was the grandmaster of Liu Sanjian's grandmaster. One should be able to imagine the young emperor's invincible style from looking at Liu Sanjian.

However, not even in his dreams would he think that the young emperor in his mind would have such a contradictory appearance today. What was even worse was that the Old Devil whom the entire sect thought was a pervert that only hung around at Happy Crimson was their ancestor, Mu Shaodi. This was almost like a dream.

"Growing old will change someone." Old Devil laughed boisterously. There was no semblance of his old style. Of course, he didn't care whether he was handsome or ugly either.

After hearing Old Devil confirming his identity with his own

mouth, Era Sentinel took a step back. Even though he was a general under the emperor, he was still quite apprehensive about facing the young emperor. The guy was famous for a reason back then, he had an even record against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!

Era Sentinel coldly uttered: “Mu Shaodi, you really haven’t died!”

Old Devil’s three yellow teeth were too eye-catching. He smiled in response: “I can’t die before you old bastards. Xue Hongyi, I did not delve into your sect’s involvement back then, but you aren’t being very sensible today. You actually came, wanting to destroy my sect.”

Back then, the Heavenly God Sect took over the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s territory with the Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom in the background.

The mountain also guessed that Mu Shaodi was still alive, so they didn’t go overboard to the point of attacking Cleansing Incense’s ancestral ground.

Now, they felt that they were powerful enough, so they wanted to destroy Cleansing Incense in one go.

Era Sentinel declared: “Mu Shaodi, it can’t be denied that you are very powerful, but even your presence will not be able to save Cleansing Incense. It shall be destroyed today!”

Old Devil narrowed his eyes and glanced over at Era Sentinel and then the Heavenly God Ancestor: “With just you and this ignorant junior?”

Such words exasperated the Heavenly God Ancestor. He was quite famous in the middle region, but the young emperor viewed him as worthless.

But before him, the ancestor had to restrain his arrogance. Mu Shaodi was an existence that competed against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. He truly was much more powerful than him.

Era Sentinel coldly uttered: “Mu Shaodi, you are greatly underestimating the Space Trample Mountain. You think this is all of our forces in this conquest?” With that, his blood energy shot into the sky and became even brighter than fireworks at night.

“Buzz—” A portal appeared in the sky. Its huge doors opened and another steady stream of soldiers rushed out.

This huge legion hovered above the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. They carried a majestic aura like a vast ocean, causing this region to be suppressed and breathless.

Very few sects in the Mortal Emperor World could instantly teleport such a great legion.

“A legion from the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom!” Someone screamed after seeing this legion.

Cleansing Incense was shaken once again when they saw this gigantic army in the sky. They were already struggling to stop the imperial weapon from the Heavenly God Sect before the coming of this great legion.

The worst part was that this new legion was much stronger than the Heavenly God Sect's army!

“Hahaha, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect should have been wiped out back then.” An old man stepped out from the legion. He had platinum hair and a silver armor with a big circular reflector in front of his chest. It didn't hide his fat stomach, however, which made him look quite silly.

However, to look down on him due to his appearance would be a mistake. Profound images emerged behind him. It was a gigantic beast that could devour the world at any time. Spectators were quite scared of this phenomenon.

Not many recognized him at all. Old Devil caught a glimpse of him and said: “Azure Mysterious Demon Ancestor, a pig demon like you still dares to come here? Come, I'll take care of you, fat pig.”

Such domineering words made the Cleaning Incense disciples boiling with excitement. Even the experts in the distance were in awe.

“Azure Mysterious Demon Ancestor.” An expert from the

previous generation murmured after hearing this: “He is a demon taught by Immortal Emperor San Dao. Even after so many years, his blood energy is actually still as virile as before.”

According to rumors, this demon ancestor used to be a wild boar. After meeting Immortal Emperor San Dao and obtaining his blessing, it eventually cultivated into a demon and became an ancestor. In order to show his gratitude for being enlightened by the emperor, it stayed at the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom to protect it.

So now, when this demon ancestor personally led the kingdom’s legion to attack Cleansing Incense, it truly showed the kingdom’s determination in wanting to destroy this sect.

“This is too incredible, it looks like they won’t give up until Cleansing Incense is history.” Even a ruler of a country was astounded to see this.

The Cleansing Incense of today was no longer an imperial lineage. In the eyes of many, it was only a third-rate sect. But now, Era Sentinel General and the Azure Mysterious Demon Ancestor personally led their armies to attack Cleansing Incense.

Even a fool could see that the Heavenly God Sect was only the scouting cannon fodder. The real masterminds behind this battle were the Space Trample Mountain and the ancient kingdom.

“Heh, junior, you really are strong and was recognized by the Heaven’s Will. However, even if you were stronger, you still

wouldn't be able to escape death today." The demon ancestor laughed before shouting. His shout echoed across the world.

"Boom!" An azure energy soared to the sky from within the ancient kingdom. It turned into a surging spring that towered for countless miles. Its vastness flooded the heaven and earth.

"Raaaa!" A huge figure appeared from this endless azure energy like a divine beast entrenching itself in this spot while emitting a primal aura. This beast loomed over the land, causing many living beings and even the entire middle region to tremble. Its aura was truly terrifying as if its awakening was the start of its all-devouring journey.

"That's the divine guardian of the ancient kingdom!" Someone murmured: "This is unbelievable... this divine beast hasn't appeared for millions of years, but it is actually coming into being right now. How outrageous..."

However, it did not end there. With a buzzing sound, a projection of a large and incomparable legion emerged above the vast mountains and rivers in the flying continent.

Great warriors and generals came out from this projection. The moment this army came out completely, an invincible aura of steel engulfed the world. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that even the starry sky above was affected.

"Is that the legion left behind by Immortal Emperor Ta Kong?" Even though people could only see the visual projection and not

the whole picture of the legion, they were still frightened all the same.

A regiment of Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, regardless of its actual size and capability, was appalling enough.

Chapter 1131: Ancient Triangular School

The emerging army from the Space Trample Mountain was still not the scariest matter. What was truly intimidating was the figure meditating in the middle of the divine mountain.

No one could clearly see his face, only his ethereal figure. He sat there with a great saber lying across his knees.

Even though he didn't exude any aura and was simply sitting still, God-Monarchs would feel fear from the bottom of their hearts just by looking at him.

This person was unstoppable in this world. He sat there while shouldering the sky and suppressing the earth. It was a sensation of invincibility.

An eternal existence was truly moved to see this sitting figure. He murmured while paled: "Prime general, the strongest general of the Space Trample Mountain!"

"The prime general! A mythical and unstoppable existence!" Many people were aghast since they had heard his tales before.

And there were plenty of tales about him. One even stated that when Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was young, he had never beaten the general before! It wasn't until he carried the Heaven's Will that he obtained his first victory.

Even Old Devil turned serious at this point. He knew just who his opponent was and his terrifying might.

“Why all of this just for Cleansing Incense?” Even intelligent Virtuous Paragons didn’t know why. They were simply astounded as a group.

Even though Cleansing Incense was on an upward slope and Mu Shaodi was still alive, was there a need to mobilize this much to deal with a third-rate sect? The divine mountain came with the prime general presiding over the whole event as well as the divine guardian beast of the ancient kingdom!

Such a force could destroy an imperial lineage, let alone Cleansing Incense! It could annihilate it ten times over. However, this was still not enough to make up for the loss of having the prime general and divine beast coming out. After all, it wasn’t easy for them to come into being.

“Does even the heavens want to destroy my Cleansing Incense?” Gu Tieshou was completely pale and couldn’t stand still for he understood the terrifying enemies that he was about to face.

The younger generation was better off. After all, newborn calves were not afraid of the tiger. Alas, the older generation from Cleansing Incense was in despair. How could they resist two imperial lineages? Especially existences like the prime general and the divine beast. It was easy for them to destroy Cleansing Incense.

“The heavens wish to end us.” Gu Tieshou was not the only one

devoid of hope. Other older cultivators from the sect were lamenting as well.

Era Sentinel coldly spoke: “Mu Shaodi, unless you are strong enough to overturn the heavens, you won’t be able to save Cleansing Incense today!”

“With me here, even gods won’t be able to touch Cleansing Incense or there will be a bloodbath!” Another voice interjected at this second.

“Buzz—” A door opened. One youth and four supreme women came out.

“Fiercest Li Qiye!” Someone shouted with excitement in their voice after seeing the newcomer.

“Fiercest is back!” Today, this notorious title had spread across the entire Mortal Emperor World. Everyone knew about him, so after seeing his appearance, both the young and old generations were quite moved.

“First Brother, First Brother is back!” All of Cleansing Incense became rejuvenated with Li Qiye’s return. Their battle intent soared to the sky, especially the younger generation that was incomparably excited.

“First Brother!” The young disciples were chanting: “First Brother is back, First Brother—”

In a brief moment, all of the young ones saw hope again.

Li Qiye had a supreme position in their minds. Their First Brother was invincible. As long as he was around, no one would be able to touch their sect!

“You are Li Qiye, the one that killed our young lord?” Era Sentinel’s eyes turned cold and were fixated on Li Qiye.

Li Qiye casually glanced at him and slowly said: “[Killing him was no different than killing a dog!](#) There’s no need for a special reminder!”

“Naive brat, we have been waiting for you for a long time now. Today, our Space Trample Mountain will peel your skin and drink your blood as revenge for the young lord!” Era Sentinel revealed a horrifying murderous intent while shouting.

With a chilling expression, the Azure Mysterious Demon Ancestor spoke sinisterly: “Li Brat, you ignored the accepting heavens and barged into the unwelcoming hell! Today will be your funeral!”

The spectators looked around after hearing this. At this second, people finally realized that the Space Trample Mountain didn’t come for Cleansing Incense, they came for Li Qiye.

Li Qiye glanced at the group around Era Sentinel and slowly

uttered: “It seems like some people still don’t understand my principles. I welcome all challengers at any time, but if you move against my people and my sect, then I shall use the blood of millions to teach the world a lesson about my principles.”

“Ignorant child, such big words!” Era Sentinel harshly shouted: “The Space Trample Mountain has weathered all kind of storms in the past—”

“The Space Trample Mountain is nothing.” Li Qiye coldly interrupted the sentinel. The moment he finished speaking, his mind opened. With a clanking sound, a divine spear was thrown out and pinned itself into the triangular building

This triangular building was the storage of Cleansing Incense’s manuals and treasures. The different branches seemed to be connected together seamlessly.

“Boom!” The building unexpectedly flew into the sky and poured down an endless light. It seemed quite mysterious and bizarre.

All of these emitted particles made the building seem like a flying weapon. It gave off an indescribable feeling.

“I want the sky to rain blood today!” With a serious expression, Li Qiye flipped his palm to control the flying building.

“Boom!” This building was an extremely destructive weapon. It immediately rushed into the middle of the Heavenly God Sect’s

army like a rotating [throwing star](#).

“Pluff! Pluff! Pluff!” Heads began to fly. The entire army of the Heavenly God Sect was decapitated instantly.

“No!” The Heavenly God Ancestor screamed. Even he couldn’t escape this fate. The triangular building flew by and severed his head. Blood gushed out while he was still watching with his eyes wide open. He didn’t know how this building managed to behead him.

Everyone was sent into a daze. This building was actually as swift and agile as a throwing star. It was able to slay an army right away in an unimaginable manner.

“Kill!” The demon ancestor and the sentinel were both shocked. They frantically shouted to lead their invincible cavalries straight into battle. The earth trembled before their monstrous momentum.

The two regiments came killing like a torrent made out of steel or a horde of primal beasts. The frightening murderous intent made others grow weak in the knees; there was no way they could fight.

However, Li Qiye didn’t even bat an eye. He slightly swung his sleeve again.

“Boom!” The triangular building rushed out once more.

“Ah—” In just a short period of time, more screams resounded. One head flew up after another with blood spurting from their necks.

It was a spectacular scene of heads and columns of blood gushing out like radiant fireworks blossoming in the night sky.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Countless bodies fell down from the sky. Cleansing Incense’s nearby hills were full of headless corpses.

“No...” Both the army from the ancient kingdom and the cavalry of Era Sentinel were being beheaded at a rapid pace.

The sentinel and the demon ancestor were quite powerful. They used imperial weapons to escape the culling of the triangular weapon and survived several attacks.

However, while watching their disciples being beheaded nonstop and their bodies falling to the ground, they roared furiously with an unquenchable anger. They wanted nothing more than to chop Li Qiye into pieces, but they couldn’t break away from the assault.

“Boom!” The void shattered. When the sentinel and demon ancestor narrowly escaped the throwing weapon, Bu Lianxiang crushed the void with her foot. Her attack was like a descending galaxy. Time itself collapsed along with countless stars moldering into smoke.

“Clank-ck” Both of them screamed out at the same time as their

bones shattered. In just two moves, their bodies were crushed by Bu Lianxiang and were captured alive.

The difference between the two sides was too great. Even though they were peerless Virtuous Paragons, they still had a long way to go before they could compare to Bu Lianxiang. During the Ancient Ming Era, she was still an existence that rampaged about, so naturally, they were no match for her.

“Ah—” The last scream sounded. The remaining disciples from the two regiments were all killed by the triangular building. They fell down to join their comrades.

“Buzz—” After slaying all the enemies, the huge building flew back and hovered above Li Qiye’s head.

Pet lovers might be peeved by this comment, but the raw is “random dogs and cats.” It is not actually referring to the animals; it is a phrase meaning that the person is a nobody.

I was going to use shuriken, but that’s a Japanese term. Throwing star is more neutral.

Chapter 1132: Counter-Offensive

The world turned quiet right away. Both enemies and friends were dazed for a long time.

Even the disciples from Cleansing Incense couldn't believe that the triangular building had such a use. In fact, even Gu Tieshou's group found it inconceivable.

All echelons in the sect thought that it was the place to store treasures and laws. No one thought that it could be used as a weapon.

What was even more astonishing was that this huge building was as agile as a throwing star; it was capable of beheading people with ease.

People eventually calmed down. One person took a deep breath and murmured: "Fiercest is always like this no matter where he goes, always killing till rivers of blood flow. Both the Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom are not worth mentioning in his eyes. He is a monster, a rampaging monster with nothing holding him back."

"Pop!" Era Sentinel and the demon ancestor who were captured by Bu Lianxiang were thrown to the ground.

The two legions were annihilated. Even though these two were powerful, they have now become prisoners. Despite being a veteran general under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, he couldn't

even withstand one strike from Bu Lianxiang.

She was too powerful and the galaxy in her hand was even worse. It was quite heaven-defying, so it was unquestionable that these two would be this vulnerable before her.

There were some big shots running here from the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. They had seen her in action back at the Lesser Imperial Devil World before when she killed the Divine Ancestor and the Thousand Emperors Sect Master. Compared to those two, the demon ancestor was much weaker, so this was to be expected.

But as those who had never seen her fight before, they could only shudder inside. A general of the last emperor was captured in such a short amount of time — this was truly an astonishing turn of events.

“Is that an Emperor Assailant?” An old sect master was creeped out by her might. He felt a chill and had sweat running down his back.

An ancestor could faintly guess her power and murmured: “She’s probably not at that level, but she’s definitely not far off.”

Li Qiye kicked Era Sentinel and coldly ordered: “Kneel!”

The general stood up straight and proudly said: “Junior, do as you please! Don’t even dream of making me kneel.”

Despite being captured, he was still quite unyielding. After all, he was a general of an emperor.

“Crank—crack!” Li Qiye crushed his bones with one kick.

“Pop!” Era Sentinel involuntarily kneeled on the ground.

Even if he was more persistent, there was nothing he could do for he was already on the chopping board.

“Even if Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was in this world, I still wouldn’t pay him any mind, who do you think you are?!” Li Qiye glared at him before stomping on the demon ancestor.

“Pop!” The demon ancestor had no choice but to prostrate. At this time, he had no power to even bind a chicken.

Many people gasped after seeing this. One was a heavenly general while the other was a demon ancestor, but they were forced to kneel before Li Qiye.

His eyes shifted towards the divine mountain in the sky as well as the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom.

“Prime general and divine guardian beast, so what? Even if the invincible ancestors of the Soaring Immortal Sect were here, they would still have to prostrate before me! I shall behead my enemies for the world to see. In the nine heavens and ten earths, those who oppose me will become ashes even if they are eternal gods!” His

cold voice caused the world to tremble.

“Ah!” The moment he made his declaration, both the general and demon ancestor screamed. Li Qiye’s hands were now gripping their heads. With a crack, he ripped out their heads and spines.

This gory scene was truly shocking. All the spectators were creeped out by it.

Two great beings were publicly executed. Only Immortal Emperors would dare to do something like this.

“This is too ruthless!” Everyone was quivering inside, including God-Monarchs and Godkings. Today, they understood what fear was, something that Fiercest didn’t possess. He couldn’t be deterred by anyone or any power.

Anyone who came today must kneel before him. His enemies, regardless of who they were, would be annihilated even if they were the emperors and gods above the nine firmaments!

Li Qiye casually threw away their heads and commanded: “Shuangyan, Baojiao, Baijian, heed my command!”

“Your maids are here!” The three of them stepped out [and bowed their heads](#).

He uttered coldly: “The three of you, bring some disciples and destroy the Heavenly God Sect for me. Make sure that when the

sun rises tomorrow, the Heavenly God Sect shall be no more!”

“Affirmative.” The three girls left. They took some disciples from Cleansing Incense and opened a portal to strike the Heavenly God Sect.

“Only Fiercest is qualified to do something like this.” Everyone was marveled to see these incomparable geniuses calling themselves maids before Li Qiye.

Li Qiye pointed at Old Devil and the burly man locked by chains: “Mu Shaodi, Mu Shaohuang, [the two of you](#) go destroy the Space Trample Mountain for me. I do not wish to see it exist after dawn tomorrow!”

Old Devil and the chained man glanced at each other, but eventually, Old Devil bowed his head and said: “Your Excellency’s command is the supreme will!”

With that, he soared into the sky and headed straight for the Space Trample Mountain!

The burly man also stepped into the sky without any hesitation. His iron chains issued more clanking noises.

“Buzz—” The mountain in the sky knew that powerful enemies were approaching. It activated its imperial formation and readied its legion!

Li Qiye glanced at the mountain and spoke in an awe-inspiring manner: “Arcane, where are you?”

An old man with a paper hat showed up out of nowhere. He prostrated on the ground and respectfully said: “This lowly one is at Your Excellency’s command!”

“Go, lend them a hand. Destroy the Space Trample Mountain quickly!” Li Qiye issued his command while pointing at the sky.

“Affirmative!” Arcane Guru acknowledged the order. He carried a golden coffin with both hands into the sky and chased after Mu Shaodi.

This was an incredible scene. Mu Shaodi’s fame had been around for 50,000 years, and many people were quite afraid of him. Meanwhile, Arcane Guru had the strength of a God-Monarch. But now, all of them were obeying Li Qiye while acting respectful like juniors.

Li Qiye glared in the ancient kingdom’s direction and slowly spoke: “Lianxiang, I’ll leave the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom to you!”

She softly said: “Don’t worry, if you don’t want them to see the rising sun tomorrow, they never shall.”

“Boom!” The void was shattered. With unparalleled speed, she immediately crossed through countless realms to arrive at the

ancient kingdom.

Alarms immediately rang at the kingdom. One ancestor shouted: “Who is it!”

“The person who shall end your kingdom!” Her fair hand swept by. There was an immediate sensation that the world was collapsing. The ancestral ground of the ancient kingdom was torn asunder along with its grand formation.

“Rumble!” After noticing the powerful attack, imperial weapons flew out from the ancestral ground, including true treasures.

The divine guardian beast of the kingdom eventually shouted: “Fellow Daoist, we have no grievances or feuds, why are you attacking our kingdom?!”

She domineeringly declared: “My man’s will is the high heaven’s mandate! If he wants to destroy the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom, it shall be no more!”

With that, she took out the Yin Yang Immortal Refining Mirror. “Boom!” Yin and Yang reversed. Two rays of immortal lights descended and shattered the kingdom. One imperial weapon was blown away after another.

“Is this the cataclysm?” Everyone quivered before this blow that caused the entire Mortal Emperor World to quake!

“Open!” The divine beast had to personally come out after seeing the invincible Bu Lianxiang. While controlling two Immortal Emperor True Treasures, he rushed straight for her. These were the true fate weapons from Immortal Emperor Qing Xuan and Immortal Emperor San Dao. Under their onslaught, even the stars in the sky were shaking along with the earth.

“You won’t do.” The domineering woman took out a galaxy capable of crossing eons. Time stopped and space was confined. Countless stars orbited her. At this moment, she resembled the master of the nine worlds, the overlord of the celestials.

“Bang!” The two began their devastating fight. The divine beast wanted to suppress her using his two true treasures.

However, she was much more powerful than him, especially the galaxy in her palm. It engulfed myriad dao, so he was the one suppressed instead.

“She, she is far too strong.” The crowd was dumbfounded while watching this scene.

“So overbearing. Only such a woman can be a good match for Fiercest.” Someone murmured in a daze after recalling her words earlier.

“My man’s will is the high heaven’s mandate!” People would become absent-minded while musing these words.

To have a woman like this in life was more than enough!

This might sound strange in English and a bit degrading, but it is normal/expected speech and pronoun/self-address usage in a formal and public event.

Sigh. Now we know that these are actual names, not titles. Usually it is the other way around. Mu Shaodi = Young Emperor Mu; Mu Shaohuang = Young King Mu.

Chapter 1133: Xiao Qingtian

“Bang!” At this moment, Mu Shaodi’s group had already entered the Space Trample Mountain and met the first layer of defense.

“Rumble!” A great cavalry rushed forward like a flood dragon to meet them.

It was much more powerful than the one under Era Sentinel General. The cavalry was unified and was of one mind. Like a flood dragon, it could easily tear its enemies into pieces.

The demon god commander of this cavalry shouted: “Mu Shaodi, this is a land blessed by an Immortal Emperor, you cannot act presumptuously!”

Old Devil smiled and revealed his yellow teeth: “Praiseheaven Demon God, you are only the captain of the inner-guard regiment, yet you still dare to shout at me? Ta Kong was indeed powerful, so when he was alive, I was wary of him. However, it’s not your turn to shout before me. Tell Xiao Qingtian to come out.”

“Kill!” The demon with the title Praiseheaven shouted. He was one with his unit and turned into a flood dragon to kill Mu Shaodi.

“Good, I will test your regiment. Don’t get beaten by me and fall to the ground again.” Old Devil rushed to the sky to fight the demon god and his unit by himself.

The burly man and Arcane Guru didn't say anything. They jumped deeper into the mountain. Mu Shaodi was more than enough to deal with Praiseheaven and his unit.

"Halt your advance!" Another general led a battalion to stop these two. They activated an imperial formation.

"Boom!" An imperial weapon shot to the sky to suppress this region.

"Open!" The golden coffin the guru carried opened. With a buzz, coins flew out and baited the imperial weapon to follow it into the horizon.

"I'm going to take down the formation, you take care of the rest." The guru shouted and jumped into the formation.

"Come!" The burly man who had been quiet the whole time roared. With the clanking of his dragon-like chains, he took on the general.

"Kill them!" The battalion and general rushed forward in a dominating fashion. The burly man wasn't afraid at all. The chains on his arms were his most powerful weapons.

"Rumble!" The fights shook the entire Space Trample Mountain. Under their supreme arts, the sky lit up like fireworks!

"Boom!" The troops led by Praiseheaven collapsed in the face of

Mu Shaodi's powerful offense. The demon god couldn't stop him either and was blown away by one palm strike. His blood stained the blue sky.

Old Devil laughed and declared: "Don't think that just because I was a cowardly turtle back then that these old bones of mine are truly afraid of the Space Trample Mountain."

"Mu Shaodi, that's the young genius who was three to three against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!" Both the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the faraway spectators murmured to each other.

His three unattractive yellow teeth did not take away from his grand aura. At this time, people finally saw the style of the brilliant and peerless young genius back then.

"Ancestor Mu!" Gu Tieshou was tearing up while looking at Mu Shaodi's excited face. This was the pride of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, the invincible ancestor who once threatened the nine worlds and competed for the Heaven's Will against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!

"Xiao Qingtian, come out and fight!" Mu Shaodi shouted and rushed further into the mountain.

At this time, he didn't hide anything and completely let go of his shackles. In just an instant, he reached his peak of the past with great spirits and a touch of haughtiness.

“Rumble!” The burly man working together with Arcane Guru was strong enough. At this moment, Mu Shaodi was the vanguard and killed his way forward with an unstoppable momentum. Despite the mountain’s great resources and power, their generals couldn’t halt their advance.

“Mu Shaodi is truly incredible. No wonder why he could compete with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong back then.” The crowd was in awe.

“Clank!” The sound of a saber sang across the sky. At this moment, the prime general at the top of the Space Trample Mountain stood up. He swung his blade straight down with the scabbard still on.

Despite this, his slash severed the six dao and time itself along with the Yin and Yang as well as the samsara. Gods and devils all had to retreat before this attack.

“Good!” Old Devil cried out. His figure shifted like a dragon as he used a great emperor law to meet this slash directly.

“Bang!” Fiery sparks went flying. Countless mountains seemed to have shattered. The powerful impact from both sides shook this location. Luckily, the impact was in the sky or else the Space Trample Mountain would have been in trouble!

“Thump, thump, thump!” Even the unstoppable young emperor was at a disadvantage after this exchange. He staggered more than ten steps back before stabilizing himself.

A middle-aged man came out from Space Trample. He had an oval face with a pair of starry eyes. He was quite dashing and charming despite his old age.

Each of his steps caused the stars to flip and the sun and moon to lose their brilliance. He was more dazzling than everything else while standing in the sky like the moon at night.

He didn't exude a powerful aura or an endless blood energy. Him casually wielding a long saber with his carefree demeanor already felt quite oppressive; it was as if he was unmatched in this world.

"Prime general—" A darkened ancestor looked at the man and murmured: "Legend states that even Immortal Emperor Ta Kong couldn't defeat this man during his youth."

This was the strongest expert under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. He also competed for the Heaven's Will with the emperor and had never lost to him. He once looked down on the nine worlds while enjoying an illustrious reputation!

"Xiao Qingtian, you finally decide to show yourself!" Mu Shaodi saw him and laughed: "Come, come, we'll fight just like back then."

Xiao Qingtian looked straight at him and replied: "Mu Shaodi, you have been stagnating for several tens of thousands of years after your last defeat. You are no longer my match."

The emperor became a bit dejected after hearing this. He had spent a countless amount of effort because of a certain thing in the last tens of thousands of years, so his cultivation didn't increase at all.

“Haha, Xiao Qingtian, you are right about that.” Mu Shaodi laughed: “My body is indeed aged and I'm really not your match, but I'm still confident in stopping several thousand moves from you!”

Xiao Qingtian replied: “Fine, let me see your supreme arts then.”

“Mu Shaodi, get back.” Li Qiye ordered after seeing the two itching for a fight.

“Your Excellency—” Mu Shaodi was a bit surprised.

“You are not his match. Exchanging several thousand moves is only a waste of time.” Li Qiye said: “Someone else will deal with him.”

“What a shame. Xiao Qingtian, I won't be able to fight you before you die. Truly regrettable.” Mu Shaodi looked over at the prime general and shook his head.

Xiao Qingtian's eyes turned cold after hearing this. He glanced over at Li Qiye with a piercing glare to say: “You must be the current number one of the younger generation, Li Qiye?”

“Yes.” Li Qiye met his gaze and flatly said: “You shouldn’t have provoked me!”

The general was quiet for a bit before proposing: “The Space Trample Mountain has lost today. We can leave and let go of this grudge between us.”

This proposal shocked everyone. This was the arrogant prime general who only respected Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, yet he actually admitted defeat today.

“Unfortunately, it is already too late.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “If you all realized this in the beginning, then the Space Trample Mountain could have survived.”

The general turned fierce with his aura rising to a frightening level. Even the world trembled as it listened to his speech: “I only want to minimize the losses for everyone. I, Xiao Qingtian, am not someone who is afraid of trouble. Moreover, the Space Trample Mountain isn’t the only power here today!”

“I know, the Soaring Immortal Sect is here too!” Li Qiye didn’t mind and only laughed: “Alas, both you and the Soaring Immortal Sect can’t get into my sight. Unless Immortal Emperor Ta Kong is still alive, no one will be able to do anything today.”

“And even if he was here, I would still crucify him on the spot!” Li Qiye revealed a murderous glare. At this moment, everyone felt a chill as if a slumbering monster was awakening after many

generations. Once awakened, even an Immortal Emperor would quiver!

“He shouldn’t have opposed me!” This was a pair of eyes that could instill fear into Godkings.

Such words suffocated everyone. For all these generations, who would dare to talk about killing an Immortal Emperor? No one even uttered such words. There hadn’t been anyone who carried out this task, yet Li Qiye was declaring it today.

However, everyone has been learning that Fiercest was not someone who boasted empty words!

Chapter 1134: One Halberd Rampaging The Nine Heavens

Xiao Qingtian responded: “Very well, I will witness your ultimate arts.”

Li Qiye looked at him and smiled: “Your opponent is not me for my opponent is the Soaring Immortal Sect.”

He didn’t bother to look at Xiao Qingtian after saying this: “Guo Gu, slay him.”

“If Sacred Teacher wants his life, he won’t live to see the light of dawn.” A lazy voice came about. Someone appeared before Xiao Qingtian.

No one saw how he arrived there; it was as if he had been there the entire time.

It was a young man with a lackadaisical appearance. However, this didn’t affect his aura.

No matter where he stood, he would give others the feeling that he was equal to the heavens. This world would topple because of him!

“It’s South Emperor, the Era Evader from the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain!” Someone shouted after seeing him.

Even Xiao Qingtian was shaken to see South Emperor. He had heard of the young emperor's fame before and knew exactly just how great the guy was.

“You are South Emperor, one of the ten grand eonic geniuses?” The prime general was very cautious before this young man ahead of him.

South Emperor freely smiled and said: “Ten grand eonic geniuses? That is flattering me too much. In my opinion, if the list contains twenty eonic geniuses, then I can be on that list.”

Although such words sounded quite humble, people took deep breaths after hearing this. How many geniuses have appeared across the ages? Among them, how many would dare to claim to be among the top twenty? However, South Emperor did so in such a relaxed manner — this was enough to show his confidence.

Xiao Qingtian became very serious. As the prime general, he was a battle-hardened veteran. Even though he had never seen South Emperor before, he immediately knew just how terrifying the young man was from looking at his style.

“Clang—” Xiao Qingtian slowly unsheathed his saber. It was a blade as white as snow and as bright as the stars. With it in his hand, he could sever all things. He was alone in this cosmos; everything else became meaningless.

The spectators felt insignificant before this saber because it could

end all things. Even Godkings felt a bit breathless before it.

“Prime general, one saber to rampage throughout the heavens.” A Godking in the distance saw this saber and felt a chill. This person knew that he was no match for Xiao Qingtian.

“Wonderful, to be able to cultivate the dao of the saber to this level. It is not enough to just call you the prime general.” South Emperor smiled leisurely and reached out: “Halberd, come!”

“Buzz!” The [Sky Piercer Halberd](#) flew out of the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain. It crossed the world and fell into the hands of South Emperor.

“One halberd to rampage throughout the nine heavens!” An ancestor who came from the Barren Earth recalled a legend the moment he saw South Emperor wielding the halberd. It was a legend that would excite all listeners.

It told that there was a genius in the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain. As long as the halberd was in his hands, he could rampage throughout the nine heavens and no one could surpass him! Who would have thought that this genius turned out to be South Emperor?

The ancestor was startled before this sight. In a split second, it was as if he saw an Immortal Emperor. It was a pity that he couldn't take the last step to become an emperor.

With the halberd, South Emperor suddenly changed completely. He was no longer carefree and relaxed for he had become a pillar supporting the sky. He exuded a violent aura as if he was the only person left in this world. Thus, no one could surpass him. He stood there among the earth and all the other geniuses had to retreat before his presence.

[“Nine Heavens Rampaging Thrust.”](#) South Emperor gently lamented: “Across the long years, is there still someone who can withstand the ultimate strike from the Sky Piercer?”

This was an extremely domineering statement, but everyone who heard him right now was silent. He truly wasn't bragging.

Back then, he was the arch-rival of Empress Hong Tian. Although he gave up from competing for the Heaven's Will in the end, no one dared to look down on him.

South Emperor stared at Xiao Qingtian and slowly said: “I have always been unarmed after the battle back then, but today, you are worthy of seeing my halberd.”

He could be described as someone who held the nine heavens in disdain, but he did not show such contempt in this battle against the prime general. It was a showing of respect.

“It is my honor.” Xiao Qingtian held his saber with both hands and slowly moved it vertically in front of him. When his body pulsed, the entire world pulsed. A portal seemed to be appearing as his voice echoed across the world: “Saints from the Soaring

Immortal Sect, it is time for you to grace this battlefield!”

“Clank!” With that, he cut through the void and illuminated the nine continents. Under this slash, everyone felt their soul leaving their body and their strength being sapped from within.

“Well done.” South Emperor laughed before this attack. He stepped once and immediately soared into the far horizon. He watched the snow-white slash approaching and slightly shifted his halberd back.

“Boom!” A huge star cracked in the sky before more exploded with blinding flashes.

His halberd began to dance; the whole sky was pulled in by its rhythm. This area turned into a black hole and, with the halberd’s rotation, it slowly turned into a vortex.

The saber slash cut the spinning black hole and severed it right away. A terrifying scar was left in the sky.

“Clank!” Despite the blade managing to cut the vortex, the halberd’s momentum didn’t stop. It thrust forward through time itself, a thrust capable of killing deities. Even Godkings would feel their knees giving in.

Xiao Qingtian crazily shouted: “Die!” He lunged towards the sky with his saber ready to stop South Emperor’s Sky Piercer!

The two peak existences fought in the deep recesses of the sky. Even though their battlefield was very far away from the Space Trample Mountain, the horrifying force still loomed over the world. Countless cultivators in the Mortal Emperor World were alarmed and found themselves lacking in the face of this power.

“A top-level fight!” A powerful Virtuous Paragon opened his heavenly gaze to look at the distant battle. At this time, many people were very curious, but they didn’t dare to go up there and watch.

“Buzz!” At the same time, a huge portal emerged above the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. An immortal light spewed out from it.

People could faintly see divine peaks inside the portal. There were countless swaying trees and blooming lotuses. Immortal birds were flying with springs surging like waterfalls and pouring down from the sky.

“Is that the immortal world?” Many people were shocked after looking through the portal and felt that they were simply frogs at the base of a well. This alone was enough to let them imagine how great the world behind the portal was.

“No, that’s the Soaring Immortal Sect.” A God-Monarch who came to watch the fun paled and murmured: “The Soaring Immortal Sect is coming, they want to descend to the Mortal Emperor World. It hasn’t appeared during the three generations ruled by the Black Dragon King, so it looks like they have finally lost their patience.”

“Buzz—” Many Soaring Immortal disciples equipped with armor flew out from the portal in the sky.

“Scram as far away as possible in my presence!” Li Qiye’s eyes turned serious. He slightly waved his right palm and the triangular building immediately rushed to the sky.

“Pluff! Pluff! Pluff!” It decapitated the first group of disciples that exited the portal.

“So untethered! This is simply enraging the Soaring Immortal Sect!” Regardless of how many disciples were descending, they were all beheaded one by one. The spectators were shocked to see each head flying. This was not just a massacre, it was a direct mental suppression.

For eons, how many people would dare to kill the disciples of this sect? But now, Li Qiye was doing so in such a blatant manner. This scene was too domineering.

“Bang!” Eventually, powerful characters from the Soaring Immortal Sect finally descended. Six God-Monarchs came out with six imperial weapons to immediately fortify the area, stopping the triangular weapon in its tracks. It allowed the other disciples to come down to this world.

The six God-Monarchs shouted: “Who dares to be so impudent?!” They looked incredibly young. A guess would put them at around thirty, yet they were very powerful and aggressive.

An ancestor muttered: “This behemoth is way too strong. Even the oldest of these God-Monarchs was still born during the Difficult Dao Era.”

Everyone knew that in present times, no one in the Mortal Emperor World has become a God-Monarch at such a young age. Even geniuses born during the Difficult Dao Era had yet to reach this level!

Anyone would be moved to see these young God-Monarchs. If the sect could send out God-Monarchs this easily, what level would an ancestor have reached?

“Reaching God-Monarch from that generation... no lineage in the nine worlds has the capability to produce such disciples.” Many sect masters became envious, even the ones from imperial lineages.

The generation they were referring to was the young ones who were born during the Difficult Dao Era. No one from this generation has become a God-Monarch in the nine worlds yet.

This is the name of Lu Bu’s weapon, popularized by him in fiction. Dynasty Warriors was one of my favorite series growing up. I recommend playing this game and then reading the Three Kingdoms. It was a bit of a dry read however, especially in English. The Vietnamese version was fine, but I found myself skipping a lot of the poetic verses and songs; I probably read it 5-10 times already, skipping the sad sections. Maybe Chinese readers appreciated the poetry more than I did.

Here is another difficulty with titles and phrases in translation. The problem lies in flow/grammar versus a proper sounding title. In Chinese, there is no distinction in this particular case. The name sounds good and works just fine when used in the narrative. If we were to describe the halberd and the emperor in the legends, then “One halberd to rampage throughout the nine heavens” fits better. If we were to use this name as an attack, which it is in this case, then “Nine Heavens Rampaging Thrust” is better.

Chapter 1135: Benevolent Armament

“Ah!” A shrill scream echoed as a huge body fell from the sky.

“No!” This miserable scream came from the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom.

All eyes turned towards the battlefield at this kingdom. Virtuous Paragons activated their heavenly gazes and gasped with perspiration after seeing this scene.

A pale paragon exclaimed in horror: “The divine beast guardian of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom has been killed!”

Meanwhile, the six God-Monarchs guarding the area stopped the offense from the triangular building. One of them shouted at Li Qiye: “Junior, kneel and accept your death!”

Li Qiye laughed and said: “All of you are far too lacking to demand such things.”

With that, he channeled the triangular building once more.

“Boom!” The building sprayed out endless bright particles. They instantly came together to form a generator. With a deafening blast, the particles shot at the sky-high portal like an erupting volcano.

“Ahh!” The terrifying particle rays rendered many Soaring Immortal disciples into ashes.

The six monarchs had been relying on their six imperial weapons to protect their portal from the onslaught of the building. However, they were unable to withstand it this time. Any disciple who came out was instantly annihilated. If it wasn't for the imperial weapons protecting them, these six monarchs would have been blown to smithereens as well.

“Who dares to act so unbridled!” Another loud shout came about. Three matchless figures flew out of the portal. The suppressive auras of Godkings swept through the world.

Three Godkings have arrived, and one even had an Immortal Emperor True Treasure.

“Boom!” They unleashed an attack capable of stopping the particle beam from the triangular building.

“Such young Godkings!” People were astonished to see the newcomers. All of them were middle-aged men and not white-haired ancestors.

The three of them working together to use a true treasure made the crowd gasp. It was truly scary to see Godkings this young.

“Junior, accept your death!” The three empowered the true treasure again with their gazes fixated on Li Qiye.

Their thunderous shout caused countless people to tremble. It was difficult for many sects to have even one Godking, but now, the Soaring Immortal Sect sent out six God-Monarchs and three Godkings in one go. Just how strong was this sect?

“Still not enough.” Li Qiye smiled and opened his mind.

“Clank!” A pardon decree flew out and floated above his head.

“Boom!” The abandoned ancestral ground of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect shot out a ray of light into the sky. It resembled the opening of a door.

“Clank—” Items flew out from the abandoned ground and gathered near Li Qiye.

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye disappeared. All of the pieces assembled together to form a huge man of steel that appeared before the crowd. With a hum, the triangular building immediately opened and turned into a huge pair of wings before latching onto this steel man.

“Clank!” This metallic being now had two wings. Like two engines, they spewed out a torrent of bright particles.

“I should increase the power a bit.” The metallic being opened its mouth and Li Qiye’s voice echoed from inside.

“Boom!” An imperial pond suddenly emerged from the ancestral ground with lightning pulsing inside. The lightning running through the water that was refined by an Immortal Emperor poured into the metallic being’s frame.

“Boom!” Afterward, the being exuded a terrifying light that encompassed the entire world.

Each beam of light spanned for thousands of miles. This made this metallic contraption even bigger. At this second, it was no different than the master of this world. Each of its gestures could annihilate everything.

“Boom!” The gigantic hand of the being reached out to the skydome and caught a star then crushed it completely.

“Yes, this is the power!” Li Qiye’s voice echoed across the nine heavens! He was truly enjoying this power.

“This is...” At the Heavenly God Sect, Li Shuangyan and the other disciples were surprised to see this scene.

They had seen this gigantic being before at the lost civilization. There were many iron men like this in that place.

However, the girls had a deep impression of these creatures after digging so many out. The huge metallic being ahead was different from the iron men back at the forgotten world.

The other iron men had their own life. Despite having a body made out of metal, they were definitely living creatures. Or at least, this used to be the case.

However, Li Qiye's metallic contraption didn't have its own life. It was just an armor of sorts with a behemoth size!

The girls were right about this. This was not an iron man from the Machine World, it was simply a set of armor. In the past, Li Qiye found a broken set of armor. After referencing the divine blueprints from the lost civilization, he mended the armor and turned it into this contraption that resembled an iron man.

“Benevolent Armament!” A Godking from the soaring sect was shocked to see this. He recalled a particular legend while glaring at the metallic being: “You are the descendant of Immortal Emperor [Min Ren](#)?”

“It is fine for you to think so.” Li Qiye's laughter came from the huge metal creature.

Someone murmured after hearing this: “Benevolent Armament? What is that? I've never heard of it before.”

“Benevolent Armament!” A God-Monarch at the end of his lifespan murmured: “I might have heard of this before. It had appeared once in the legends. Back during his toughest battle, Immortal Emperor Min Ren put on this armor. However, no one saw it again afterward, so it was treated as a rumor from then on.”

“Defend!” The Godkings from the soaring sect were quite alarmed at this moment. They crazily roared as immortal mountains flew out from the portal. The mountain formation formed a huge fortress. It was solid to the point of being impregnable.

“You all are only fledglings.” Li Qiye laughed again inside his metallic armor. The armor placed its hands together.

The particles coming from its palms turned into a huge cauldron and instantly melted this area of space.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The mountain formation was instantly destroyed.

“No!” Miserable screams resounded. The six God-Monarchs were instantly melted. More bellows ensued as two Godkings slowly melted away.

“Bang!” The last Godking used his longevity blood to activate the Immortal Emperor True Treasure. It tore apart the fabric of space and dragged his wounded body back to the Soaring Immortal Sect.

“Bang!” Another loud blast came out. The steel hands crushed the portal. Even the boundaries of this space were melted. If the Soaring Immortal Sect wanted to return to the Mortal Emperor World, they would need to find another method. Otherwise, returning would be an impossibility.

“Eternal exile!” Li Qiye shouted. The steel armor tore open the void again and opened different temporal layers. With buzzing noises, it banished the Soaring Immortal Sect forever. The immortal sceneries in the sect were nowhere to be found.

“Eternal exile.” A big shot gasped and murmured after seeing this: “The Soaring Immortal Sect has suffered a great loss this time. The space they used to enter the nine worlds has been banished forever. They have to start over from the beginning if they want to come back. It will require a lot of Immortal Emperor Refined Jades to rebuild this space-time path.”

This scene was so shocking that the entire world went silent. Who could stop a sect with five emperors once they were here?

But today, Li Qiye didn’t only massacre countless disciples, he even killed six God-Monarchs and two Godkings. The biggest loss was his banishment of the sect’s path to the nine worlds. If they wanted to return, they must pay a huge price. And even then, it would still take a long time.

“Clank—” The huge armor left Li Qiye’s body. Pieces fell down to the ground one after another.

“Boom!” The triangular building landed on the Heavenly Crow Peak as if nothing had happened.

Li Qiye was still Li Qiye. He stood in that same spot with his usual nonchalant attitude.

However, a lot of people were shivering. They were awed and terrified by Fiercest. Even Godkings wouldn't dare to oppose him.

“Benevolent Armament.” Gu Tieshou became absent-minded. He never knew that Cleansing Incense had such a thing. They had never heard of their patriarch, Immortal Emperor Min Ren, creating this imperial weapon before.

However, they didn't know that it wasn't an imperial weapon created by Immortal Emperor Min Ren, it was an armor modified by Li Qiye that required a huge amount of lightning essence to power it up. Moreover, this lightning essence must be refined by an Immortal Emperor in order to be effective.

I would translate Min Ren as Benevolent now. Benevolent Immortal Emperor. Min = Wisdom/Bright while Ren = Mercy/Humane.

Chapter 1136: Sweeping Through The Opposing Horde

The entire vicinity fell into a lull. The spectators found it difficult to regain their composure. Many of them were still slack-jawed to the point of their chins almost hitting the ground.

A bystander eventually murmured: “So domineering...” In fact, there was no other word to describe this besides “domineering.”

Perhaps one could use “invincible” or “tyrannical” as substitutes, but “domineering” was still the most appropriate.

To directly banish the pathway of the Soaring Immortal Sect... Outside of Immortal Emperors, it was likely that no one else had ever accomplished a task of the same magnitude.

Even a Godking that traveled from far away had to exclaim: “Fiercest alone is enough for this generation. The rest are unnecessary and can’t reach the apex.”

At this second, everyone understood that no one else would try to compete for the Heaven’s Will against Fiercest. Whether it was sweeping through the contemporary or soaring up above the nine heavens or even controlling myriad dao, Li Qiye has established an unsurpassable record. Since the start of time, it was likely that no one in the younger generation had done so much before.

“Is, is he really Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s descendant?” After

hearing the Godking from the soaring sect, some people became suspicious and felt that this was highly likely!

In fact, even the upper echelons of Cleansing Incense glanced at each other. They all knew that Immortal Emperor Min Ren's descendant was Su Yonghuang. She had performed the ancestral recognition rite.

But today, even they felt skeptical about Li Qiye and his relationship to their patriarch.

This was not to say that Su Yonghuang wasn't qualified to be the emperor's descendant. On the contrary, she was quite suitable in both her cultivation of the Solar Physique as well as her own talents, not to mention her ability at leading the sect.

It could be said that among the previous sect masters of the sect, she could be listed among the top five. Thus, no one had ever doubted her roots.

However, Li Qiye was too heaven-defying. His performance made people question his relationship to the emperor. In the past, there was the matter of seeing the emperor in his dreams, and now, he could wear the Benevolent Armament.

If Li Qiye declared to be the imperial prince at this moment, the son of Immortal Emperor Min Ren sealed through time, no one would doubt him at all.

“Boom!” A loud blast echoed across the entire Mortal Emperor World at this time, lighting up the world. Everyone saw an extremely shocking scene. Bu Lianxiang was controlling her galaxy to assault the imperial formation in the deepest location of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom.

She tore apart the earth and a divine light escaped from inside. The capable spectators saw her dragging out the kingdom’s underground treasury. This was an extremely stirring spectacle.

In a short amount of time, the kingdom’s cry could be heard by all. It was swallowed by despair; sad lamentations were heard everywhere.

She had killed their divine beast guardian and also several of their ancestors along the way. After taking the treasury, she didn’t uproot the entire kingdom. With another stomp to crush the spatial void, she returned back to Li Qiye’s side.

Many people murmured to themselves: “It is over for the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom. It is no more...”

Despite not killing to the very last child, Bu Lianxiang had severed its ancestral ground. This meant that even if the kingdom wished to rebuild their land, it would be more difficult than reaching for the heavens. Moreover, with their treasury robbed, it meant that they had lost their treasures and manuals. Even if the kingdom wasn’t divided by others in the future, it was likely that they would still lose all of their imperial laws.

Sect masters were looking at Bu Lianxiang in fear after realizing what she had done to the ancient kingdom.

She annihilated a lineage with two emperors this easily. Even if she wasn't an Emperor Assailant, surely she wasn't far off. Who would dare to oppose such an existence?

“Rumble!” More explosions shook the sky and more screams came from the Space Trample Mountain. The once supreme and unreachable mountain was on the verge of collapse; it could fall at any time.

Mu Shaodi and the other two were quickly rushing inside and showed no mercy. Under the protection of several generals, the mountain was indeed powerful. However, these generals were too weak compared to the prime general, Xiao Qingtian.

These generals could stop other people, but not Mu Shaodi. This was a genius that once competed with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!

Today, even though he was weaker than Xiao Qingtian, these other generals still couldn't compare to him.

“Mu Shaodi lives up to his fame. No wonder why he had such great accomplishments in the past.” Everyone became a fan after seeing his unstoppable rampage.

“It's time to end this. You couldn't take the final step, so it is understandable that you couldn't beat Ta Kong.” A shout

emanated from the sky. It was South Emperor speaking.

At this moment, all the powerful cultivators were gazing at the sky to see the battle between the prime general and South Emperor.

Xiao Qingtian was indeed very powerful. It could be said that one would be hard-pressed to find someone capable of opposing him below the Immortal Emperor realm. Unfortunately, he just had to encounter South Emperor, a genius across the eons!

Despite this being the case, he still managed to hold South Emperor back for a very long time even though he was continuously pummeled back. His offense and defense could be praised as being stellar with his moves and variations.

However, such accomplishments still couldn't oppose South Emperor. Of course, no one mocked or belittled him. His accomplishments were dreams for many people. Many Godkings and Emperor Candidates couldn't reach this level.

“Boom!” At this moment, the sky trembled a bit. In an exceedingly short second, everything disappeared from the eyes of the spectators except for one object — the Sky Piercer.

It floated in the middle of the heaven and earth and continued to assail the nine realms. The entire Mortal Emperor World was being suppressed by this halberd towering in the sky.

It exuded a golden light in a sacred and unstoppable manner. It was the one and only in the nine worlds. Before this halberd, even Immortal Emperor True Treasures lost their colors. This was not to say that it was more powerful than true treasures, it was because true treasures could only unleash their real power in the hands of Immortal Emperors.

The Sky Piercer was South Emperor's true fate weapon. At this moment, he unleashed an unstoppable strike. Outside of Immortal Emperors, no one could stop the halberd even if they were wielding a true treasure.

This scene confirmed one particular notion, that there was no strongest weapon, only the most suitable one. Of course, the strength of the user was part of the equation.

“Nine Heavens Rampaging Thrust!” People recalled the legend of the past while witnessing the halberd oppressing the world. It was vividly being displayed before everyone!

“Bang!” The halberd attacked without any complex transformations. The nine worlds became dark under this halberd. Even if one wanted to escape, there was no place to hide regardless of how vast the nine worlds were. Not even the most mysterious location in this realm could hide from this attack.

One could only meet it directly and either manage to stop it or die. There were no other options.

Xiao Qingtian faced this dilemma at this time. Of course, even if

he had the choice, he wouldn't have chosen escape. He was not a coward, and dying in battle was fine for someone as proud as he.

He shouted: "Open!" With a loud blast, his longevity blood dyed the saber red. At the very last moment, he used his body as an offering for the blade and mustered all of his power with every fiber of his being to slash one last time.

"Buzz—" His body began to burn. In the blink of an eye, the prime general, Xiao Qingtian disappeared. Only his saber was left in this world.

"Clank—" The hymn of the saber echoed across myriad realms. Countless other sabers suddenly emerged. The Mortal Emperor World was shrouded in blades and blades only.

"Clank!" The innumerable sabers all flew out at the same time and began to melt together into this final slash. The firmament was split in half along with the stars as if they were tofu. Meanwhile, the earth was severed into two halves with ease.

"Boom!" This realm quaked. A devastating impact tore apart the starry sky. Countless stars were instantaneously destroyed and turned into ashes.

Everything became smoke before this exchange. Time, space, power... all returned to the origin and primordial chaos. There was nothing else in this area but a chaotic mess.

“Thump!” Eventually, people could finally see the result. South Emperor was shaken and had to take a step back while the blade from the prime general was split into two halves, hovering in the sky.

As for the general, Xiao Qingtian, he was no more.

Chapter 1137: Immortal Emperor

At this time, the world was frozen like a painting with everyone holding their breaths...

In their eyes, even the defeated Xiao Qingtian was worthy of respect. He displayed a power befitting of his prestige. Even though he eventually died along with his dao, this was still a kind of honor.

It was not due to his own weakness, it was because his opponent was too strong. Few could stop this devilish South Emperor. He was the one most likely to become Immortal Emperor as he was only one short step away.

The two halves of the saber were still floating in the sky. They seemed incredibly tranquil, but even those at a higher realm like Godkings still paled before them.

Some people once felt that they were strong enough to look at the world with disdain. But today, they suddenly realized their own limits. Some considered themselves to be insignificant as well.

An ordinary Godking was strong enough, but they were countless times weaker compared to Xiao Qingtian and South Emperor.

But Xiao Qingtian and even South Emperor couldn't oppose a real Immortal Emperor!

“The world is vast, there will always be a better person and a higher mountain.” An old God-Monarch commented with a dejected expression.

Some of the stronger characters here became a bit sentimental. In this battle, even if Xiao Qingtian could stop South Emperor’s attack, he would still have died because he had already offered his body to the saber. There was no way back for him.

Even an invincible existence like the prime general succumbed to death and only left behind two broken halves of his blade for his descendants. Compared to Xiao Qingtian, they couldn’t reach the apex.

“He was a worthy adversary. It has been awhile since I’ve met such a strong opponent in a one-on-one.” South Emperor held his Sky Piercer and nodded his head.

Despite being defeated and dying, to earn such an evaluation from South Emperor was a type of honor; this was respect shown to true masters.

South Emperor now glanced over at the Space Trample Mountain.

“Buzz!” He instantly threw his Sky Piercer towards its direction!

“Rumble!” There seemed to be an endless barrage of meteors slamming into the mountain even before the halberd descended.

The terrain started to shake violently.

“No—” The lucky experts from this sect that survived watched the descending halberd from the sky. They screamed in despair. Once it arrived, there was a chance that the entire mountain would be penetrated.

Everyone assumed that this was going to be the end of the Space Trample Mountain. Its disciples all closed their eyes, devoid of hope.

“This is the end of the Space Trample Mountain...” Someone murmured, unwilling to witness such a scene.

However, there was no destructive impact as expected. There was no explosion either. Once the halberd touched the mountain, the entire world turned quiet.

After a long time, people regained their composure and opened their eyes. They saw that the Space Trample Mountain was still floating in the air.

Something outside of their expectations was happening. A pale hand devoid of a sanguine shade reached out from the ground of the mountain and clutched the Sky Piercer.

Anyone, no matter who they were, would feel an indescribable sensation in their mind after seeing this bloodless hand. It was an ominous and bizarre feeling.

At this time, an archaic door opened on the ground of the mountain. A figure slowly came out then flew into the sky. His appearance was not accompanied by a heaven-shattering blood energy. There was no dazzling brilliance, but the entire universe stopped all the same.

This person in the sky was the lord of the cosmos, the tyrant of myriad realms. He was the overlord of the supreme grand dao and in control of the reincarnation cycle as well as the Yin and Yang.

He was the emperor of the nine worlds — supreme and untouchable; there was no one higher than him.

“Thump, thump, thump!” In a split second, countless people involuntarily kneeled on the ground since their legs failed them.

Even though the newcomer did not have an aura that suppressed all sentient beings, the cultivators here felt an instinctive fear emanating from the depths of their hearts and had no choice but to prostrate.

Even Virtuous Paragons couldn't suppress this primal fear. Only experts above the God-Monarch realm could stand firm. Nevertheless, these God-Monarchs still felt trepidation.

The man in the sky had a square-shaped face and couldn't be described as handsome. However, there was a certain charm and charisma to him. He was dignified and awe-inspiring without having to resort to an angry outburst. People felt that they were in

the presence of an emperor the moment they saw his face. This face represented power, authority, absolute control over all things in the nine worlds!

However, this face was pale without any color.

His eyes were quite large. One could almost imagine just by staring at his eyes how wondrous they must have been back then as they looked down on the rest of the world and how sentient beings used to worship him... Alas, this pair of eyes were now empty. There was only the void within the emptiness without any signs of life or expressions.

Nevertheless, those who looked into his eyes were still amazed. Their heartbeats sped up because this pair of eyes once saw through everything in this world.

“Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!” Even Old Devil was shocked the moment he saw this person and uncontrollably staggered backward.

“Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!” The prostrating crowd lifted their heads to look at this supreme existence in the distance.

This was an untouchable existence. Many people found glory in just looking at the magnificent appearance of an emperor.

“Is that really Immortal Emperor Ta Kong?” Those who had never seen him before murmured to themselves.

The God-Monarchs who were still firm lost their balance after seeing who this supreme existence was. Since they came from his era, they kneeled in astonishment and were dazed from fear.

This was not because these monarchs were too weak, it was because an Immortal Emperor was too powerful. Very few people could stand tall in the face of one. Even Godkings might have to kneel on the ground.

The Godkings who could still stand steady despite their fear glanced at each other. After a while, they realized something: “This, this is not a real Immortal Emperor.”

“It is an imperial corpse.” Li Qiye looked at the person in the sky. His eyes narrowed before speaking: “Incredible. Daring to preserve even an imperial corpse without fear of the potential backlash! It looks like Xiao Qingtian was presiding over the mountain to suppress the corpse.”

An imperial corpse was the body of an Immortal Emperor. Legend states that it was full of terrifying corpse energy. Once it accumulated to a certain level, it could immediately annihilate a Godking.

However, these were only parts of the legend because, for millions of years, no one had seen the corpse of an Immortal Emperor, let alone its energy.

In fact, ever since the Desolate Era until the particularly radiant

Emperors Era, there had always been new emperors. However, no one knew about their final destination.

No one knew whether they could die or not. Perhaps they would eventually turn into the grand dao. In short, across the ages, this remained an unsolved mystery. At the very least, those who couldn't reach a certain level remained ignorant to the answer.

There was a long-running joke among cultivators: "Meeting an Immortal Emperor is an honor, but meeting the corpse of an Immortal Emperor makes you the biggest jackpot winner in history!"

Although this was just a joke, thinking about it some would prove that this was indeed the case. Many people had seen Immortal Emperors before, but no one had seen their corpse.

To see their corpse was a million times more difficult than reaching the heavens.

But today, everyone saw the imperial corpse of Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. This might be the first time in history.

"Patriarch!" The lucky survivors from the Space Trample Mountain were all prostrating and hitting their heads on the ground. They didn't know whether they should be happy or sad. In short, tears ran down their faces as they kowtowed continuously.

Perhaps it was a bittersweet feeling. They were happy to see the

patriarch answering their prayers as the mountain was on the verge of destruction, but only sadness was in their hearts to see their invincible emperor's corpse. This was a devastating blow to the sect!

“The legend is true.” The kneeling spectators were shaken to see the corpse, especially those from the previous generation. They recalled a legend that everyone knew about in this world.

A God-Monarch muttered: “The Black Dragon King really did tear the Heaven's Will apart.”

Another Godking took a good look at the corpse and felt a bit creeped out. He spoke with great astonishment: “The Black Dragon King did more than just that. He probably killed the emperor as well, or maybe both of them perished together. Regardless of the dragon king's fate, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong is truly dead!”

An emperor had fallen. It didn't matter whether his true fate was there or if he was hiding in this world, leaving his body behind was a sign of death! At the very least, it showed that an emperor was defeated and had no choice but to give up his own flesh!

Chapter 1138: Grand Completion Eternal Physique

The majority of the crowd didn't know what to feel while looking at the supreme corpse in the sky. Shock, confusion, respect, or maybe something else?

“The Black Dragon King...” Godkings couldn't calm down at this moment. Seeing the corpse made them instantly think about the dragon king and the battle back then.

Even though no one saw it with their own eyes so no one knew the result, many people found out that both Immortal Emperor Ta Kong and the dragon king disappeared afterward.

Plenty of speculations arose, but none of them could be verified.

But today, all of these speculations could be put to rest. People finally learned the outcome of the battle with the appearance of Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's imperial corpse.

An Immortal Emperor had fallen — anyone would be shocked and aghast upon hearing this. No one should have been able to kill an Immortal Emperor...

Another murmured: “Umm, umm... it must have been mutual destruction back then...” Since both of them disappeared in that year, the crowd thought that the Black Dragon King must have died during that battle as well.

“Imperial Corpse...” South Emperor slightly lifted his hand to recall his Sky Piercer. He licked his lips and was extremely excited as he laughed: “I have fought many supreme geniuses, true gods, and even an Immortal Emperor before, but not an imperial corpse! Very well, I shall do so today.”

South Emperor’s demeanor silenced the crowd. Even Godkings would want to run before an imperial corpse. After all, this was a terrifying existence. Once harmed by this creature, the injuries would last for an eternity. But right now, only excitement could be found in South Emperor.

“Boom!” At this time, the emperor suddenly gave an angry glare. The listless eyes shot out a horrifying light.

“Rumble!” The entire Mortal Emperor World trembled along with the stars in the vast expanse above.

A horrifying scene came next. Sunlight, moonlight, the stars of the celestials — all were devoured and had their power sapped the moment the corpse opened its mouth.

Refined Yang fire and Yin fire essence among other celestial forces were swallowed by the corpse. Their almighty power poured down from the sky like an endless flood.

Many people gasped before this shocking scene and couldn’t close their mouths for a long time. This was a forceful and tyrannical plundering of countless stars. A Godking absolutely couldn’t do

this; it was a feat reserved for Immortal Emperors.

The entire Mortal Emperor World plunged into a terrifying darkness. The world had lost its light and sent into a permanent eclipse.

Many panicked and wondered in astonishment: “Will we have to live in darkness from now on?”

“Boom!” Another loud explosion echoed. Immortal Emperor Ta Kong’s corpse illuminated the entire world. With him as the center, an endless amount of light continued to spew out along with a boundless flame that appeared behind his back. In the blink of an eye, these wondrous forces engulfed the region.

The brilliance emanating from the corpse carried the six dao and refined the Yin and Yang. By doing so, it unlocked the wonders of the heaven and earth.

People felt as if this corpse was holding the universe in its palm, a universe seemingly fragile. By clenching its fist, the corpse could crush anything and everything.

Despite only being a corpse, its imperial aura still suppressed the heavens. Many people under the God-Monarch realm in the Mortal Emperor World were kneeling. They couldn’t withstand the pressure of an emperor.

“Immortal Emperor!” Some experts were chanting in awe while

kneeling on the ground.

“Good!” The excited South Emperor laughed and roared: “Let me see just how powerful you are!”

With that, he no longer restrained his blood energy. It swallowed the sky and quaked countless stars. What was more frightening were the fate palaces that jumped into this world.

“Eleven fate palaces!” Someone shouted in horror after seeing his palaces: “A miracle across the eons!”

Those with eleven palaces earned the phrase “a miracle across the eons.” This was an Emperor Candidate with eleven palaces, someone who was only one step away from being an Immortal Emperor — a truly formidable being.

People who knew about his legends finally realized why others called him the most extraordinary genius. His talents were exceedingly rare, even across the long trek of time!

People watched with bated breath. Very few people in history could challenge an Immortal Emperor successfully. The corpse ahead could easily slay a Godking.

However, they also knew that this South Emperor before them was qualified to challenge an Immortal Emperor!

Suddenly, Li Qiye raised his brows and told South Emperor:

“Little Guo, get back. Someone else is here to deal with him.”

South Emperor's eyes flashed. He sensed something and gazed over at the corpse to say with emotion: “What a shame!”

Then he quickly retreated without further objections.

This new development came as a surprise to the spectators. Who else here was qualified to challenge Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's corpse besides South Emperor? But now, Li Qiye told South Emperor to retreat — this was quite unbelievable.

“Bang!” The void shattered. Before people caught on to what was going on, the corpse suddenly turned around. The world turned with him while the stars pulsed unstably. Even the slightest shift of this body could shatter space and time.

Such power left people speechless. They slowly came to understand what a real invincible being was.

In the blink of an eye, a figure emerged at the Heavenly Dao Academy in the Eastern Hundred Cities. This person took one step to cross the eastern region and another to cross the Grand Middle Territory before appearing in the sky above Cleansing Incense.

Even the corpse became serious after seeing this newcomer that seemingly appeared out of thin air.

A woman, one that couldn't be described by the brush. If being

ordinary was a type of beauty, then it has vividly culminated in this woman to the extreme.

Regardless of whether she was ordinary or beautiful, the moment she appeared before everyone, the world could only look up to her without any profane thoughts.

Her body slowly emitted a radiance that was gentle and visually pleasing. This light illuminated the entire Mortal Emperor World. Everyone felt an eternal power — warm and everlasting.

While bathed in these rays of light, people felt as if they were being reborn. Time did not flow, so it did not age people. Everything returned to the ancient period before time itself. The crowd went back to the origin of life, the beginning without an end.

“Eternal Physique!” A Godking eventually woke up while bathing in this soft light. He understood the mysteries inside and screamed in horror: “This is a legendary grand completion Immortal Physique, the Eternal Physique at grand completion!”

“Grand completion Eternal Physique!” From vagrant cultivators to Godkings, everyone was shocked to hear this. It was even more astonishing to hear this compared to the coming of an Immortal Emperor.

“Eternal Physique at grand completion...” An ancient Virtuous Paragon murmured: “Could it be that she has reached the mythical state of everlasting life?”

In just a short period of time, the world was stupefied. Even Bu Lianxiang and Mu Shaodi were dazed. A grand completion Eternal Physique was too unbelievable and even more shocking than seeing an imperial corpse.

In history, there had been many grand completion Immortal Physiques. The world had seen grand completion Hell Suppressing and Indestructible Diamond among other physiques. However, no one had heard of the Eternal Physique reaching grand completion.

There was a belief in the cultivation world, and it was that reaching grand completion Eternal Physique was a million times more difficult than becoming an Immortal Emperor. In fact, this was proven with time. One Immortal Emperor appeared after another, but never has the world seen a grand completion Eternal Physique.

Today, everyone stood witness to a one and only miracle across the eons — a grand completion Eternal Physique.

“Is she truly immortal?” Many people were lost, especially the older generation. They were stimulated by their greatest desire.

All along, many had pursued eternal life, especially the stronger cultivators. All would have to face one problem in the end — death!

Death was the one thing powerful existences weren’t willing to face. Despite the ultimate pursuit, it was a fruitless endeavor.

However, seeing this physique today made the experts catch a glimmer of hope towards true eternal life.

While looking at the woman in the sky, no one truly knew whether this physique at grand completion could grant eternal life or not.

“Who is she?” They glanced at each other. No one knew who she was or her origin because no one had seen her before.

This unidentified woman had reached grand completion — this was completely inconceivable to the spectators.

Chapter 1139: The Invincible Magu

Li Qiye stared at Magu in the sky and couldn't help but smile. It was a smile that even he couldn't describe. He suddenly felt a bit dazed while murmuring: "You are my pride, a reason for my arrogance."

Throughout the countless moons, he had trained too many invincible existences. For him, even producing an Immortal Emperor was not difficult. All along, the thing he thought to be the most challenging was training someone who could reach grand completion with the Eternal Physique.

He had tried many times. Regardless of how great their dao heart and talents were, they all ultimately failed in cultivating the Eternal Physique.

However, this unpromising little girl whom many deemed to be stupid and forsaken by her parents went against all expectations. She persevered to the end and created an unprecedented miracle across the eons, one that belonged only to her.

In the distant years when Li Qiye used to be the Dark Crow, he had no hope for this little girl who couldn't even remember a single incantation. Nevertheless, the thirst for knowledge in her eyes moved him. In a sense, he simply felt pity for her.

Who would have thought that this girl who couldn't remember anything managed to cultivate the Eternal Physique to grand completion? This was something that had never been done before.

Even Immortal Emperors couldn't do it!

“This is who I'm most proud of in my life.” Li Qiye murmured while peering at Magu. Even the unrelenting Dark Crow would feel like giving up after numerous failures, but Magu gave him hope and allowed him to test and see a miracle of the eons.

The shocked Old Devil murmured to himself: “A peak Virtuous Paragon with a grand completion Eternal Physique! She is too powerful and can definitely assail even a living Immortal Emperor!”

The title “Emperor Assailant” carried a heavy weight. Not just anyone could claim to be able to harm an emperor, not even invincible Godkings.

Old Devil was not one who jumped to conclusions quickly, but he understood just how terrifying the woman in the sky was. The grand completion Eternal Physique wouldn't fear even a living emperor.

“Heavenly Dao Academy's Magu — I've only heard of her fame but haven't met her yet. To see her today is the blessing of three lifetimes.” South Emperor was also full of admiration.

In fact, anyone who could reach grand completion with this physique was worthy of reverence.

Someone like Bu Lianxiang was shaken as well after seeing Magu

as she exclaimed: “A flawless Eternal Physique — this is truly unbelievable. This level of Immortal Physique is untouchable. Her current state can harm an Immortal Emperor without a doubt!”

Having said that, she glanced over at Li Qiye. She had triple saint attributes and was someone who was cultivating an Immortal Physique as well. She had a profound understanding of these physiques, so after seeing Magu’s Eternal Physique, she understood the implications within.

The Eternal Physique had never appeared before. She recognized that in order to cultivate a flawless physique like this, one would require a perfect immortal physique law. In this regard, no physique law could exceed those found in the Physique Scripture, the most immaculate physique manual in the world. Thus, Bu Lianxiang understood after seeing Magu that this supreme masterpiece must have come from Li Qiye.

“Emperor Assailant!” Everyone was astonished after hearing Old Devil. The power of this realm had exceeded their scope of imagination. It was not a field that they could reach.

“Buzz!” Immortal Emperor Ta Kong’s corpse finally took action. He didn’t use an imperial law or suppress the heavens. His hand simply pierced the void and headed straight for Magu’s heart.

This ordinary and direct attack made the crowd tremble. A Godking couldn’t block this attack. Their chest would be pierced right away.

However, Magu didn't budge before this move. She didn't even need to do anything; the light that was being shot out from her body was flashing continuously.

Just like that, time seemed to pass extremely slowly. Countless years went by in just the blink of an eye. Everyone felt this disturbance in time.

It didn't matter that the corpse's hand was very close to Magu, they knew that distance was not an issue. This hand was hundreds of thousands of years away from Magu.

The hand needed to cross the long river of time, but time would deteriorate all things.

Everyone could see a bizarre scene. Even though the hand was inches from her, it moved slower than a snail. The more freakish part was that the hand started to change. It became full of wrinkles and then the skin started to peel. Eventually, even the muscles of the palm began to fall off.

Even though this hand was extremely pale prior to this, there was no sign of aging. However, once it tried to cross this area of space, even this hand of an emperor started to wither.

The crowd took deep breaths when they saw the emperor's hand falling apart. The body of an emperor was indestructible. It could even be said that it was tougher than Immortal Emperor True Treasures. But now, the skin and muscles on this hand were shedding from aging. Just how terrifying was this scene?

“The power of time!” A big shot realized something and murmured: “For the Eternal Physique, time is the most worthless concept, but it is also the most precious!”

This small distance was separated by thousands of years. If Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was alive, he would definitely be able to cross this temporal space, but not his corpse.

In an instant, the corpse withdrew its hand. This was when Magu decided to take action; however, it wasn't in the form of an attack.

She simply stepped forward at a rapid pace, leaving a footprint behind each time. A grand pathway began to form below her feet. It was a path that even emperors couldn't evade for it was a dao path of time.

The corpse fell into this new dao pathway. Sizzling sounds suddenly came about while it was trapped in the middle. Its body began to change with more wrinkles and shedding.

This was the power of time. There was no attack or suppression; Magu only had to wait for time to quietly flow.

However, there was nothing more frightening in this world than time. Time accelerated the aging process. Once it finished its flow, it meant that one would reach the lamentable path of death.

“Boom!” The corpse recalled all of its fiery flames. They turned

into a giant cocoon that contained the forces of the heaven and earth. It was repelling the passage of time.

“Zzz—” However, despite the protection from the cocoon, it still couldn’t stop time. Time was invisible and indiscernible. Regardless of one’s defensive method, they wouldn’t be able to stop the flow of time.

“Hum!” When the cocoon couldn’t stop time any longer, all the flames spread out again. The corpse began to walk faster to chase after Magu.

The corpse only had one thing on its mind: only by catching up and killing Magu would it be able to solve this time crisis. Otherwise, even the strongest attack or an invincible defense wouldn’t be able to stop this temporal phenomenon.

How fast was an Immortal Emperor? One could cross the nine worlds with just one step. However, distance was not the problem in this temporal dao path. The main separator between Magu and the corpse was several hundred thousand years of time!

Regardless of how fast the corpse was, it couldn’t catch up to Magu. Meanwhile, the faster it was, the faster the process of aging it experienced. Ten thousand years passed in just the blink of an eye.

More sizzling noises came about. The muscles on this corpse began to fall off. This body that couldn’t be cut by a true treasure was on a steady decline inside this pathway. It was not able to

withstand the power of time.

“Boom!” The corpse decided to stop chasing at this moment. It waved its hand and myriad dao of this world converged together to form a portal.

“Buzz!” This portal refined by an emperor opened. The corpse immediately went through the portal to appear in a different area. However, time continued to pass. It didn’t matter that it had entered a new spatial zone. Time was still passing for he was still inside the temporal dao path.

There was no way to evade this level of confrontation unless it could escape to a location without time; there had to be no beginning and no end. Unfortunately, both the nine worlds and outer space had no places that could avoid the dao of time.

“Bang!” All of the corpse’s flames came together once more to form an attack. It derived the ultimate profundity of the grand dao. The nine worlds shook before the oncoming calamity. Countless living beings in the Mortal Emperor World kneeled and were scared for their lives.

This blow from an Immortal Emperor carried an unimaginable power! Many thought that the world was about to collapse before this attack.

“Crack!” The corpse managed to smash apart a section of the dao of time. However, this was of no use. The fragmented part was simply replaced in a second. Time would always exist. Even if one

broke some of it off, the flow would still continue to affect them just like before.

Chapter 1140: Fallen Imperial Corpse

“Rumble!” The corpse continued to hammer the temporal dao pathway time after time. Each blow carried a power capable of destroying the world. If he smashed the Grand Middle Territory in the same manner, it would sink down right away.

The path below his feet shattered continuously. However, there was no effect in breaking these small sections. It didn't stop the flow of time, the coming of the future. The body of the corpse continued to erode with flesh and bits falling off. There were some fragile areas that had already shed to the bones.

The world shook before its continuous rampage. The other regions in the Mortal Emperor World could feel this force as well. Countless beings were frightened because of it.

They felt that the end of the world was swiftly approaching. It was as if each smash was straight on top of their head. It didn't matter who they were, one strike would render them to ashes.

The masses were secretly praying for this battle to end early so that all sentient beings in this world could escape this disaster.

Magu walked forward as time quietly flowed. Each of her steps increased the temporal dao pathway's length by another ten thousand years. This was a type of serenity for the heaven and earth. Only time was allowed to pass.

Regardless of how the corpse struggled, it couldn't truly destroy

this dao of time. Without a doubt, this corpse was very powerful, but it still wasn't a real Immortal Emperor, thus it had a long way to go before matching up against Magu.

The spectators gasped to see just how helpless the corpse was. Even Godkings found themselves lacking.

In the depths of an imperial lineage, a Godking that had been slumbering for many generations climbed up. He looked at the sky and murmured: "A flawless grand completion physique on top of being a peak paragon. Outside of Immortal Emperors, no one else in this world is qualified to face her."

"Boom!" In an instant, the corpse exuded the power of the world that it devoured earlier along with an endless corpse energy. Sizzling sounds could be heard with the corpse energy's emergence. Even the stars in the sky were being corrupted and eroded by its power!

"The imperial corpse's energy!" Even Godkings were alarmed after seeing this.

According to an unbelievable legend, once these corpses accumulated this type of baleful energy to a certain level, it would destroy a Godking instantly.

There was no doubt that this corpse had been processed and perhaps even sealed. Otherwise, the Space Trample Mountain would have been turned into ashes long ago by this horrifying energy.

But now, the corpse had broken the seal and all of its corpse energy erupted. In a short period of time, this energy wove together with the grand dao to form a half black and half white imperial sword. The world shook before its appearance. Myriad dao and laws began to wail in lamentation. They were forced to the ground and couldn't move.

“Bang!” The sword slashed forward with a might capable of flattening the world. Even someone like Old Devil quivered before its strength.

“Boom!” The sword finally shattered the temporal dao. A beautiful five-color radiance began to disperse from the pathway in a majestic and magnificent manner.

“Clank!” The corpse unleashed another slash straight at Magu. It was swift to the point where Old Devil couldn't see its trajectory at all. Right when it was about to cut into her body, it suddenly stopped along with all noises in the world.

Those who were capable of seeing this were gasping in astonishment. This slash was too terrorizing and definitely capable of slaying all deities in this world.

However, the serenity became endless along with everything else. It all happened in a split second, but this split second was extended to the span of millions of years.

During this moment, boundless temporal forces suddenly rushed

out in a ferocious manner. Magu also disappeared.

If the temporal pathway earlier was a gurgling stream, then the current temporal dao was a flood that engulfed the world, a flood capable of destroying everything.

With one million years as the unit, time kept on pouring down in the form of a brilliance that bathed the imperial corpse.

In fact, Magu did not disappear for she was standing there the whole time. The spatial location might be the same, but the temporal sphere was different. She was millions of years away. This made the imperial sword completely ineffective against her.

“Ah!” The corpse devoid of life unexpectedly screamed while being bathed by the great temporal light.

At this time, people saw a magical scene. The ray that contained millions of years pierced the corpse. It immediately dispersed into countless particles that were swept away by the river of time.

“No...” The remaining generals of the Space Trample Mountain screamed and couldn’t accept this outcome.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” After the corpse was disintegrated into particles by time, all of the power it devoured returned to where they came. Refined Yang fire and Yin fire essence along with the radiance of the stars all came back to the cosmos where they belonged.

The Mortal Emperor World regained its light. The sun was still hanging above the vault of the heavens and the moon was still hiding deep in the blue recesses of space. Of course, the stars flickered far on the horizon.

After seeing that the world was still here and the celestials were still bright, people felt like survivors of a great disaster.

The world turned silent right away. Both the Grand Middle Territory and even the entire Mortal Emperor World was drowned in silence. One could hear the drop of a needle anywhere in this realm.

It seemed that even living beings didn't dare to breathe. They all looked up at the sky to stare at Magu. The most ordinary woman became the world's most beautiful scene.

Anyone would tremble inside. From start to finish, Magu didn't even attack. She simply released a temporal dao pathway and it destroyed an imperial corpse.

Both Godkings and reclusive undyings wouldn't be enough against such a powerful existence. At this time, they were all looking up at her.

An old undying from the previous generation murmured to himself while trembling: "An Emperor Assailant truly exists in the present..."

For millions of years, not many Emperor Assailants had appeared. After all, some of them did not have a good end because it wasn't a good thing to oppose emperors.

Thus, they were a legend of sorts. Not many had seen these assailants until today, where they stood witness to their level of power.

Old Devil was somewhat dazed and murmured to himself: "Who can surpass this flawless immortal physique that allows her to do as she pleases?"

Such words woke up a lot of people, especially the powerful ones who understood the implications.

Think about it, an Emperor Assailant was Li Qiye's dao protector, who in this world would dare to compete for the Heaven's Will against him anymore? Who would want to cross this unstoppable woman?

As Fiercest, no one in the younger generation could defeat him. Nevertheless, a few ancient existences still felt that this didn't mean that he himself was unbeatable. The Space Trample Mountain had this thought, and the same went for the Soaring Immortal Sect.

This belief ignited the battle today. The young was no match for Li Qiye, so the old wanted to join together to kill him. From then on, there would be a new forerunner for the Heaven's Will.

But now, an Emperor Assailant has appeared. Moreover, she was clearly on the side of Fiercest!

“Li Qiye will surely become the Immortal Emperor of this generation.” Even Godkings who had ideas about killing Li Qiye were deterred and could only remove this thought. They had to tuck their tails obediently in order to stay alive.

Today, it didn’t matter how strong Li Qiye himself was. Those who dared to stop him would have to deal with those on his side first. Magu, the Middle Continent Princess, South Emperor, and even characters like Mu Shaodi — this group was already unstoppable.

Chapter 1141: I Alone Am Invincible

Someone looked at South Emperor in the sky, then glanced over at Magu and finally stopped on Bu Lianxiang next to Li Qiye. He was shocked and murmured: “Could this be considered the strongest dao protection team?”

“No...” After a long time, the disciples from the Space Trample Mountain finally regained their sanity. At this time, Old Devil didn’t need to do anything since the mountain was already on the verge of collapse.

The disciples fell butt-first to the ground. The things that collapsed were their confidence and dignity. All was destroyed as the Immortal Emperor’s corpse turned to ashes.

For so many years, these disciples were proud of their background of hailing from the Space Trample Mountain. Their patriarch, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, was their glory and their spiritual totem. Because of the emperor, the mountain came into being.

But now, his corpse has turned into smoke. Everything has collapsed for them. Even if Old Devil didn’t destroy the mountain, they were powerless, fish on the chopping block.

“Time to end it all.” Li Qiye coldly glanced at the world. He stood calmly in the sky, but everyone was in fear and awe while looking at him.

From today on, anyone and any lineage would have to take the long way around him. Provocation was out of the question.

“First Brother is invincible!” Cleansing Incense’s disciples also calmed down and cheered. They were quite happy; some even started crying.

Not long before, the sect was under siege and was hanging on a thread. However, once Li Qiye was back, he blocked the torrential waves and saved the sect while killing his enemies. Both the mountain and ancient kingdom, these behemoths, were annihilated by their First Brother.

Even the older generation like Gu Tieshou was sighing nonstop. He recalled the days of decline and the painful times under the shadow of the Heavenly God Sect. For them, the Space Trample Mountain and Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom were monsters. If these lineages decided to invade them, there was nothing they could do to prevent being annihilated.

However, everything was changed today. All the patterns were flipped over since Li Qiye came back. These two lineages were now meaningless and insignificant. They were destroyed in just one day. Even the arrogant Soaring Immortal Sect was banished forever!

Strength? Invincibility? Both were on full display in the purest form!

The suspense and worries were gone after the battle was over. Bai

Jianzhen and Li Shuangyan's group led some disciples to attack the Heavenly God Sect. They defeated them completely, so Cleansing Incense was able to regain its lost territory overnight.

There had been other great powers who occupied the sect's land back then as well. Today, they obediently handed the land back and even gave up parts of their own territories to make amends.

Thus, Cleansing Incense was not only able to recapture their old territory, they also expanded quite a bit. No lineage dared to have any ideas about Cleansing Incense anymore. Many sects who had offended them quickly sent messengers to beg for forgiveness. Of course, they couldn't meet Li Qiye, only Gu Tieshou saw them.

It was a very hard day for these great powers. One by one, they came to humbly apologize. The ones with greater offenses kowtowed on the ground while offering tributes.

For those who were under the rule of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom and Heavenly God Sect, they were willing to do anything as long as Cleansing Incense forgives them.

Who would dare to oppose Cleansing Incense right now? The Space Trample Mountain and the ancient kingdom were the best examples. Imperial lineages were destroyed just like that. Even the soaring sect was banished.

The end of this war signaled a long silence. Many people found it difficult to compose themselves due to the fear. Li Qiye's domineering attitude and Magu's invincibility deterred the entire

Mortal Emperor World.

“In present times, even a more brilliant genius would only be a stepping stone for Li Qiye.” Eventually, ancestors from imperial lineages called for their favorite genius disciples and told them to not come out anymore.

These ancestors understood that competing against Li Qiye for Heaven’s Will would be in vain. Even the most excellent and wonderful talent would only become dry bones on Li Qiye’s path towards Immortal Emperor.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was very quiet and peaceful right now as the excited disciples have calmed down. This serenity was granted by Magu’s appearance.

She and Li Qiye were in a room alone. He sat in his chair while staring at this woman that was ordinary yet beautiful to the extreme and sighed emotionally.

“Teacher, I have really done it.” She found it difficult to hide her happiness.

Li Qiye also smiled and said: “Grand completion Eternal Physique, ah. A miracle of the eons. Compared to you, what are Immortal Emperors and gods? An unyielding dao heart and supreme talents, both of these are nothing as well.”

Magu sat next to him and happily stated: “This is to Teacher’s

credit. Without your guidance, I wouldn't have any of these accomplishments right now." At this time, she became a little girl again with an unchanging heart.

"No." Li Qiye gently shook his head: "This is not my credit but yours alone. [I simply embroidered more flowers on the brocade.](#)"

With that, he stroked her silky hair.

"Teacher, you are the only one in this world who could pass down the supreme art to me. Only you didn't discriminate or look down on me." Magu spoke calmly.

The past was as insipid as flowing water to her. Even a more painful experience would be nothing to her now. She was no longer affected by them; her childlike innocence still remained and made her even happier.

Li Qiye felt a bit sad after hearing this. Magu's current achievements were quite dazzling. She could even view Immortal Emperors in disdain because she had done something that no one else had ever accomplished. The most amazing person was her.

But how many people knew that behind these accomplishments was boundless bitterness? This little girl back then was a rotten piece of wood that couldn't be carved, a slow-witted idiot in the eyes of others! Even her biological parents gave up on her. Ultimately, the only person who gave her a chance was a dark crow.

“This is all because you have worked hard and fought for it.” He said: “Back then when I passed the Eternal Physique down to you, it was because your inquisitive eyes moved me. At that time, nothing was more precious than those eyes; they’re like the pearls buried in the sand.”

“There is a lot of unfairness and suffering in this world.” He lamented again: “But there is one thing that is the same for everyone, a keenness for knowledge.”

“This is true for both the rich and poor.” He explained: “A heart anxious to learn is natural. Chasing the unknown, craving for comprehension — these are a person’s indelible instincts.”

“Nothing in this world can destroy the will to search for the unknown, an instinctive thirst for knowledge. Once a person perseveres in this search, they would be able to change like a cocoon turning into a butterfly.” He looked at Magu with a tinge of happiness and doting.

She gently rested on his lap while quietly listening. She was still the little girl back then who carefully took in each of his words.

“No matter how the years will pass and how the world will change, one thing will always remain the same.” Li Qiye stroked her hair: “You will always be my pride, the person I’m proudest of.”

She smiled and replied: “Magu is very happy to hear Teacher say that.” Her ordinary smile became the most beautiful and

captivating smile.

Li Qiye smiled back; it was one of satisfaction and showed an unprecedented sense of accomplishment, one that was much greater than grooming an Immortal Emperor.

She lifted her head to look at him while speaking in all seriousness: “Teacher, I want to go to that place with you.”

Li Qiye immediately fell into silence after hearing her request.

“I have heard Brother Wang Yuan talk about that place.” She earnestly continued.

While looking at her strangely attractive face, he eventually answered her: “Magu, you should know that wherever I go shall be doomed with rivers of blood and mountains of bones.”

Icing on the cake; adding to something that is already perfect.

Chapter 1142: Magu's Oath

“I know.” Magu was resting on his lap while looking up at Li Qiye to say: “I have heard a lot about Teacher's stories, but I know that you have never been a bad guy.”

Li Qiye burst out in laughter after hearing this: “There is no single measurement to tell good and bad apart in this world. Good people will do bad things and bad people will also do good things at times.”

“Teacher is a good person, so even when you commit a bad deed, you will still be a good person.” She smiled faintly in relaxation. Her answer carried quite an implicit charm.

The mood between the two was quite good. Li Qiye gently smiled and stroked her hair: “Your heart is bright so the world is also bright, but my world cannot be judged on this basis. More often than not, I don't know what is right and what is wrong or what is good and what is bad.”

Magu tightly held his hand with her jade-like fingers and gazed at him with her eyes that resembled limpid autumn waters: “Good or bad, I still hope to accompany Teacher to the end of this world. I have plenty of time and so do you, right?”

Li Qiye pondered over her words. This woman before him was no longer the little girl back then. She has grown up to become invincible, someone capable of weathering the storms and winds in the nine worlds.

After a long time, he sighed and replied: “My journey is not an adventure or a search for the unknown out of curiosity. The place that awaits me will be full of war and murder. One day, deities and emperors will besiege me from all directions.”

“This path from one edge of the world to another will be long and filled with opposing emperors and gods, and at the very end of the world, we will face a war with no turning back.” With that, he lifted her hand and solemnly continued: “It was not easy for you to reach the dao. You have survived for millions of years to reach this level, so you are my pride and joy. I hope that in the future, you will be able to go wherever you want and live a life full of pleasure and happiness.”

His expression turned sullen: “I don’t want to take you into an endless war; we are not of the same world. Your world should be one of peace and tranquility like the passing of time when cultivating the Eternal Physique by sleeping. The repose of the bright moonlight above with the gentle breeze keeping you warm throughout the night — this is your beautiful and quiet world, one that you deserve after giving everything you have.”

“But as for me, I am destined to travel far on a murderous path full of blood and darkness, a path that’s always looming with death.” He sighed and showed a rare gentleness: “You are a miracle of the eons, the only treasure of your kind in this world. I don’t want you to experience perpetual war because of my selfishness.”

Magu’s determination was made apparent by her tight grip of his hand. She slowly spoke in a rhythmic and soft voice, yet each word

was full of power: “I know that very well, but I won’t have any regrets.”

Li Qiye fell silent once more.

She was persistent: “When I was very young, everyone hated me and not a single person was willing to teach me how to read, but Teacher did not look down on me. You taught me how to read and showed me a new world that I would have never been able to reach otherwise...

“... In the beginning, I only wanted to show people that I was not stupid, that I could learn how to read and study. Thus, it wasn’t mere literacy that you showed me, it was a whole new world! You believed in me and had expectations! You were the only one. Even though I was slow, you never thought that I was a piece of rotten wood with no use...

“... You gave me the most precious immortal law and explained the most profound mysteries in this world. Because of this bright world that you opened me up to, I was able to grasp everything by having a pursuit and dream. All of this was because of you; you are the reason why I continue forward on this endless path...

“... Without you, I would be nothing, only a dumb girl in the mouths of others. Without your persistence, I wouldn’t have been able to persevere cultivating the endless path of the Eternal Physique. Since you didn’t give up on me, I had no reason to give up on myself!” Tears suddenly wet the corners of her eyes. An existence capable of assailing Immortal Emperor like her was quite rare, but she was leaning on Li Qiye like a little girl.

“Silly girl, don’t cry.” Li Qiye gently wiped away her tears: “The grand dao is full of difficulties that we need to be ready to face.”

She smiled back with an ordinary yet beautiful smile. The teardrops in the corners of her eyes resembled the early morning dew on a flower — refined and pure.

She met his gaze and spoke with an incomparable firmness: “Life and death as well as bloodshed are nothing to me. Teacher gave me the world, so as long as I am by your side, I have the whole world within my reach. The peace and serenity you speak of can only exist because you are near!”

Li Qiye finally exhaled and said: “You are no longer the little girl back then. As an existence capable of assailing the nine heavens and ten earths and everything else in this world, you have the right to pick your own path, especially with the completion of your Eternal Physique. Think for yourself and pick the life that you desire. I can’t be like before and continue to hope for you to cultivate by slumbering.”

“The decision is in your hands now. You have grown up to be invincible, you are an eagle capable of soaring to the nine heavens to strike the sky if you wish. It is up to you, follow your heart.” He pointed at this chest at this point.

She revealed a resplendent smile that couldn’t be described with the pen and ink before giving her answer: “Where you are is where I shall be.”

Li Qiye emotionally commented: “The path of the grand dao is endless. I hope we can go on forever to the end of the world until the day where we will receive our answer.”

Magu interlocked her fingers with his and didn't say anything else. She already received her answer; everything was right here, the entire world!

In the next several days, Cleansing Incense was full of guests. Many great powers came to visit while others came to seek forgiveness. Some even came from the other side of the Mortal Emperor World. Even imperial lineages came bearing gifts in order to befriend the sect.

In the present, Cleansing Incense had an incomparable prestige, so it was only natural for many sects to want to build a good relationship with it.

Of course, they also wanted to see Li Qiye, but this was impossible. He was not seeing guests.

The only one truly suffering was Gu Tieshou since he was in charge due to Su Yonghuang's absence. Of course, there were other candidates such as Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao. Alas, they didn't care for this kind of mundane matters as they would rather spend their time cultivating.

Gu Tieshou could be said to be quite capable. However, because the sect was previously in decline, he lacked the self-confidence to

deal with these imperial lineages and had to go consult Li Qiye.

He brought a bunch of tribute letters and asked Li Qiye for his opinion: “Many imperial lineages want to establish diplomatic relations with us, what does Virtuous Nephew think about this?”

Li Qiye didn’t bother taking a look and only smiled: “You can deal with them as if they are ordinary sects, there’s no need to be more attentive just because they are imperial lineages.”

“Uh—” Gu Tieshou didn’t know what to say. For any lineage, establishing ties with imperial lineages was a very important matter, but Li Qiye simply didn’t care at all.

“If you aren’t clear on something, you can go ask Arcane Guru for advice.” He looked at Gu Tieshou and smiled.

After hearing this, Gu Tieshou finally became relieved. At least Li Qiye pointed him a way out.

Li Qiye asked: “Where is the sect master?” During the time of disaster, Su Yonghuang was not present.

“She went back to the Su Clan. Before leaving, she left me in charge and told me that this was a personal matter. If fast, it would be half a year to one year, otherwise, it would be three to ten years before she can return. Therefore, before leaving, she made arrangements for everything.”

Li Qiye frowned and pondered after hearing this. He knew that Su Yonghuang was not the type to neglect the sect's business and leave. Moreover, it was also during a period of turmoil.

Li Qiye inquired: "Did she say what it was about?"

Gu Tieshou gently shook his head: "I don't know since she didn't tell me. However, she had a solemn expression before leaving, so it shouldn't be something trivial."

"The Su Clan's business..." Li Qiye contemplated for a moment. The Heaven's Edge Su Clan no longer appeared in this world, so they shouldn't have any enemies. If there were no conflicts, then what could it be that made Su Yonghuang abandon her post, to leave the sect for such a long period of time?

Chapter 1143: Old Devil's Past

While Li Qiye was deep in thought, Gu Tieshou hesitated for a moment and didn't know whether he should speak up. He had a question but didn't dare to ask.

Li Qiye noticed his demeanor, so he smiled: "Elder, we are not outsiders, so you can just speak your mind."

Gu Tieshou chuckled awkwardly with an embarrassed expression. He rubbed his palms together and asked: "Virtuous Nephew, hmm, about this... Ah, oh, the other elders in the sect, they are very curious, so, so they asked me to ask..."

Gu Tieshou didn't know how to phrase this delicate matter.

"Elder Gu, go ahead." Li Qiye smiled.

Gu Tieshou took a deep breath and calmed down before looking at Li Qiye with a serious expression: "Virtuous Nephew, are you the descendant of our patriarch?"

"You and the other elders are thinking too much." Li Qiye knew what he was thinking and laughed.

Gu Tieshou was still as awkward as before: "Well, the elders think that you are either the patriarch's direct descendant or perhaps even an imperial prince who was sealed."

The older generation of the sect felt that Li Qiye was Immortal Emperor Min Ren's descendant. He could even be a sealed child from the emperor.

No one would doubt if Li Qiye came out right now and claimed to be the emperor's son.

Li Qiye burst out into laughter and shook his head: "Elder, you are overthinking it. I am not Immortal Emperor Min Ren's descendant and definitely not his son."

Gu Tieshou could only smile awkwardly in response. He actually hoped that Li Qiye would be related to the emperor somehow.

He had to ask: "Then what about the Benevolent Armament?"

For millions of years now, no one had heard of this Benevolent Armament. Moreover, the triangular building had always been there. No one was able to connect with it, let alone control it. But now, Li Qiye had used it freely at his whim.

Thus, it was understandable to think that outside of the emperor himself, only his son would be able to use the Benevolent Armament.

Li Qiye smilingly said: "The armor was waiting for the fateful ones. It has been buried deep underground. When the right person comes again, it shall show itself once more."

He didn't need to explain this armor clearly because Gu Tieshou didn't know that despite its name, it didn't have a lot to do with Immortal Emperor Min Ren; he was not the one who refined it.

Back when Li Qiye couldn't come up with a good name, the emperor had already worn it to battle. From then on, people called it the "Benevolent Armament." Li Qiye had no problems with this name, so he didn't change it afterward.

Eventually, Gu Tieshou stopped bothering Li Qiye and bowed before leaving.

"Is Old Devil still here?" Li Qiye asked: "Tell him to come here, and Mu Shaohuang too."

Gu Tieshou's heart jumped out of confusion after hearing this. It was clear that he lacked the knowledge about their relationships.

Old Devil Mu Shaodi was their ancestor. With regards to status, Li Qiye should be calling him ancestor, but strangely enough, Old Devil listened to Li Qiye's commands. This was a chaotic mess that Gu Tieshou couldn't figure out at all.

"I, I will go consult the ancestor." What else could he say? He was several generations below Old Devil.

In fact, the entire sect was still dumbfounded at the moment. Both elders and ordinary disciples couldn't believe that the perverted Old Devil was their most powerful ancestor, Mu Shaodi.

In the past, one elder had proposed to expel Old Devil from the sect, lest he stains the sect's reputation even more. But now, after finding out that he was an ancestor, many people broke out in cold sweat.

After a while, Old Devil and the burly man, Mu Shaohuang, came. While looking at Li Qiye, even characters like Old Devil didn't dare to show any slight. He respectfully bowed and said: "Greetings, Your Excellency."

Li Qiye glanced at him and said: "It looks like the Black Dragon King told you about me."

"Senior Black Dragon King had only mentioned a few things." Old Devil smiled wryly before giving introductions: "Your Excellency, this is my little brother."

"I know who he is." Li Qiye glanced at the young king and then both of them before stating: "If I'm not mistaken, the two of you are the reason for Cleansing Incense's decline."

Old Devil quickly said: "Your Excellency, it was my fault. I was the one who destroyed the sect. I'm ashamed to meet our forefathers."

Mu Shaohuang hastily interjected: "Your Excellency, my big brother is not to be blamed for this. It was all my fault. I was the one who found the secret underground and invited trouble, so Master sentenced me to an eternal imprisonment."

Old Devil busily asserted: “No, Your Excellency, if it wasn’t for my obsession with power and desire to open the seal, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wouldn’t have faced that disaster.”

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve after looking at the two: “Okay, there’s no need to claim the blame with each other. If your master had declared his sentence, then I’m too lazy to care about who was right and wrong. I only want to know the process and details. Be specific.”

“It was my fault.” Mu Shaohuang deepened his tone: “Big Brother and I grew up at Cleansing Incense and joined under our master at the same time. I was not as gifted at cultivation as Big Brother since I was addicted to occult and bizarre matters. Thus, I read many scrolls of the sect when I was younger.”

“So you traced back to the roots and thought about obtaining the power.” Li Qiye said while looking at Mu Shaohuang.

“Your Excellency, it was not so. My little brother likes strange things and didn’t care for prestige and power, so he was still nameless when I became famous.” Old Devil quickly interrupted.

Mu Shaohuang scratched his head and went on: “Through the scrolls from our sect, I knew that there was a secret buried beneath Cleansing Incense. At the start, I thought it was the Benevolent Armament, but later on, I found that this was not the case.”

Li Qiye flatly said: “A very powerful force is hidden

underground.” Back then, there was a reason why he let Immortal Emperor Min Ren establish the sect on this land.

“Yes!” Mu Shaohuang wryly smiled: “In the beginning, I only wanted to obtain the Benevolent Armament in hopes that Big Brother would be able to successfully seize the Heaven’s Will just like the patriarch back then. However, I didn’t understand the true principles behind the armament. It was not a treasure, so I couldn’t take it.”

“... Moving on, with my research, I found that there was something even more powerful beneath the imperial foundation of the sect. It was an eternal power, perhaps even more terrifying than the Benevolent Armament, so I became fascinated.” He explained.

“It was because of me.” Old Devil joined again: “It was because I wanted that power which led to the calamity later on.”

He recalled: “I competed against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Out of our six duels, the score was three to three. However, after each battle, the emperor’s dao became much more polished than mine. I understood him very well. During our last confrontation which led to my defeat, a huge gap was between us. I couldn’t stand it... so I had the urge to obtain an even greater power.”

Li Qiye coldly said: “You were obsessed, charmed by the devil.”

Old Devil sighed in response: “I was truly charmed by the devil back then with my desire to become the Immortal Emperor. My

thirst for power was what led me astray.”

The old guy became dejected at this point: “At that time, I heard Little Brother said that he had finished researching the seal underground. I thought about a few legends back then relating to the power underground, a power that would make me invincible in the nine worlds.”

Li Qiye glared at him and asked: “Did you know what their end result was?”

Old Devil gently sighed: “At that time, I was completely obsessed and didn’t think much of it. I just wanted to obtain this power in order to surpass Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, to seize the Heaven’s Will and ascend to the throne.”

Li Qiye emotionlessly scolded: “It didn’t matter what kind of person an Immortal Emperor was. Regardless of whether they were a murderer or a righteous gentleman, no emperor cultivating an unorthodox and evil method has ever been accepted by the heavenly dao. Only the supreme grand dao could carry the Heaven’s Will. Even if you have obtained that power, you still wouldn’t have become an Immortal Emperor.”

Old Devil smiled sadly: “I was blinded by my miserable defeat. I was unwilling to lose against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, so I became hell-bent on obtaining that power underground. Master and the elders did not agree in the beginning, but under my constant pleading, master eventually agreed to open the seal underground. No one expected that everything would go wrong and a calamity would befall us.”

Despite knowing the dangers, the elders still ultimately agreed. This was their desire to have another Immortal Emperor. Without a doubt, Mu Shaodi was a great candidate.

“Hmph! You all only knew that this power was strong but never thought about what was sealed underground!” Li Qiye coldly stated: “Otherwise, why would Immortal Emperor Min Ren and I waste so much time to lay such a strong imperial foundation in order to seal this land?”

Chapter 1144: One Mistake; An Eternal Sin

Being harshly scold by Li Qiye left Old Devil smiling wryly: “I was overwhelmed with the need for more power, so I carelessly tried to borrow this power to forcefully seize the Heaven’s Will.”

“Hah, forcefully seize the Heaven’s Will?” Li Qiye laughed in response: “That is only something found in legends. You couldn’t become an Immortal Emperor back then, so you definitely couldn’t succeed later on.”

Old Devil exhaled and said: “If I could have thought of that back then, it wouldn’t have deteriorated so badly. While focusing on obtaining the power underground, we opened the seal and unexpectedly found something else.”

Li Qiye didn’t say anything and continued to stare coldly at Old Devil.

The old man went on: “At that moment, I finally understood that outside of this power, there were other things down there, but it was too late. In order to protect this land from falling into the hands of the monsters, the other elders and I worked together. We spent countless efforts and refined jades in order to reseal the foundation!”

“Hmph! Immortal Emperor Min Ren and I were afraid that the power down there would break out again even from the foundation. But who would have thought that before it could break out, everything was destroyed in your hands.” He glared at Old

Devil.

The old man lowered his head in shame. His little brother spoke instead: “It is not all Big Brother’s fault. If it wasn’t for my curiosity of the secret, none of this would have happened.”

“Cleansing Incense’s situation today is because of me. My ambition blinded me, resulting in our decline and the elders suffering underground.” He spoke with shame: “If it wasn’t for senior Black Dragon King slapping me out of my stupor, I’m afraid I would have gone to meet the ancestors already.”

Li Qiye asked: “You all couldn’t suppress the old man underground?”

Old Devil smiled wryly and said: “The elders and I counter-attacked many times to no avail. We could only force him back at best. There was no way of re-creating the Immortal Emperor’s seal, so we had to stand guard there.”

Li Qiye coldly scowled: “If it wasn’t for your meritorious service, I would be too lazy to deal with this mess. I will intervene this time but never a second! One might be able to survive an act of god, but no one can survive a self-brought calamity.”

“Your Excellency, please reseal this land.” After hearing this, Old Devil immediately rejoiced and prostrated on the ground.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It is easier said than done to seal

this land. It can't be done in one or two days. When Immortal Emperor Min Ren erected the supreme imperial foundation in the past, it required a lot of time and effort."

"What I can do now is make that old man run back and stop causing trouble!" Li Qiye paused and glared at Old Devil: "Whether this land can be sealed again or end up being destroyed, I'll deal with that later."

"Your Excellency taking action is a blessing for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect." Old Devil could finally let go of what was tormenting his heart.

Li Qiye asked: "Do you know anything about that last battle?"

"Your Excellency, I did not participate in that battle." Old Devil quickly explained: "I was haunted back then, so senior Black Dragon King awakened me with a slap. He told me to stay behind and guard the entrance without further explanations. Because I was suppressing the seal underground, I didn't know what exactly happened in that battle. The moment I got out, the battle between the senior and Immortal Emperor Ta Kong had already ended. I didn't meet the senior later on, so I don't know the specific circumstances."

Li Qiye pondered for a moment. He knew very well that the Black Dragon King must have survived the fight with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to kill his way into the Immortal Demon Grotto.

After a while, Li Qiye lifted his head and told Old Devil: “I will go underground to deal with this matter to avoid further complications.”

“Your Excellency will certainly be successful.” Old Devil quickly stated in full exultation.

The two of them left Cleansing Incense and went to the town right below. After entering the small town, Old Devil led Li Qiye to the Happy Crimson Pavilion.

[Old Devil](#) was a regular here, so after he arrived, the ladies came to greet him in a very familiar manner. A gorgeously dressed woman coquettishly smiled: “Third Master, you are bringing along a young man today?”

Old Devil laughed boisterously and brought Li Qiye inside. He looked for the old madame and told her: “Open the door.”

The madame noticed an outsider, Li Qiye, and was quite surprised: “Who is he?”

Old Devil knew about Li Qiye’s temper and quietly told the madame: “Don’t ask.”

The madame did not blabber and immediately took the two deeper into the pavilion. She opened a closed iron door and let them inside.

Here was a different heavenly grotto that resembled a large courtyard with different types of strange grasses and spiritual medicines. Who would have thought that such a mundane location would contain a wondrous place like this?

Li Qiye took a look and spoke with a tinge of emotion: “This place is still here after so many years...”

Old Devil replied: “Your Excellency, this place has been running all this time. The ancestors of the sect believed that a cunning rabbit has three caves, so the entrance had been shifted to this place.”

Li Qiye flatly said: “A cunning rabbit has three caves? Immortal Emperor Min Ren didn’t have this thought back then. This was meant to be a home for those pitiful mortal women. Only someone like Min Ren would trouble himself with the chaotic mortal realm, or maybe he was just [soft-hearted like a woman](#).”

Old Devil remained silent. He was not qualified to comment on the past and Immortal Emperor Min Ren. He had only heard many legends about Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s humane beliefs.

Li Qiye sighed and didn’t want to talk more about the emperor’s kind nature.

There were pitiful people all around the world, but as he had said before, he was not a savior. He couldn’t save and enlighten all living beings. The only thing he wanted was to preserve the nine worlds so that the human race could exist forever.

As for the weak and pitiable, they would need to rely on themselves. Only by growing stronger would they be able to escape their own destinies. Otherwise, it would just be empty talk. He could save one person, but not millions.

This was the biggest difference between him and Immortal Emperor Min Ren. The emperor had a tendency for clemency and a wish to save all living beings in this world.

Old Devil opened another entrance to the underground and led Li Qiye inside. They were ported into the deepest location of Cleansing Incense.

A gigantic imperial foundation was located here. It was built upon the sweat and blood of Li Qiye and Immortal Emperor Min Ren back then.

One could see many great pillars shouldering the ground. The path was paved by refined divine stones and engraved with powerful imperial formations that were suppressing the entire area.

Walking into this place was the same as walking into the underground labyrinth of a palace. This underground base was huge. In the face of a disaster, it would be easy for all the disciples from the sect to come and hide here.

Li Qiye gently sighed after feeling the familiar power while walking inside the foundation.

This was an inheritance that could allow for Cleansing Incense to continue on. Even if it were to collapse one day, as long as this place was still here, it would eventually rise once more.

It could be said that in order to build this place, they had spent a countless amount of effort. Alas, after so many years, the future generations of Cleansing Incense did not utilize this inheritance to bring about prosperity for the sect.

They eventually went as far as they could go. Before them was an abyss that resembled a cave that led further down into the ground. It was pitch-black; one had no way to see what was down there.

Around this pit was an extremely powerful imperial formation. Many old men were sitting around it. Their vitality was weakened with age, but this didn't mean that they weren't extremely powerful. All were Virtuous Paragons.

At the same time, three weapons were floating in the middle of the formation. Two of them were life treasures that emitted imperial auras!

“Benevolent Saber!” Li Qiye glanced at the third weapon and immediately recognized it.

The Benevolent Saber was Immortal Emperor Min Ren's true fate weapon. The other two weapons were also refined by him.

Back then, he left behind all of his weapons. Outside of one life treasure falling into the hands of the Heavenly God Sect, the others vanished without a trace, including the saber.

The older generation like Gu Tieshou didn't know where these weapons went. They speculated that the weapons had been lost in the war.

When Li Qiye and Old Devil stepped closer, the old men presiding over the formation opened their eyes as if they were waking up from their slumber.

“Elders.” Old Devil looked at each one to say: “Young Noble Li is here today to deal with the calamity. After he is done with this crisis, Elders can return to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. I have burdened everyone, forcing Elders to watch over this place.”

Remember how Old Devil's title is hard to translate and consists of three characters: “Third” + “Devil” + “Grandpa/Master”? She is calling him “Third” + “Grandpa/Master” here, omitting the devil/sly/crafty/perverted part.

Okay, this phrase might look bad for Li Qiye, but in his defense, it is a popular idiom that is widely used in literature. It is definitely a cultural thing. This phrase is not politically correct in modern speech anymore, however. You can probably still see it in historical/xianxia novels due to the setting.

Chapter 1145: Geezer Su

Among the elders here, there were brothers in the same generation as Old Devil as well as uncles who were older than him. Back then, they opened the seal only to find that the power within was not as simple as they expected. In the end, they had to stay here to guard this place.

If they didn't do so, this entire area would turn into an evil land. At that time, not only would the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect turn into ashes, the rest of this land would fall into ruin as well.

“It was everyone's fault.” An ancestor gently sighed: “If we didn't agree and work together to open the seal, we wouldn't be in this situation today. It is not just your fault.”

Old Devil sighed as well. It was all due to greed back then. It ruined everything and almost ended the sect completely.

Li Qiye looked at them and commanded: “Mu Shaodi can stay, the rest of you, leave.”

The elders glanced at each other. In fact, they didn't know Li Qiye's true identity, so they looked at Old Devil instead.

Old Devil nodded and said: “Elders can go, just leave this place to Young Noble Li. When it is over, everyone can return to the sect.”

Old Devil was the most hopeful to become an Immortal Emperor.

He had a very high position in the minds of these elders. The elders were a bit hesitant, but they still decided to eventually leave after hearing him.

With their departure, Li Qiye signaled to the Benevolent Saber within the imperial formation by waving his sleeve. With a clank, the saber slightly resonated with a hymn before flying into his hand. The other two weapons also followed and floated above his head.

He gently stroked the blade afterward. It was flashing with a cold and dreadful glint capable of deterring others from approaching. Its tip could easily pierce a paragon's body. The saber kept on hymning as if it had seen its master. It looked like it was recognizing Li Qiye.

"Benevolent Saber..." Li Qiye gently sighed while holding the blade. Back then, it was quite an undertaking for him to find a destiny true stone for Immortal Emperor Min Ren and eventually refining into this one-of-a-kind weapon.

"Clank." The saber returned to its scabbard. He then shifted his gaze towards the huge abyss and told Old Devil: "Open it, I want to see him."

"Umm... " Old Devil hesitated and looked at Li Qiye: "Your Excellency, don't we need to prepare a bit?"

"Don't worry, I know what we're about to face." Li Qiye slowly replied while staring at the pit.

Old Devil took a deep breath and channeled all of his blood energy as universal laws emerged. The seal was opened at this time. The old man did not dare to be careless and was ready for the worst.

“Clank—” One could see a black energy floating around the pit as if there was boiling water inside.

“Boom!” With a loud blast, this black energy surged into the sky in an endless and terrifying manner. It was a ferocious reverse waterfall.

“Buzz—” A faint hum came about. Immortal Emperor laws appeared around the imperial foundation. Its power tried to stop this flood of boiling black energy.

However, the black energy kept on spewing out. It would eventually fill the entire underground foundation. Even a more powerful foundation wouldn't be able to seal this torrential black energy.

“Hahaha...” A shadow rushed out from the pit and laughed: “Junior, you have finally given up. Be smart and scram from this place to avoid making a mistake.”

This shadow was engulfed in the black energy, making it seem as if it didn't have a body. It was made up entirely of this dark air and seemed to be able to control this form of energy.

It looked quite burly and strong, resulting in a very vigorous and mighty presence. Despite being formed from the black energy that gave off a dark and ominous feeling, there was an innate majestic aura.

“No, I did not give up. I simply let you out today in order to end it all and obtain peace for this land!” Old Devil shook his head.

“Ha, Junior, you are indeed very powerful, but the best you can do is to borrow the power of imperial foundation to suppress me. If you think you can seal or kill me completely, think again. You are not an Immortal Emperor! Plus, I am immortal. Even your patriarch couldn’t kill me.” The shadow declared with a guffaw.

“After so many years, Geezer Su, you are still the same. You’re still as stubborn as a rock underneath an outhouse, hard and smelly.” Li Qiye slowly spoke at this time.

His words surprised the shadow. Its eyes immediately fell upon Li Qiye while flashing a dark glint. Anyone would feel creeped out by these pitch-black eyes and wouldn’t dare to do anything.

However, Li Qiye was unperturbed. He coldly stared back at the shadow.

“Boy, who are you?” The eyes stained with black energy glared at Li Qiye because Li Qiye called him “Geezer Su.” This was quite astonishing because there should be no one in this world who knew who he was, let alone his name.

“The person who will not let you rise again.” Li Qiye flatly said: “You are still causing trouble after millions of years. You might not be bored of it, but I have grown a little weary of this game.”

“You are that damned Dark Crow!” The shadow finally realized something. He took several steps back with a shocked expression before exclaiming: “You are still alive after this long?”

“You have been slashed by the old villainous heavens and pinned to the ground, but aren’t you still alive right now?” Li Qiye chuckled: “If you can live till now, why can’t I?”

The figure eventually burst out into laughter after taking a long stare at Li Qiye: “No wonder why the junior is so confident, so he found some reinforcements. Hahahaha, damned crow, so what if you are here, what can you do to me? Nail me down again, or maybe you want to kill me?”

“Hahahaha, you should know that I am unkillable, I am eternal!” It ended with more obnoxious laughter.

Li Qiye coldly glanced at him and spoke: “Geezer Su, after so many years, you are still indulging in this game. Do you really think that I can’t kill you? What if I uproot this land completely, how much longer do you think you can last? Ten years, maybe a hundred?”

“Hmph!” The shadow snorted after hearing this. There was a secret in this place that very few knew about it. However, since Li

Qiye was the Dark Crow, he was one of those privy to this information.

“Haha, damned crow, all of this talking boils down to you wanting the thing underground. Otherwise, you and that brat Min Ren wouldn’t have built the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect here.” The shadow coldly retorted.

“Yes, I did want the item before.” Li Qiye did not deny the shadow: “However, with the passage of time, it no longer matters whether I can take it or not. I have no need to force it. There are many things in this world that I can obtain instead.”

“Hmph, if that’s the case, then why have you returned? Don’t stand in my way!” It replied.

“Stand in your way?” Li Qiye laughed in response: “You actually have a future? Even if I don’t stop you, what are you going to do?”

“Hehe, I will definitely see the sun again and return to the nine worlds!” The shadow laughed imposingly.

Li Qiye looked down at him and said: “Old geezer, you really think you can change back to the old you? The truth is that you will never be able to since you are already dead!”

“I am undying!” The shadow interrupted Li Qiye with a roar.

“Fine, you are undying, then tell me, what do you consider

yourself to be?” Li Qiye went on: “You were dead after the tribulation back then. Everything about you turned into ashes! What was left? Only an abomination that is neither human nor ghost, a meaningless existence!”

“Utter rubbish!” The shadow shouted: “Quit your bullshit! I once reigned over the nine worlds! I protected and saved the human race! When the tyrant came, only I rebelled and attacked him! I am the savior of the nine worlds, the guardian of the human race...!” The shadow became more riled up as he spoke with increasing volume. In the end, he was screaming.

Li Qiye silently stood there and watched the screaming shadow until he could finish venting!

After screaming for a while, the shadow eventually calmed down and coldly spoke: “In short, I will return to the nine worlds again. That day will surely come!”

“So what?” Li Qiye insipidly said: “What can you bring to this world even if I let you out? Your power underground will turn this land evil. And have you ever thought of what will become of yourself?”

Chapter 1146: Indignation

The shadow became silent instead of screaming some more. Eventually, it coldly said: “I can escape this worldly prison and turn this land into a paradise. I can soar to the nine heavens again and reestablish my glory! As long as I can persevere, nothing can’t be done, nothing is impossible!”

Li Qiye emotionlessly countered: “Escape from this prison? Purify the land? How are you going to do that? You have everything right now, but it is only due to the underground power, yet you want to escape then purify it? Don’t you know how hilarious that sounds? Without a doubt, [you are thinking about building a pavilion in the sky, it is all talk!](#)”

“You are not what you used to be.” Li Qiye coldly stared at him: “You are no longer the Mortal Emperor, no longer the wise sage of the past. To put it bluntly, you are only a monster that’s able to live on by clinging to this resentment and feeling of indignation!”

“Hmph, who says I am a resentment?” The shadow retorted: “I am me, the Mortal Emperor that protects the human race!”

“Is that so? Look at yourself in the eye and ask yourself, are you truly the Mortal Emperor in the past?” Li Qiye emotionlessly spoke: “Wake up, you are nothing right now! And in all seriousness, I’m not clear on what exactly you resent.

“Do you resent yourself? Resent the old tyrant? Or do you resent the heavens, or maybe your daughter?”

“Stop talking!” The shadow became especially aggravated after hearing about his daughter and shouted: “What do you know! During the tyrant’s reign, how many humans and sentient beings did he kill?! Did you see how people wailed in lamentation, how their blood flowed like rivers? There was no sunlight to be found...”

“I know!” Li Qiye interrupted him and flatly said: “Even though I was not in the nine worlds during that era, I know about it very well. In fact, I have experienced an even crueller period with more bloodshed. The tyrant is nothing compared to the Ancient Ming.”

He went on while looking at the shadow: “You know, when Immortal Emperor Min Ren and I sieged this underground location, why did we only seal you instead of kill you? The truth is that with the emperor’s might and my legions, I could have buried you even deeper underground and make you cry forever in the darkest prison of no escape...”

“I could have even cut you into little pieces so that you would never form your body again. Even if I couldn’t kill you, I had plenty of ways to make you experience a fate worse than death. I could have used the most vicious means in the world to let you give up on everything!” With that, he stared at the shadow with sympathy and said: “But I didn’t do so.”

“It was not because Immortal Emperor Min Ren was a merciful person, it was because I remembered your contribution in protecting the human race back then.” He continued: “Thus, we only sealed you and the power underground. I hoped that one day,

you would come to understand and let go of this hatred! Unfortunately, it seems like you still haven't thought it through judging by today!"

This shadow ahead was Su Yuhe's father, an invincible Virtuous Paragon from the human race. He was only one step away from being an Immortal Emperor.

During the era of the tyrant, he rose up and rebelled. In the end, he used his daughter as bait by making her marry the tyrant. One misstep ruined his daughter's entire life and also doomed himself.

The shadow loudly snapped: "Let go? Why should I?! I can still return one day!"

Li Qiye sighed and gently shook his head: "Every choice, regardless of whether it is right or wrong, will come at a price! Your current situation and your daughter's fate were ultimately decided by your decision."

"Stop talking!" The shadow screamed.

Li Qiye ignored his plea and continued: "Really, I admire your will to oppose the tyrant as well as your contribution to the human race. Because of this, you are qualified to be called the Mortal Emperor even though you couldn't become an Immortal Emperor. However, we'll make a few things clear today. We won't talk about your guardianship of the human race, only your dao heart and personal obsession."

“In your case, protecting the humans and the nine worlds eventually became your obsession.” Li Qiye spoke slowly: “A young genius of the human race opposing a tyrant, persevering to the very end to become a gray-haired Mortal Emperor. I really do admire your persistence.”

“However, have you ever thought that ultimately, it became a feud between you and the tyrant?” Li Qiye took a serious look at the shadow: “By saying this, I feel as if I have become a conspiracy theorist due to your great accomplishments.”

“But ask yourself, what is your true intent? Was it really to protect the humans and the nine worlds?” He went on to say: “At the very end, you only had one obsession left, and that was to defeat the tyrant because that had been your lifelong dream! You simply wanted to make it come true!”

The shadow retorted: “Nonsense!”

“Is that what you think?” Li Qiye smilingly said: “From a teenager to the old Mortal Emperor, at that stage, you already had enough power and authority. The human race, under your leadership, was strong enough to fight against the tyrant’s kingdom.”

“But we can talk about something else instead.” Li Qiye stated: “We won’t talk about how you became ashes back then, but rather, your immortal situation today. Regardless of whether you are a strand of obsession or a wisp of resentment, they share one thing in common: to a certain degree, the power here could allow you to live on. Maybe not to the level of everlastingness, but definitely

something close.”

The shadow said: “Hmph. Only I have understood the mysteries within!”

“I won’t deny that.” Li Qiye responded: “But let me ask you a question. You took the underground secret from the tyrant back then after he died — surely you must know what I’m talking about? He couldn’t comprehend the power here, and the truth was that he was even older than you. His death was only a matter of time, and it certainly would have been before you.”

“Hmph.” The shadow scowled.

Li Qiye continued: “I know this is difficult to hear, but even though we are discussing this issue, it has no effect on your contribution to the human race. In my mind, you are still qualified for your title and deserve to be worshipped as an admirable great sage.”

“But now, we have to discuss the negatives in this.” Li Qiye coldly glared at the shadow at this point: “Compared to you wanting the underground secret, it is more apt to say that you wanted to defeat the tyrant. You hoped that you could defeat or personally kill him before his natural death! This was your lifelong wish, so ultimately, you made a choice.”

“Defeating him and protecting the human race, is there a distinction here?” The shadow spoke without emotions.

Li Qiye replied: “To tell the truth, I am not trying to criticize you on this matter. In fact, I am not qualified to make any criticism at all. A man is not a saint, so how can he always be righteous? Everyone has their own desires and ambitions.

“But since you made the choice, it doesn’t matter how you have turned into ashes or became this abomination, what are you resentful about? The tyrant? The damned villainous heavens? Or perhaps yourself?

“Honestly, I do not know what you are resenting. Since you made your choice, face it and the consequences that come with it, regardless of whether they are good or bad.”

The shadow replied: “I have no resentment, I only want to see daylight once more!”

“Do you think these words bear any weight?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Truly ask yourself that question again.”

Li Qiye stared at him and continued: “Others do not know about the power here, but I do. It is a power that belongs to darkness and negativity. Why was it that the tyrant was so strong back then and capable of changing the tides of battle by himself? Why was it that you turned into ashes yet you are still alive? It is all because of this underground power.”

Li Qiye exclaimed: “The tyrant is violent and ambitious, which allowed him to rely on this power. But as for you, because of your resentment, it turned you into your current form, making you

think that you are actually eternal!”

The shadow shouted: “So what?! So what if I resent! Am I not allowed to resent just because I’m opposing you?”

“I won’t deny that I had my own agenda when establishing the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect here. I also wanted the thing underground, but I eventually gave up.” Li Qiye flatly said: “I don’t mind your feelings of resentment and indignation, but they will turn this land evil and kill all the living beings here, so it has become my problem!”

An idiom meaning unrealistic utopian construction, imaginary future plans.

Chapter 1147: Apricot Vase

After hearing this, the shadow snorted in response: “On what basis do you think I will turn this land evil and that I will destroy all living beings here?”

“You know it to be true in your heart, but you are unwilling to admit it.” Li Qiye retorted: “Do you think you can control the power underground even better than the tyrant back then?”

“Before your death, you had a strong body and a firm will that allowed you to suppress this power underground.” Li Qiye explained: “But now, you have nothing. You have given everything to this power. If you truly try to come out, how will you escape it or even try to purify it? How are you going to turn this land into a paradise?”

The shadow became quiet and did not answer.

“Because of this, I simply wanted to talk it out with you.” Li Qiye said: “I don’t want to fight and kill in this place. I’m too tired and bored to wonder whether I should seal or end you. I came today in hopes that you can realize this for yourself. Return to where you belong. The deepest recesses underground is your home, there’s no need to come out again.”

“Says who?” The shadow disagreed: “I will definitely rule the nine worlds again...”

“It seems that I have been wasting my breath completely this

entire time.” Li Qiye interrupted him: “I’m sick and tired of you now. After so many years, you still don’t dare to face your own decision and the consequences that stemmed from it. You are not even comparable to your daughter. Her miserable fate and unimaginable suffering, it was all because of you...

“Even though she hated you, she didn’t hold onto this resentment till this day and allowed bygones to be bygones with the passage of time...”

“Stop, stop, shut up!” The shadow shouted after Su Yuhe was brought up. It held its head and didn’t want to listen any further as this was its inner demon!

“Outside of convincing you today, I also came with good news.” Li Qiye lightly said: “I have buried your daughter’s remains in the most peaceful location. All of her obsessions are now gone. She has let go of her hatred, including that of the tyrant. In the future, she will be able [to be reborn](#).”

Li Qiye continued while staring at the shadow: “You should think about letting everything go as well. Forget about the tyrant and your daughter. Let go of your inner demon, only then will you be able to be free...”

“No!” The shadow screamed while holding its head: “No! I will certainly come back to the nine worlds!”

Li Qiye gently sighed: “I can only say that I am very disappointed. I didn’t want to use such means to force you, but this is your

choice. I hope you will be able to face it one day.”

Having said that, he took out a vase decorated with an apricot flower. This was given to him before Su Yuhe left.

“No!” After seeing the vase, the shadow screamed as if it had seen a ghost and took a step back in fear.

This was Su Yuhe’s favorite vase. The Mortal Emperor personally gifted it to her when she married the tyrant. During her most painful times, she could only hold onto this vase and poured out her heart while waiting for the light.

Seeing this vase reminded it of everything. This was its inner demon; something it did not want to face.

“No...” The shadow begged: “Take it away, take it away, no—”

“It’s too late.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Face your decision!”

“No...” The shadow mustered some courage out of nowhere and pounced forward, wanting to break this apricot vase. However, when he approached, he became scared and immediately staggered backward while crazily shaking its head: “I can’t, I can’t, this was He’er’s favorite vase! I can’t...”

“Ah!” While it was wailing, something within it seemed to be wanting to rip its body apart. He desperately struggled while

falling back in order to stop it from coming out.

“No!” In the end, the shadow couldn’t restrain it. After a loud scream, its body was torn apart. An exact shadow-copy came out and immediately devoured it before escaping into the pit, disappearing without a trace.

“Boom!” All of the black energy receded like a tide into the ground.

“That was the inner demon.” Li Qiye stated while watching the whole thing play out.

Old Devil heaved a sigh of relief after seeing the shadow run away. After struggling for tens of thousands of years, it was finally over. He asked a bit later: “Will it return?”

Even though the shadow was devoured by its inner demon, this didn’t mean that it perished. The inner demon was simply in charge at the moment. If the Mortal Emperor could suppress this inner demon one day, then he would be able to return.

Li Qiye explained: “Leave the vase here. With its suppression, he will not come out since he can’t fight his inner demon unless he lets go of everything. However, once he lets go of everything, he will know what he should do next.”

Old Devil became relieved and followed Li Qiye’s order.

After leaving the underground, Li Qiye coldly stared at Old Devil: “This is the power that you wanted. What do you think would be the end result even if you could obtain this power? Becoming another tyrant or an abomination?”

Old Devil prostrated in shame: “My momentary foolishness has harmed the entire sect and forced everyone to experience tens of thousands of years of suffering.”

Li Qiye gently sighed and left without saying anything else.

After the war, the entire Mortal Emperor World regained its calmness. The older generation slumbered once more while the younger generation was either training or kept a low profile without coming out.

This was the beginning of a new age with the Heaven’s Will coming together. It should be an exciting time, but this world was very quiet, peaceful even.

There was no other possible outcome. If it was a different generation with the Heaven’s Will emerging, the world would definitely be rowdy with geniuses coming out in waves. Many ancestors from imperial lineages would leave their mountains as everyone prepared to compete for the throne.

Such a bustling period would definitely be magnificent and stimulate one’s blood to the point of boiling. Geniuses would fight and sects would kill each other.

However, everything calmed down because everyone in the Mortal Emperor World already knew the result even before the competition begun. The Heaven's Will of this generation belonged to no one but Li Qiye. No one else could compete with him for it.

Thus, the Mortal Emperor World became unusually tranquil and peaceful.

Li Qiye didn't leave the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect or ask about any matters during this period of time. He simply focused on cultivating.

Magu also returned to the Heavenly Dao Academy because she knew that the day of departure would eventually come. She would have to leave the Mortal Emperor World and the nine worlds altogether. Thus, she returned to leave behind an inheritance for the academy.

After all, the academy was her home. She naturally wanted it to have [a distant source and a long flow as it continued to flow down](#). So before leaving, she had to do something for the academy.

During his stay at the sect, outside of teaching Li Shuangyan and the other girls, even Bu Lianxiang would come to him for advice sometimes.

The truth was that in the present, he didn't really have anything to teach Bu Lianxiang. They rarely talked about cultivation. In her eyes, just snuggling with him was enough.

But when they were together, they had a talk about her galaxy. She told him: “You should take it and study it. It is a waste for me to keep it.”

“No, you keep it.” Li Qiye gently tucked her hair back behind her ear and said in a serious manner: “This is an item from your Bu Clan. Your ancestors left it to you, so it belongs to you.”

“But you will need it one day.” She insisted: “When you face it again in the future, you will need something even more powerful.”

“I am different now compared to back then during the Ancient Ming Era. I have even more powerful items, so I am extremely prepared if the war comes in the future. This galaxy will be left with you.”

Bu Lianxiang turned quiet for a bit before tightly holding his hand: “I don’t know what I still have to leave you.”

“There’s no need to leave me with anything.” Li Qiye said: “I am already very satisfied having reached this point in life. I have experienced and grasped everything I wanted. If the day comes when I die on the battlefield, I still won’t have any regrets.”

“Don’t say such unlucky things.” She quickly covered his mouth and became a bit flustered.

The word for “reborn” here has a couple of different meanings: “to be reborn to live in paradise (Buddhism) to die / (after) one’s death.”

Another imagery idiom. Imagine a long river. Because it is long, the source is distant. It symbolizes a great lineage/inheritance.

Chapter 1148: Deepest Love

Li Qiye held her hand and stared at her incomparably beautiful features then smiled: “Sometimes, I feel that the world is too far away. Why the need to travel so far? If possible, I want to stop and start a family. Perhaps this isn’t a bad idea.”

“Don’t say that.” Her fingers gently pressed on his hand as she spoke with a tone as soft as water: “A man should be ambitious. Don’t worry about me or other women, we are only your shackles. You should go further, to the end of the world.”

She stared at him deeply and gravely spoke: “If I become something that impedes your path, then I shouldn’t have appeared in your life. In fact, this should be the case for any woman that you have met.”

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “It jolts me when you put it that way. Am I heartless, or is it because of the circumstances?”

“It is not you or the circumstances.” She said: “In fact, I have never blamed you before. In this vast world, you have traveled for so many years. Even after suffering through countless hardships and troubles, you kept walking forward. Your life is at the end of the world; if you suddenly stop and give up... I don’t care what you think, but at the very least, I feel that I would become a sinner if you did it for me. A sinner in the history of cultivation.”

Li Qiye gripped her jade-like hand and stared at her wondrous eyes to say: “Although the years are endless, when you put it that

way, how can I not persevere?”

She firmly said: “Many have gone and fell on this path. Emperors, gods, and heroes... all have become dried bones on their journey, but I believe that in this generation, only you will reach the end and discover a new world, an entirely new world. After the primordial chaos, it will be a world created by you.”

“I got it!” Li Qiye became quiet. The cultivation path was long and arduous. Like he had said before, Immortal Emperor was only the beginning. The journey of the emperors and gods towards the end was not easy, it was paved with countless bones.

She gently said while still holding his hand: “My only regret is not being able to accompany you to the end of the world. What a shame that I won’t be able to see the most brilliant moment of your life.

He looked at her and said: “If you are willing, I can try again. I have a method to prolong your life for a very long time at the very least!”

“No.” She gently pressed her finger to his lips and quietly said: “I won’t be holding you back. So what if you are able to let me live longer? There is a price for everything in this world. This is not my choice. I just want you to be able to go forward without any worries.”

She stared at him deeply before becoming more serious: “I trust that in the last millions of years, I was not the only one who made

this choice. Those who followed you and those who loved you must have made it as well. All of us do not wish to be the ones slowing you down on the path towards the grand dao.”

Her reply left Li Qiye speechless with a difficult emotion in his heart.

“Eternal life is too far away, so giving up is not necessarily a bad thing.” She gently caressed his face before continuing: “On this path, no one can stay with you for one generation after another, no one can always share your pain and happiness. You need to rely on yourself and persist until the end! As for the others, they will slowly fade away with time.

“If someone else becomes your shackle and cause you to stop, do you think that it would be worth it? No one else is worth anything on this path, understand? If you give up, you will no longer be you, no longer the teacher of Immortal Emperors that suppress the nine worlds, no longer the wily Dark Crow that could fool deities, no longer the man without fear!”

“This path towards the grand dao is forever and a day!” He gently sighed and didn’t know what else to say.

During this long trek, countless others had left him. There were those who could prolong their life but chose to let go.

For some, eternal life was not a happy matter due to the great price that comes with it. He would send them off, and there were times when he even buried them personally. What else did he feel

in his heart other than a sense of numbness from all of the partings?

“Don’t worry about eternality, just appreciate that we had it once!” She gently said while embracing his neck and giving him an intimate gaze: “Even though I can’t leave behind any treasure for you, I can leave you an heir.”

After hearing this, Li Qiye laughed and held her beautiful and exquisite chin to gently say: “Passing on my everything is not easy.”

“I know.” She gave a firm yet beautiful smile that had the trace of a woman’s shyness.

Li Qiye lowered his head to kiss her full, red lips. She closed her eyes and invited her lover while tightly hugging his neck...

The Mortal Emperor World was peaceful while the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was thriving. It had reestablished its kingdom after tens of thousands of years of decline, ushering in a new era of prosperity.

Li Qiye did not ask about the rebuilding of the kingdom. He cultivated in isolation with a focus on the Space Scripture, even more so than the Physique and Death Scriptures.

This was a long process. He eventually came out after a while to find Gu Tieshou coming to find him.

“Virtuous Nephew, people from the sect master’s home, the Su Clan, are here.” Gu Tieshou immediately spoke after seeing him.

“People from the Su Clan?” Li Qiye’s eyes slightly shifted after hearing this. The Su Clan was far away and had never asked about mundane matters, but now, they were suddenly here?

He inquired: “Did the sect master not come back?”

Gu Tieshou shook his head: “No, the Su members came because she didn’t return to the Su Clan!”

He was a bit worried about this issue as well.

It wasn’t easy for the sect to have a capable and talented sect master. Gu Tieshou understood that Su Yonghuang could definitely lead the sect to a new golden age. If anything happened to her now, it would be a great blow to Cleansing Incense.

Li Qiye ordered: “I understand, tell those people to come and meet me.”

Gu Tieshou acknowledged the command and immediately went to carry it out. The person from the Su Clan who came to meet Li Qiye was an old man. He was very scholarly and his demeanor slightly resembled Su Yonghuang’s.

“I have heard of your thunderous fame.” The old man came and cupped his fists together before slightly bowing.

“You must be the Su Clan Master.” Li Qiye glanced at him and immediately knew that he was Su Yonghuang’s father.

At this time, Gu Tieshou quietly left the room, leaving behind Li Qiye and the old man.

The old man sat down and got straight to the point: “My daughter told me that if anything happens, I should come and see Virtuous Nephew.”

“If there is anything I can do to help, let me know.” Li Qiye spoke while looking at the old man. He was very protective of the Su Clan because he owed General Su back then.

The old man pondered for a moment before speaking: “My daughter has gone to the Heaven Spirit World. There is still no news right now, so I am quite worried.”

Li Qiye was slightly surprised as he replied: “Your Su Clan has opened the secret pathway? This is quite a rare occurrence.”

“You know about it as well?” The old man was shaken to hear this.

Li Qiye flatly said: “Not too many things can hide from me. Plus, the relationship between Cleansing Incense and the Su Clan is quite good, so it shouldn’t be strange for me to know a few things.”

The old man eventually nodded his head and said: “Yes, my Su Clan has indeed opened the pathway, and she took it to get to the Heaven Spirit World!”

This secret pathway was a channel to pass the boundaries of the nine worlds. The nine worlds were currently separated, so it was quite difficult to go to the other worlds. Not even a Godking would dare to attempt this.

However, it was a different story if there was a secret pathway. The only problem was that in the contemporary, fewer than few lineages had such a pathway. Moreover, it required a large number of refined jades — a very expensive price to pay. Thus, even if the particular sect had enough Immortal Emperor Refined Jades, they were not necessarily willing to open one.

Li Qiye left such a pathway to the Su Clan in the past so that they would have a venue of escape in case a real calamity befalls them.

So Su Yonghuang using this pathway to go to the Heaven Spirit World really surprised Li Qiye. After all, this secret passage couldn’t be used trivially. The expenditure of the refined jades was one thing, but more importantly, it could expose the coordinates of the Su Clan’s portal.

Chapter 1149: Hidden Immortal Hall

At this point, Li Qiye slightly frowned. He thought about something and looked over at the old man: “Your Su Clan wouldn’t open this secret pathway unless a disaster fell upon you. Not too many things necessitate this action, could it be that some items in the ancient temple have gone missing?”

“How, how does Virtuous Nephew know about this?!” The old man was shocked. Only members of their clan knew about these treasures. No outsiders should have been privy to this information.

“Nothing surprising.” Li Qiye continued: “So your clan has truly lost them?”

The old man wryly coughed: “Well, yes. A few things happened back during our forefathers’ generation. An ancestor during that time fell in love with a woman from the charming race at the Heaven Spirit World. Later on, due to various reasons, she was detained by her race, so my ancestor personally went to their world.”

“Thus, he brought that item along. If the other party did not let her go, he would send that place back to the origin.” After hearing this, Li Qiye could faintly guess what happened.

The old man smiled and continued: “I heard that the ancestor talked to that race and said that he only wanted to marry her. No one knows what happened afterward. The ancestor who brought along the item was never seen or heard of from then on.” The old

man sighed at this point: “In the successive generations, our clan had sent various people to the Heaven Spirit World to try and find them, but we never found anything. The treasure disappeared from that point onward.”

“But you lot recently obtained some news.” Li Qiye stared at the old man.

The old man gently nodded: “A few days ago, we finally received a response, so we summoned the family for a meeting. A bit later, my daughter insisted on going to the Heaven Spirit World, so we opened the secret pathway.”

With that, he looked over at Li Qiye: “Ever since she went to the Heaven Spirit World, there has not been any messages. It has been a while, so I’m worried that something might have happened to her. Right now, we still need to wait for a bit before we can open the pathway once more, so I came here to seek your assistance. I heard that you have another method to reach the other worlds.”

Li Qiye replied: “I understand, I will personally go to the Heaven Spirit World. Don’t worry, I will bring the sect master home.”

“Nothing would be better.” The old man was very happy. He had heard of Li Qiye’s tales, so Li Qiye was the perfect person for the job.

He told the old man: “Just wait back at the Su Clan for the good news.”

The ecstatic old man quickly bid his farewell.

Li Qiye looked into the distance in silence after the old man left. Heaven Spirit World... There were a few things there that he didn't know how to face.

“After all is said and done, one has to pay everything back one day.” Eventually, he withdrew his gaze and gently sighed: “Everything should end in this generation, [both feuds and hatred](#).”

He called for Gu Tieshou and told him: “Contact the War God Temple. Tell them that I want to go to the Hidden Immortal Hall. Make sure they understand that I must go, there's no room for discussion.”

After seeing his demeanor, Gu Tieshou didn't dare to say much and acknowledged the command before leaving right away.

The War God Temple was the oldest lineage in the Mortal Emperor World. After millions of years, very few knew where it was located. Some said that it was built in the middle region while others believed that it was situated at the eastern Hundred Cities. Some even thought that it was in the depths of space.

Despite the fact that there were very few cultivators who could find its exact coordinates, it still had many disciples that stayed at the Mortal Emperor World. Thus, it was not difficult to contact them.

There were even fewer people who knew about the Hidden Immortal Hall. The number could be counted on one's hand. It was a secret of the temple, a secret where only the highest level ancestors knew where it was hidden.

The hall was shrouded in primordial chaos alongside many ancient temples. After being polished by countless years, every brick and stone that made up these temples had an air of ancientness. One could feel the flow of time by looking at them.

While walking in this chaos, travelers could sense a moving immortal intent. This intent gave them wings, letting them feel as if they had turned into an immortal. It seemed that one could climb to an immortal land from this place. It was a wondrous feeling.

Li Qiye slowly walked through these halls. He basked in the chaos and immortal intent while channeling their profundities. Others might be unaware of what this temple was hiding, but Li Qiye knew full well. The items hidden here could definitely make even Immortal Emperors salivate with greed.

After hearing Li Qiye's demand, the War God Temple asked the ancestors in the Hidden Immortal Hall for their command. Eventually, the temple allowed for his entrance.

Li Qiye sat in a treasure seat in the main hall and slowly closed his eyes to better sense the auras in this place. It could be said that it wasn't easy for someone from the War God Temple to come here. If an outsider could come, then it would be the fortune of a lifetime.

“Hidden Immortal Hall... Your War God Temple must have expended an endless amount of effort here.” He finally opened his eyes after a long period of time.

“Despite Your Excellency’s visit, this lowly one cannot stand up to greet you, please excuse me.” An old voice came from the primordial chaos within the hall.

“There’s no need, you should continue your rest.” Li Qiye sat in his chair and stared at the chaos to say in an insipid manner: “You finally figured it out after this long, I guess you’re not too stupid.”

“This lowly one didn’t think that Your Excellency would personally come out in this generation. If the juniors from my temple have offended you, please forgive them.” The old voice came again.

Buried in this hall was the oldest and also the strongest ancestor of the War God Temple. Back then, the temple asked Li Qiye to prolong his life.

The disciples didn’t know of his existence, only ancestor-level characters did. However, even these ancestors had to call him [Old Xian](#).

“Let the past go.” Li Qiye nonchalantly said: “If I wanted to bother with those juniors, you wouldn’t be sleeping here peacefully.”

“Thank you, Your Excellency.” Old Xian replied. Despite being the oldest in the temple, he was still only a junior compared to the Dark Crow who had been around for countless years.

“There’s no need for such formalities.” Li Qiye said: “My purpose for coming here is simple. I want the item in your Hidden Immortal Hall.”

Old Xian went quiet and didn’t respond for a while. Li Qiye laughed: “I know that this demand is a bit unreasonable and that it’s not easy for you either.”

Old Xian spoke: “Your Excellency knows that this item holds great significance to us. Another way to put it is that it is the only thing that protects our temple.” He felt like begging at this moment. After all, this item was too important for the temple, far too important.

“Yes, I can feel it.” Li Qiye smiled: “It is indeed not an easy matter. I didn’t think that it was possible even back then, but you all have succeeded.”

He went on: “After so many years of refinement, you have finally polished this thing to perfection, allowing it to be used with ease — this is quite astonishing. However, don’t you think this price was too heavy? In these years, you could have produced Immortal Emperors, but instead, all of your efforts went into this.”

Old Xian solemnly replied: “Which is why this lowly one hopes

that this item can continue to protect the War God Temple.”

“I won’t take your item for nothing.” Li Qiye chuckled: “If you are willing to trade, I will let your temple benefit from the exchange.”

Old Xian didn’t say anything. This long period of silence made his attitude apparent.

“So in the end, you still can’t give up your beloved item.” Li Qiye was still cheerful: “You should know that I have been quite protective of your temple since you all have done many things for me throughout the years. If it was some other lineage, I wouldn’t need to trouble myself like this and would just take it by force.”

“Earning Your Excellency’s grace is our honor.” Old Xian was still respectful.

“I know you old geezer is strong and, with the addition of this thing, quite confident.” Li Qiye smilingly said: “But if I wanted to seize it, no one would be able to stop me, don’t you think?”

Old Xian sighed and respectfully replied: “No one can stop Your Excellency. As long as you are willing, you could change the world.”

The old man was not completely clueless while he stayed in the chaos. He had heard of the recent events. Not to mention how frightening Li Qiye was, just South Emperor, the Middle Continent

Princess, and Magu alone were enough to shake their temple.

If it really reached that point, even he couldn't protect the War God Temple.

Hatred here is most likely a romantic hate because it would be strange to include feud otherwise.

Xian means immortal, old here can be considered as grandpa or elder as well.

Chapter 1150: Old Xian's Decision

Li Qiye spoke while sitting in his chair and staring at the chaos: “As long as you take out that item, I will not mistreat your temple. I shall satisfy your requests.”

Old Xian pondered for a bit before sighing: “If Your Excellency needs it, how could we not give it to you?”

“Very good.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “This is the War God Temple for you, wise and always making the correct choice.”

Old Xian didn't say anything. He could only lament the fact that since the start of time, there were only things that the Dark Crow wanted and nothing that he couldn't have. Plus, Li Qiye was not taking their item without giving anything in return. An exchange was the best result for the temple.

“Your Excellency, this lowly one is still confused.” Old Xian asked: “With your invincible capabilities, who in the nine worlds could oppose you? Why do you need our item?”

“You are aware of the item's origin.” Li Qiye smiled: “Yes, I don't need to borrow it if I only wanted to sweep through the nine worlds. However, if I need to open a path up there, then I must have it.”

“Your Excellency wants to go there again!” Old Xian's heart started beating faster. He had heard of this legend from War God Mu before.

Li Qiye slowly replied: “Yes, it’s time to end it in this generation.”

Old Xian was aghast inside the chaos. He murmured: “Your Excellency wants to raise the banner again? This little one knows very little, but I have heard Immortal Emperor Bing Yu talk about it before. She said that you have started an expedition once, is that true?”

“It is a path of no return. This applies to everyone, and I wasn’t the only one who started one before.” Li Qiye flatly stated: “Many have tried to do so across the eons, thus the path is paved with many bones.”

Old Xian was quite shaken. Thousands of thoughts ran rampant in his mind in a split second.

Old Xian asked: “Your Excellency, I have heard a few legends about this matter. For instance, is it true that some people can take advantage of this and go up as well? Can it really be done?”

“Haha, are you talking about [the illegal crossing](#)?” Li Qiye laughed and replied: “Yes, it is true, but you need an Immortal Emperor to preside over the whole process. The success rate is not very good even with an emperor. Deaths will surely happen.”

He continued: “You should understand that once you go to the heavens, you will become prey. Those existences won’t ignore you, and you should know the result of being prey.”

Old Xian was startled once more because this has exceeded his imagination.

“Why, are you tempted?” Li Qiye laughed: “If you really are curious, then I will tell you some good news. There’s no need for illegal crossing in this generation, the door will open and if you are strong enough, you can definitely go up there. Of course, you will become prey at that point, got it?”

“But how is that possible?” Old Xian finally regained his sanity and spoke with astonishment: “Outside of a few mythical opportunities, only Immortal Emperors could ascend.”

“This generation is different.” Li Qiye smiled: “I am the ruler of this generation; the door will open for sure. Of course, it depends on your own power if you can go up there and who you go with.”

Old Xian’s heart that had been quiet for a long time suddenly thumped faster and faster. It became full of life as if the old man in the chaos suddenly became younger.

“So I take it that you are tempted.” Li Qiye smiled: “No more protecting the Hidden Immortal Hall, do you want to come out and do some stretching?”

Old Xian mused the thought a bit before speaking: “I don’t know what kind of world it is, but I heard that above the heavens, emperors and deities coexist in harmony...”

Li Qiye smiled: “It is not necessarily a good thing. [Where there are people, jianghu exists](#). With jianghu comes disputes. From disputes stem violence and bloodshed. You can imagine a brilliant era, but you can also imagine a scene of carnage. No matter the location, the most radiant era will also have the most horrifying destruction.”

“Gods and deities together!” Despite Li Qiye’s response, the old man in the chaos was still in a daze. One could imagine this era even though it was quite far in the past.

Eventually, he calmed down and recalled some of the things Immortal Emperor Bing Yu told him.

He asked once more to confirm: “Does your Excellency want to reach the very end in this generation?”

Li Qiye laughed in response: “It seems like Little Bing Yu told you a lot of things. I told her back then so that she could prepare and avoid being caught off guard.”

“Ah, Your Excellency, this is not the [Immortal Emperor](#)’s fault. Before leaving, the emperor discussed many things with the War God Temple; I only got curious, that’s all.” The old man smiled wryly.

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “Immortal Emperor Bing Yu made a transaction with the temple, correct? Outside of leaving some things for the Ice Feather Palace so that it could rise again after

suffering a decline, she should also have taken a personal letter that descended from up there, right?”

“Your Excellency’s prediction is flawless.” Old Xian smiled: “Immortal Emperor Bing Yu did indeed make a deal with us back then.”

He softly spoke: “Forget it, I do not care about it. Little Bing Yu can partially be considered a pupil of mine. Without my indulgence, she wouldn’t have told this secret to your temple anyway.”

Old Xian could finally breathe easy because some secrets weren’t meant to be leaked. No one would want to talk about this stuff, including Immortal Emperors unless it was their closest family. It related to too many secrets that the weak had no place in knowing.

Li Qiye glanced over into the chaos and spoke: “Does your temple have any objections? Tell me your requests. As long as they are reasonable, I shall fulfill them.”

Old Xian contemplated for a bit before speaking: “Is Your Excellency still recruiting?”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh after hearing this: “Do you want to climb out and go up there for real? If I’m not mistaken, your War God Temple has always been the same, acting like an old geezer. The temple probably wants to worship you nonstop until you can’t extend your lifespan any longer.”

“Maybe Your Excellency was right. There is no rebuilding without breaking.” Old Xian sighed in the chaos: “The War God temple is still immersed in the glory of the previous generations; it is thriving due to the shelter of old prestige. If our old selves are still here, the temple won’t be able to truly prosper.”

“As long as we are still alive, the younger disciples will live comfortably with no sense of crisis. At the same time, we are wasting a lot of the temple’s resources. This is robbing the youths.” He lamented with regret.

Though the temple rarely involved itself with the world, it was indeed very powerful and not weaker than any other imperial lineage. Otherwise, it wouldn’t have stood strong for so many millions of years.

However, its power was not built on the foundation of a rising younger generation. Unlike other imperial lineages, it didn’t have fresh Immortal Emperors that would bring about fresh blood for the sect.

The main reason for its strength was due to its establishment during a brilliant era. This left behind an astonishing legacy and resources for the temple, including many mighty ancestors.

Having powerful ancestors was not a bad thing for a sect. After all, this was part of their strength. However, it was not necessarily a plus either.

Outside of the younger generation not having a lot of motivation

due to their existences, they also consumed a lot of resources from either life prolongment or blood energy enrichment.

It was just like Old Xian said, this was robbing from the younger generation.

Li Qiye responded insipidly: “Your temple has adhered to old ideas for too long and should have had a reformation long ago. For instance, there were many good opportunities back then, yet you failed to grasp them. You actually sent out a great seed for an Immortal Emperor. If I knew that this was going to happen, I would have trained Little Bing Yu myself.”

Old Xian didn’t dare to comment after being scolded by Li Qiye. To the ancestors of the temple, they regretted gifting an Immortal Emperor to someone else the most.

If they kept the young Immortal Emperor Bing Yu, perhaps they would have broken this stagnation and brought about some fresh blood to the temple.

Unfortunately, they failed to do a good job. In the end, the proud emperor left the temple.

In fact, Li Qiye had scolded them in the past about this matter before since he also lost the chance to train Immortal Emperor Bing Yu.

There was no chance for them to reconcile because the emperor

was a proud person. She would never come back after leaving.

“Your Excellency’s criticism is just, our temple has indeed festered.” Old Xian sighed again and openly admitted their mistake that year.

Illegal crossing as in illegal immigration or human smuggling.

Most readers have probably seen the word *jianghu* before, meaning lakes and rivers. Another translation I see for this is “Pugilist World”, but I don’t agree with it fully because it consists of more than just martial artists. It is a culture, a way of life described in ancient China that was brought to life in *wuxia* novels and extended to modern web novels as well.

I know that Bing Yu should be empress, but her title is Immortal Emperor. Only Hong Tian is an empress in title (raw is Female Emperor). I don’t know if the distinction matters at all, but I’ll keep it this way.

Chapter 1151: Appointing A Successor

After a good while, Old Xian softly stated: “Maybe old bones like us should just die.”

Li Qiye laughed it up and said: “If you still want to follow me up there, I welcome it. But like I said earlier, I still need you to bring that thing along!”

Here, he became serious: “This is the only thing from your temple that can exert any pressure! Otherwise, you alone are not enough up there. If you have it with you, it would be a different story.”

“Since you have been guarding and polishing it for so many years, I trust that you can use it at will.” Li Qiye said: “You can definitely climb up, but without it, who knows what you will face once you’re up there? If you are lucky, then you will meet a weak link, but if not, then even an Immortal Emperor must pay a heavy price. Things like this have happened before.”

Old Xian pondered again after hearing this. He eventually asked: “Who is your Excellency picking for the troops this time?”

Li Qiye replied: “You’ve got the wrong idea, I have never forced anyone to join. Plus, they have their own ideas. You probably heard it from Bing Yu, but that campaign was not because of my wish. They simply wanted to gamble.”

The old man had heard stories from Immortal Emperor Bing Yu,

but he didn't know any of the specifics.

“You don't believe me?” Li Qiye smilingly quipped.

Old Xian quickly responded: “No, if I don't trust Your Excellency, who else can I trust? This lowly one is willing to follow Your Excellency's orders.”

“Not bad. Very well, state your conditions.” Li Qiye smiled. Everyone knew that there was no free lunch in this world.

Old Xian answered: “This lowly one does not dare to ask for much. If Your Excellency is truly successful in the future, I only want a part of it, nothing more.”

“I understand, just like the item your temple is hiding. If you can get another part, then it can make the War God Temple shine again.” Li Qiye commented with emotion: “It really is something good.”

Old Xian movingly added: “Indeed, even this little one has not seen it with my own eyes. I have only heard the ancestor say that it is truly rare in this world, something that all cultivators would dream about.”

“Fine, as long as we can survive, you can pick something that you need.” Li Qiye promised.

“Thank you, Your Excellency.” Old Xian took a deep breath. It

was time for the War God Temple to change its ways. To him, this was a great gamble all for the sake of the temple.

If he were to fail, then it would end there; the future generations would still be protected by the other ancestors. However, if he were to be successful, then a new bright era would come.

“Then prepare well, that day will come soon.” Li Qiye stood up and quickly disappeared from the door.

Old Xian murmured after his departure: “After so many years, it is time for my old bones to face death.”

He turned quiet at this point. Existences that have lived for a very long time by sealing themselves were separated into two camps when facing death. The first group would face it calmly while the other would be stricken with fear.

Li Qiye went back to Cleansing Incense and summoned the younger disciples: Nan Huai ren, Xu Pei, Qu Daoli, Zhang Yu, and Luo Fenghua.

Outside of these five, Li Qiye also called for Tu Buyu. Today, this young group had quite outstanding accomplishments. Of course, there was still a sizable gap between them and supreme geniuses, but they would surely become Virtuous Paragons in the future. Xu Pei was especially excellent with her meticulous cultivation. Her hidden power was the strongest among them.

All six of them arrived. Even though Tu Buyu was a lot older than Li Qiye, he was only the second brother.

Li Qiye glanced at the group and slowly spoke: “I am very happy to see your achievements today. This is the fruit of your efforts.”

In these days, they were capable of handling matters on their own. The disciples from the Cleansing Jade Peak have also become a strong pillar of the sect, giving it hope for a brighter future.

The group stood respectfully before him. Today, their first brother was deterring the world, so they were a bit restrained with formality.

Li Qiye continued: “I won’t blabber on after calling everyone here. The main business is to decide the successor of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

After hearing this, the group was quite startled and looked at each other in confusion. Everyone here knew that the main descendant of the sect should be their first brother.

Only Tu Buyu was carefree among the group. He knew very well that a small place like Cleansing Incense couldn’t stop their first brother’s advance. In his eyes, Li Qiye would one day leave this world. Only the nine heavens would allow him to rampage as he pleased!

He pointed at her and slowly declared: “The next successor of the

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect will be Xu Pei.”

This made Xu Pei jump. The others also looked at her for this news came too suddenly to everyone.

“M-me?” She was quite confused. This came without any warnings. Even the sect elders didn’t talk about this. No one expected for their first brother to suddenly decide the next successor.

Everyone knew that the sect master was still young. Moreover, he was the current successor. To establish a new successor was something the entire sect didn’t expect.

“Yes, you.” Li Qiye nodded: “In the past, you were lacking courage, but years of training have made up for your inadequacy. You are soft but not weak, allowing you to be flexible on top of having great wisdom and vision. You will be shouldering the great responsibility of taking care of Cleansing Incense in the future.”

The group was still stunned. There was a reason why Li Qiye chose Xu Pei. Even though Luo Fenghua had the greatest aptitudes among them, he was also the most prideful. Sometimes, his actions were too radical and hasty.

As for Nan Huai ren, he was wily and flexible, but he had a tendency to exaggerate in a grandiose manner. Moreover, his dao heart was not firm enough either.

The one with the strongest dao heart among them was Zhang Yu. However, he was unyielding while lacking a sense of astuteness; he was intelligent without wisdom.

The second best candidate for the position was, in fact, Qu Daoli. He had the heart as well as the knowledge for this, so he was a very good choice. Unfortunately, he joined the sect before Xu Pei and did not dare to redo everything like Zhang Yu. Thus, it was predetermined that his future cultivation wouldn't be as strong as Xu Pei's.

“From now on, all of you need to do a good job at assisting your first sister.” Li Qiye solemnly spoke with a stately yet intimidating presence.

The group understood that this wasn't a momentary whim. Their first brother had already made this decision. Plus, due to his supreme position in their minds, they would naturally obey his order!

The group respectfully answered: “Rest assured, First Brother, we will follow First Sister and lead Cleansing Incense to a new glory.”

Xu Pei began: “First Brother, the sect master...” To tell the truth, this was not the time to choose a new successor because the sect master was still very young.

“The sect master has her own path.” He gently waved his sleeve: “The responsibility lies on your shoulders in the future. Do work

hard.”

The group didn't dare to question the decision any further and bowed.

Li Qiye's eyes then shifted towards Tu Buyu: “Brother Tu, they are still young and the path is very long. They will need your guidance and support in the future, so I promote you to being the sect guardian.”

“I dare not decline First Brother's request. I will definitely do everything possible to contribute to Cleansing Incense.” Tu Buyu prostrated on the ground and responded resoundingly.

He was much more experienced than Xu Pei's group. In fact, if it wasn't for his age, he would have been suitable to be the sect master. However, taking into account his personality as well, he was more fitting to act behind the scenes.

Eventually, Li Qiye nodded his head and said: “Okay, all of you can go now. I need to talk to the elders.”

The majority of the group left, the only one to linger behind was Nan Huai ren. He deliberately stayed a few steps behind.

Li Qiye glanced at him and asked: “Huai ren, do you have something to say?”

In the past, Nan Huai ren was the first to follow him, so today,

Nan Huai ren was still the one closest to him among the group.

“First Brother, do you want to leave?” He stared at Li Qiye with a sad gaze.

Chapter 1152: Setting Out

Li Qiye smiled after hearing Nan Huaiaren: “That day will come eventually. When it is time to leave, I’ll have to leave.”

Nan Huaiaren looked at him and asked: “Will you return?”

His heart was full of gratitude. Everything he had today was thanks to Li Qiye. Without Li Qiye, there would be no him of today, and the same could be said for the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

“The path towards the grand dao is endless. If fate allows, we will meet again.” Li Qiye gently patted his shoulder and said: “Huaiaren, one cannot deny your cleverness and good nature, but you are very noncommittal and prone to giving up. Cultivation requires perseverance. It is a very lonely path, so if you can work on your dao heart, you will be able to show your worth in the future and go even further.”

Li Qiye did not pass anything down to him. Huaiaren had already cultivated merit laws from Cleansing Incense, so Li Qiye only wanted to point out the failings in his character.

With regards to talents, he was worse than Luo Fenghua and Xu Pei. Although his quick mind made him good at reading people, it was not something that could help his cultivation.

“I will remember First Brother’s words very well and will certainly re-evaluate myself.” Nan Huaiaren bowed. If other people

told him this, he wouldn't have listened due to his personality, but he would firmly memorize Li Qiye's words.

Li Qiye smilingly said: "Go! Men are ambitious and their hearts will always drift to faraway realms. There will be goodbyes, so there's no need to be sad."

"First Brother, take care." Nan Huai ren fixed his robes and bowed respectfully once more. Even though he knew that his First Brother might not be leaving right away, his departure was inevitable. Perhaps on that day, he wouldn't have the chance to say goodbye.

Li Qiye sighed after the boy left. Through the long years, this type of farewell has happened so many times that he had grown used to it.

There was nothing he could do. Like Bu Lianxiang had said previously, nothing in this world could stop his path. No one would be able to slow him down. He would always walk forward with courage.

Even Qian Suyun couldn't stop him from going on this path of no return, no regrets, and no faltering. The only thing he needed to do was to reach the end of the world.

Very soon afterward, he publicly announced his will of designating Xu Pei as the next successor to the rest of the sect.

All the echelons in the sect were surprised after hearing this. They all had the same thoughts; the sect master was still young and Li Qiye was the current successor. Thus, they didn't understand why he suddenly made this decision. Many disciples were lost and didn't know what was going on.

However, at Cleansing Incense, Li Qiye's will was absolute. Among both young and old, no one's words carried more weight than his right now. He had absolute authority and absolute status in the minds of the disciples, so his will shall be carried out.

If, say, Su Yonghuang was the one appointing the next successor, many disciples would be convinced of her choice, but not all of them. This was not the case for Li Qiye. No one would feel that something was wrong or voice their objection to his decision! They would only show obedience and convincingly execute his orders.

Although the younger disciples were still fairly confused, some older people like Gu Tieshou — who had always been supportive of Li Qiye — realized something.

“A true dragon will eventually take off one day.” Gu Tieshou sighed: “It would soar to the nine heavens and leave their home.”

He understood that Cleansing Incense was a pond that was too small for Li Qiye. There was no way he would stay here forever. In fact, he knew that it was not just Li Qiye. Su Yonghuang, Li Shuangyan, and Chen Baojiao wouldn't possibly stay here for the rest of their lives either. They were destined to loom over the nine worlds for this was their real pursuit.

After making proper arrangements, Li Qiye was ready to leave for the Heaven Spirit World, but before it was time for his departure, he met up with Bu Lianxiang.

“I should get going.” He looked at her and said: “Outside of finding the sect master, I also have to conclude a few things during this trip to the Heaven Spirit World.”

She held his hand and said in a serious manner: “Everything needs an end. I hope that you can walk without any burdens or worries in the future.”

Li Qiye smiled and stared at the beauty before him: “When I come back, it’ll be just the right time to marry you.”

“This is the phrase I wanted to hear the most in this life. I’m already satisfied just to hear you say it.” She caressed his cheeks and softly continued: “But I can’t marry you. Even if we were to get married, I can’t follow you forever.”

“No matter what world you are staying at in the future or if you have opened up a new world entirely, I don’t want to see the position behind you being empty.” She continued: “Someone will take up the position of the imperial queen. A person full of life and intelligence who can accompany you to the very end. She will always support you unconditionally. Because of you, she can tolerate and pardon the entire world; she shall plan everything for you as well...

“... At the same time, she is also the person who trusts you the most regardless of the circumstances. She will always be your uncompromising cornerstone. But most importantly, she must be capable enough with strength and experience to suppress your followers and command respect out of them!” Bu Lianxiang concluded with this phrase: “Only such a woman can be your wife and assume the position of the imperial queen.”

Her eyes were full of resolution after making her statement.

Li Qiye hugged her tightly and softly said: “I understand. It is a true pity that you weren’t born in this generation.”

She embraced her lover back and declared in a gentle yet firm tone: “There will be... there will be a woman like that, yes.”

Li Qiye’s heart was quite heavy as he held her in his arms.

“I won’t send you off too far as I’ll preside over Cleansing Incense in your place.” She spoke: “You are the soaring sect’s enemy; it will return one day, but if Magu and I are here, the sect won’t dare to do anything. Go to the Heaven Spirit World with peace of mind, I’ll wait for your return.”

He gave her a deep and passionate kiss as if they were about to melt into one...

The girls went to see him off. After seeing them, Li Qiye smilingly said: “Even if you see a friend off for a thousand miles, you will still have to part in the end. Go back now and train well. I hope to see improvements in your Immortal Physiques before we go up there.”

Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao both gave him a deep hug and said: “Young Master, be careful!”

Even Bai Jianzhen gave him a hug without saying anything; she stayed true to her personality.

Li Qiye looked at her and gently brushed the hair from her forehead while speaking in a serious tone: “I don’t doubt your talents. In fact, no one in the contemporary is your match with regards to the dao of the sword. Your talents are worthy of pride.”

Bai Jianzhen remained silent like a sword that had yet to leave its scabbard.

“The thing I find insufficient in you is your unwillingness to let go.” Li Qiye continued: “The sword is not a cold weapon. In fact, after embarking on this path, you should try and feel it. The sword and its dao both have emotions, it is not just a murderous tool.” He paused for a bit before explaining: “If, say, you only consider it as a weapon and a cultivation path, then even when you stand at the peak, you won’t be able to break through the real limit. After the peak and the limit is a vaster grand dao.”

“Beyond the limit?” Her eyes came together with an incredible

glint.

“Yes, beyond the limit.” He added: “This path can actually go very far. For millions of years, very few Immortal Emperors could devote their entire life to one weapon to reach the dao and became the ultimate bearer of the Heaven’s Will.”

“It could be said that your patriarch, Immortal Emperor Ye Ti, was almost one of them.” He went on: “However, I want you to understand that the path he took is not your path. That path becomes increasingly narrow and, in the end, not to mention surpassing him, I’m afraid you will find it difficult to even reach his level.”

Bai Jianzhen wasn’t the only one listening closely, the other girls paid great attention as well. They knew that this was the fundamentals of the grand dao.

He was urging her on in order to reveal a path for her, a path that she had not previously seen so that she could embark on the true path towards the grand dao.

Chapter 1153: Parting

Li Qiye teased by playing with her hair, but his tone was very serious: “I’m not belittling your patriarch’s grand dao, but you won’t be able to walk down this path. He had severed his seven emotions and six desires as well as all ties with the mundane world. Furthermore, he cut off everything about himself to embark on an emotionless and cruel path. Traveling alone in this world — this was his choice.”

Li Qiye slowly explained: “Even though he actually became an Immortal Emperor in the end, he had lost too many things in his life. Moreover, he also hurt those close to him, his lovers and those who he loved.”

Bai Jianzhen was quiet. She began cultivating the dao of the sword at a young age, so she naturally understood the sword dao back at her sacred ground.

He patiently went on: “Your Mad Sword has broken through and stems from your sacred ground’s dao. As for your Buddhist Sword, it is slowly melting the negative emotions from your dao while shaping it into a righteous path of kings!” He gave her a serious glance at this point and solemnly spoke: “But you still haven’t done enough. Your heart and sword still haven’t opened. They cannot accept something even greater. Only when you open your heart would you understand that there are things other than the sword. It doesn’t stop at coldness and violence!”

He reminded her one last time: “Remember that the sword is more than a weapon or a tool for killing. It has emotions, so you

have to feel it with your own emotions in order to truly sense its existence.”

Bai Jianzhen took a deep breath and bowed respectfully: “I will engrave your advice in my mind and carefully comprehend them.”

“I know you can do it or I wouldn’t have picked you.” Li Qiye chuckled and nodded his head.

She had one more thing to say, but she was hesitant. Li Qiye noticed this and told her: “Go ahead, say what you want. Since you are staying with me, it means that you are one of us, so there’s no need to be so reserved.”

She eventually asked: “What happened to our patriarch?”

Li Qiye had brought up this topic before and revealed that Immortal Emperor Ye Ti’s end was not very good. This problem had been weighing on her mind. After all, he was the Sword God Sacred Ground’s patriarch and also their Immortal Emperor.

He smiled while looking at her: “It is not that I don’t want to tell you, but the time isn’t right. Once you step onto a righteous path befitting a sword king with a dao that belongs to you, I will tell you then. After all, I won’t know what kind of effect it will have on your dao heart. Don’t worry, when that day comes, I’ll tell you even if you don’t ask me.”

After hearing this, she gently nodded without pursuing the

matter any further.

“Going on the wrong path can devastate others, but it will also hurt the user.” Li Qiye explained: “You need the dao alone, search with passion and comprehend the sword. With this, you will be able to break through the limit of the sword dao and open an unprecedented path meant for you alone.”

She took meticulous care in savoring each of his words. Meanwhile, by gazing at her demeanor, Li Qiye was also secretly approving after knowing that she wouldn't follow the footsteps of her patriarch. As an emperor, Immortal Emperor Ye Ti was a hot topic for debate, but at the same time, no one really wanted to talk about his ultimate fate.

“Boss, wait a bit, this lowly one is here to see you off.” At the time of parting, a loud body shouted about and rushed over with extreme speed.

It was Little Autumn. While glittering with a golden light, it rushed through the sky like a golden ray.

In the blink of an eye, it arrived in front of Li Qiye and unhappily shouted: “Boss, you don't care for my feelings at all! If you were going to leave, you should have told me. This really hurts my cute little heart.”

Little Autumn's frolicking appearance made the girls laugh. They knew that nothing good would come from its antics.

Li Qiye gave it a quick glance and said: “Don’t waste my time, fart if you have to.”

Little Autumn laughed happily and said: “Boss, I heard you want to go to the Heaven Spirit World. It is a vast watery world with the Skyvault Bonesea. Then there is the lost Godhalt Continent as well as many gentle and tender beauties—”

“Okay, there’s no need to be so poetic. Play nice and stay here, don’t even think about going to the Heaven Spirit World.” Li Qiye interrupted it before it could continue.

Its expression immediately turned bitter and it spoke as if it had been wronged: “Boss, you can’t treat me like this. This lowly one is your loyal dog. I have to follow wherever you go in order to serve you to the best of my abilities...”

Li Qiye glared at it instead: “Stop your blabbering. How is your cultivation of the Space Scripture going?”

“Uhh—” Little Autumn abruptly choked and coughed awkwardly: “Ah, a little bit of harvest, not bad at all. Of course, it is nothing compared to Boss. You are the most brilliant genius. In the nine heavens and ten earths across all the seasons of the eons, no one can...”

The girls chuckled amusingly while watching Little Autumn. The truth was that with regards to space, the worm had an unparalleled advantage. However, this fella was not trustworthy at all. It treated cultivation like playing. If it actually practiced hard,

it probably would have evolved already.

“You’re thinking about going to that distant place in the future with your meager cultivation?” Li Qiye gave off a glare.

“Well... yes...” It smiled awkwardly.

Li Qiye flatly said: “Then train hard or you won’t be qualified to go since you are so weak. What is the Space Scripture? One of the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures. Others dream of having just one word or one phrase from the scripture, but now, you have the entire book yet you are not treating it seriously. You are wasting a godsend opportunity.”

Little Autumn obediently lowered its head after being scold like this.

“Buzz—” Li Qiye pierced one arm into the void. With a buzz, the space in front of him seemed to melt away. A lake-like mirror emerged before him.

With the channeling of his law, the mirror slowly unraveled and revealed a bottomless dimensional space.

“No way, deep dimensional space!” Little Autumn was horrified and took several steps back. It was a spatial master, so it naturally understood the significance of a deep dimensional space. This belonged to the level of eternal banishment. Once exiled into this type of space, it would be extremely difficult to return.

Although there were many emperor laws with the power of banishment, they were only capable of exiling someone to a shallow dimensional space. Even a Godking could easily make their way back.

However, the deeper dimensions were different. Once banished to these deeper levels, very few could come back alive. They needed to be unimaginably powerful or extremely adept at spatial construction. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to find their way back.

The worm knew that it wasn't looking good at this moment and turned around to flee. However, it was instantly caught by Li Qiye.

Little Autumn cried out: "Boss, you can't treat me like this, this is a deep dimensional space! It is a horrific place! You are playing with my life if you throw me in there!" It didn't want to face a realm of this level.

Li Qiye coldly glanced at it and said: "How can we squeeze out your potential without sufficient pressure? If you can't make your way back, then stay in there forever!"

With that, he threw Little Autumn inside.

"Boss, you are too cruel—" It wailed miserably before disappearing into the deep dimensional space.

“Clang, clang, clank!” The sound of laws came about. Li Qiye didn’t only banish him into deep space, he also sealed this dimension.

In this way, it would be even more difficult for Little Autumn to come back unless he could comprehend the mysteries of the Space Scripture.

The girls actually laughed again after seeing the fate of Little Autumn. This guy was done for sure this time. Being trapped in a deep dimensional space was absolutely maddening!

However, they also understood that it would not make any progress without motivation, thus wasting its race’s great potential.

“Okay, all of you can return. I have to leave.” Li Qiye bade farewell to the girls and pointed forward.

“Buzz!” A formation appeared while the spatial coordinates began to shift. Next, a huge celestial array emerged.

Li Qiye pointed at a particular coordinate. The formation activated and turned into a door with starry lights pulsing everywhere. He entered the door and immediately crossed through space and time.

This was one of the mysticisms of the Space Scripture. It could allow one to teleport across any space and time without needing

any refined jades!

In other words, as long as the user was strong enough, they could go to any location with their own virtues.

Chapter 1154: Great Maelstrom

Endless stars in the sky illuminated the world like diamonds. Each of them was beautiful and moving, especially their twinkling starlight that caused one's heart to throb.

Deep in the recesses of the sky was a floating platform. This great platform had withered without any brilliance left. There were no boundaries or visual coordinates.

This was the door of the Mortal Emperor World that led to the paths towards the other worlds. This place used to be quite prosperous with many cultivators coming and going. Back then, intercommunication between the nine worlds was a normal occurrence.

Unfortunately, the battle between the emperor and the dragon king tore the Heaven's Will apart. This closed off the world boundaries and severed the connections of the nine worlds.

From then on, this pathway was abandoned until no one in the Mortal Emperor World came here anymore. Only Godkings would try to come here to recklessly try to open the pathway.

Li Qiye crossed through space and appeared on top of the platform before the desolate door. His eyes peered at the yellow stains.

In order to reach the Heaven Spirit World, he still needed to borrow this door because the current boundaries had all been

sealed. He was not strong to the point where he could stabilize a portal and forcefully cross the world boundaries by himself.

Thus, this door was the stabilization factor he needed before going through the world boundary towards his destination.

He placed his palm on the door. With a buzz, the dao portal emerged with the image of the world boundary. Inside were many different coordinates.

He locked onto one of these coordinates and, with a loud blast, he crazily released all of his energy into the sky like a flood breaking through a dam or an awakened monstrosity.

“Whoosh!” The dao portal trembled under his power. He melted the boundary that resembled the surface of a lake and opened another portal.

This was a method of forcefully passing through the wall. It would take him into a chaotic space-time. One misstep in such a situation would leave him stranded forever.

Li Qiye’s current strength did not necessarily allow him to world travel. However, it was a different story after cultivating the Space Scripture.

He had absolute confidence about space right now. If he couldn’t do it, no one else could.

No one in this world understood space more than this scripture; it contained all the mysteries of space. Even though he did not reach the apex in this study, he had grasped enough of the fundamentals regarding spatial travel.

He wanted to do this by himself instead of getting help from Magu, Bu Lianxiang, or the Realm God. The reason was very simple. His destination was a place full of mysteries and danger.

The truth was that he had one speculation about that place, but he was not completely sure since there was an item there that he had never managed to obtain before.

This was a very bold decision that stemmed from a completely new conjecture that he came up with after finding the Ancient Void Rune and Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter. It was a completely new idea.

No one could help him in this matter because no one had ever obtained both of these items at one time. But now, Li Qiye had both of them.

At this moment, the boundary wall melted and seemingly pierced through the Mortal Emperor World. The coordinates on the other side slowly emerged. In a split second, he locked onto one of the coordinates. It was so convoluted that no one could figure out its location.

“Buzz—” He didn't hesitate after successfully determining the destination. The two coordinates immediately connected to each

other to link the Mortal Emperor and Heaven Spirit Worlds.

He stepped into the dao portal instantly to cross the boundary wall for the Heaven Spirit World. He found himself in a realm where different dimensions were intertwining with continually shifting images. They changed far too quickly, so quickly that it would make others think that this was either a dream or an illusion.

These images varied by quite a bit. Some were shattered palaces and citadels while others were gigantic floating bodies and mountains made out of bones. Sometimes, a peaceful world was found as well...

They were quite bizarre and frightening. In fact, for millions of years, many powerful existences forcing their way through these boundaries would all see similar images.

Different explanations were given for these scenes, but no one was truly certain which was correct. Some assumed that they were only illusions and not real.

Li Qiye saw several images and gently sighed: “Who actually knows how long time has been flowing. Countless ages turned into smoke with nothing left before being destroyed only to be rebuilt again...”

He didn't stop at all after his comment and continued to cross the spatial field.

“Rumble!” Deafening blasts echoed. The entire world seemed incredibly insignificant before the magnitude of these blasts.

Everything was tiny in front of the giant maelstrom in the Heaven Spirit World. Nothing could reach the apex. Even gods would have to stop and Godkings’ expressions would change in here!

The maelstrom resembled an ancient beast opening its jaws, a beast capable of devouring the sky and all other existences. Even time and space would be victims.

This maelstrom was the largest one in the Heaven Spirit World. Its size was beyond imagination; endless miles of oceans were orbiting it. Regardless of how vast this world was, it couldn’t escape this maelstrom.

A continent would instantly be ripped into pieces the moment it made contact with this vortex. Only powdery specks would be left behind.

If one could fly to the highest part of the maelstrom, they would find an incredible scene — a power of suction that devoured everything. If the sky wasn’t high enough, it would be dragged down and swallowed as well.

People would feel their legs give in if they could see the full picture of this maelstrom. Outside of Immortal Emperors, even the most invincible Godking wouldn’t dare to venture deeper.

Endless seas surged wildly in this region. The waters churned at crazy speeds before eventually entering the bottomless black hole. The entire process was astonishing. Nothing could stop more sea water from pouring into the whirlpool.

This was a taboo location in the Heaven Spirit World. Very few people knew what was at the bottom. It could even be an entirely new world.

At the same time, a figure appeared on the distant horizon and was falling with great speed.

The mighty suction of the maelstrom frantically pulled him down towards the terrifying whirlpool.

Even a Godking wouldn't be able to withstand this force, let alone other people.

It was Li Qiye that was falling down. With a casual point of his finger, a door appeared below his speed after a buzz. In a split second, he crossed through space to avoid the absorption force of the maelstrom. He re-emerged on the left only to be met with the same force, but this gave him ample time to prepare.

“Boom!” A Resplendent Break interrupted the power of the maelstrom. It was a blow that could surprise even Immortal Emperors and suppress this world. Its name was the Pentadao Timeless Seal.

It became the most powerful defensive barrier for Li Qiye. He was no longer affected by the suction force. He reached out with one hand again; a new door emerged. He stomped on it and emerged on the opposite side. He repeated this process to appear to his upper right.

Opening new doors and changing his positions... just like this, he continued to escape the suction of the maelstrom. His shifting was completely different from just jumping from one location to another. To be exact, he was shifting from one space to another.

He used the mysteries of the Space Scripture to make tiny changes to his own spatial location. Each step was extremely accurate without the slightest mistake, everything was under his control.

Chapter 1155: Secret Of The Maelstrom's Depths

After reaching a certain depth inside the maelstrom, everything here was torn apart. Even time and space became fragmented into small parts. Any intruder would find themselves being bitten by this terrifying force. They wouldn't come out even if they wanted to due to the disorderly nature of the fabric of realities in this place.

For example, taking one step forward should be a frontal movement. However, in this place, it could shift their position backward instead because the space ahead would be ripped into a different location.

Even if a Godking could withstand the power of the maelstrom, they wouldn't be able to break through to the center due to the distorted space.

Li Qiye relied on the Space Scripture's property of controlling space to amend his next step to cross through a tiny space while having pinpoint accuracy. Teleportation, shifting, dimensional control, and banishment were all parts of the scripture.

After many corrections, Li Qiye finally found the most precise space and used the Pentadao Timeless Seal to escape the maelstrom's power.

He then opened his fate palaces. The World Seal floated above his head while he took out a bronze chest. This was the item he

obtained from the underground world at the top of the bronze giant.

“Buzz!” The tree, cauldron, pillar, and spring of life all emerged.

“Rumble!” Under his channeling, the Heavenly Dao’s Primal Chapter inside the cauldron of life as well as the Ancient Void Rune on top of the pillar of life appeared.

Li Qiye cried out: “Open!” All four essential symbols erupted. The pillar turned humongous and opened up a new world; the cauldron flew into the sky and poured down endless flames; the spring emerged from the ground and spewed out a majestic life force. As for the tree of life, it kept on shaking while emitting a boundless life power to stop the power of the maelstrom.

A pure power of life engulfed him in the sky. With incessant explosions, the Ancient Void Rune turned into a massive sea of lightning under the empowerment of the life force. This sea of lightning could destroy everything in this world. Monstrous lightning bolts pulsed in the vicinity while thunder crazily struck from above — these were bolts capable of blowing up everything in this world.

At the same time, the Heavenly Dao’s Primal Chapter also turned into a majestic pond of the dao. Everything became meaningless and inadequate before it. This was the start of all the grand dao and mysticisms. Just a few small runes from here could refine everything while a single dao law could penetrate all things. Here was the ultimate power, the pinnacle mystery of the grand dao.

“Go!” He roared and used his willpower to maintain the lightning pond and dao pond. With deafening blasts, both of these aquatic creations fiercely penetrated the center of the maelstrom where even emperors had to tread carefully.

The great explosions rendered Li Qiye unable to see the chapter and rune, but he was not in a rush. No one understood these secrets more than him.

“Bang!” Without any warning, a loud bang shook not only the maelstrom but the entire Heaven Spirit World.

In the blink of an eye, it seemed that something at the depths of the maelstrom was being ruthlessly pulled out, perhaps it was even the heart of the Heaven Spirit World. The entire world could feel this great change!

“What’s going on?” All the creatures in this world were dazed and didn’t know what was happening.

“Success!” Li Qiye could sense it the best inside the maelstrom. While the earth was shaking due to this great disturbance, Li Qiye knew that he had done it.

Li Qiye smiled and murmured: “So it really was here. Spending so many generations was completely worth it.” His previous speculation was reaffirmed by the dao chapter and ancient rune.

“Rumble!” More explosions echoed in the sky. The lightning sea and dao pond flew out of the maelstrom’s depths while dragging something out. Eventually, they flew above Li Qiye’s head so that people could clearly see what the item was.

No one would believe such a scene because both of these amalgamations pulled out a single drop of water. Spending so much effort and risking his life only to pull out one drop of water — who would believe such a thing?

Li Qiye happily used the water from his spring of life to sweep over the water bead, bringing it inside his spring.

“Rawrrr!” A monstrous roar resounded, a roar that resonated across the entire Heaven Spirit World. All living beings in this realm could hear it clearly.

“The great maelstrom? Something is going on!” Ancient characters were murmuring to each other in shock.

“So the day has finally come...?” The Charming Spirit Race had the most intense reaction. The old existences of this race were all aghast.

“Rumble!” Something else within the depths of the maelstrom wanted to rush out; it shook the entire area with a loud thump.

“Come, it is time for this boss to take action.” Li Qiye laughed in the face of this power that could quake the entire maelstrom. The

World Seal above his head emitted a boundless light of death that illuminated the entire area.

“Zzz—” The whole maelstrom, including the surging seawater and the power of the maelstrom, was petrified by this death ray that shone through everything. Time and space themselves were frozen as well.

Besides Li Qiye, everything in this place was petrified.

Era Petrification Ray — this was the technique hidden at the farthest location of the Drystone Courtyard that he had copied. He paid a huge price, but this Era Petrification Ray was enough to show that his harvest was simply incredible.

Nothing could escape the shine of this ray. Everything turned to stone, just like the Drystone Courtyard.

“Whatever you may be, don’t mess with me! Destroy it!” Li Qiye sneered at the petrified maelstrom. He then took out the bronze box from his chest.

“Boom!” The moment he opened the lock, the box shot out a boundless bronze light. The moment this light engulfed everything, loud explosions detonated. Everything was destroyed by the impact of this light regardless of what they might be. All of the elements and fundamental pillars of creation were annihilated. Even that existence down at the abyss of the maelstrom was annihilated by this bronze light!

Eventually, the light reached the ultimate depth and unleashed a terrifying destructive force!

At this moment, everything went back to normal. The seawater ran continuously and the power of the maelstrom returned to tear this area apart once more.

It was as if nothing had happened just now.

“Bang!” Right when Li Qiye was heaving a sigh of relief, a pillar of water from the abyss of the maelstrom shot into the sky. It might just be a water beam, but it carried unlimited power. It rushed forward with the greatest speed and power this world had ever seen!

“Oh mommy, I was asking for it!” Li Qiye was shaken to see this water pillar rising to the sky. He knew that he overdid his attack from before since it reached all the way to the deepest location. This was the backlash from his actions.

This water pillar seemed to have been compressed by the maelstrom for billions of years; no one could stop its impact for it was too mighty!

“Bang!” Even under the effect of the Pentadao Timeless Seal, both Li Qiye and the pentagate were immediately blown away flying.

The ultimate form of the pentagate couldn't withstand the power

of this water pillar so Li Qiye — inside its defensive barrier — wasn't feeling any better. His body was seemingly falling apart from the impact.

Without the protection of the timeless seal, Li Qiye would have turned into ashes before the water pillar even struck him. Even a more powerful body wouldn't be able to withstand this kind of attack.

In the blink of an eye, he was blown away to the horizon. His body turned into a meteor that streaked across the sky and disappeared.

Chapter 1156: The Beginning At The Heaven Spirit World

The Heaven Spirit World was an aquatic realm. Magnificent oceans spanned for as far as the eyes could see.

In the distant years, there was a popular phrase — come to the Heaven Spirit World if you want to see the ocean.

This phrase accurately summed up the Heaven Spirit World. No other oceans in the nine worlds were as grand as those found here...

One couldn't escape water in this world. Tidal waves surged to the sky while undersea craters that spanned for endless miles existed as well. Plenty of spirit stones refined by the oceans were scattered about.

Come to the Heaven Spirit World and one would be able to see scenes that they had never seen before.

For example, one part of the ocean was split in the middle, leaving water pouring down from both sides.

Another sight was where the ocean's water was refined into huge pillars. They propped islands up to the sky so the islands looked like they were hovering in the air.

One more common sight was the ocean being split into different roads. These aquatic roads were refined into stones, allowing people to go towards any direction...

It was a world of unimaginable scenes. Very few continents could be found here, but there were many mountain ranges. Most of the land was created by the refinement of water, turning liquid into solid forms.

Great coral reefs were around as well with great trees sticking out from the water. These reefs and plants grew at the bottom of the sea. They formed many forests — the habitat for countless creatures...

There were three main oceans and one continent in this world. The three oceans were the Abyss Sea, the Jade Sea, and the Dragon Demon Sea.

The continent was named Godhalt, the only one in this world. Even though there were other land masses, they were not called continents. Godhalt was the only true continent and was great in size.

However, not too many living beings were willing to live on the Godhalt Continent as there weren't many sects and nations established here.

Just the name alone was enough for people to understand; this was a place where even gods had to slow their pace. How suitable could a place with a name like this be for building a happy home?

In this world, if the Abyss Sea was the most majestic yet bizarre, then the Jade Sea was the most charming and magnificent with its blue sky and water. Many people liked such an enchanting location.

As for this world's inhabitants, there were three main races, the [Charming Spirit Race](#), Treants, and the Sea Demon Race. The Treants and Sea Demon Race were existences only found in the Heaven Spirit World, and they would only live here as well.

For some unknown reason, the Treants and Sea Demon Race were not included among the major races of the nine worlds. Generally speaking, the major races included humans, demons, golems... No one knew why these two particular races weren't included because they were extremely prosperous. Only the charming spirits were comparable compared to them in the Heaven Spirit World.

This was the playground of the charming spirits, treants, and sea demons. As for the other races like humans and golems, they were considered very rare in this world. This was doubly true for the human race; they were rare to the point of being extremely precious.

Golden Isle was a very powerful lineage in the Jade Sea and even across the entire Heaven Spirit World. As a lineage of the Treants, it had two Treefathers. This great heritage allowed them to tread proudly throughout the world.

A festive mood was in the air today because Golden Isle was holding a groom competition. If selected, the winner would take the main descendant of Golden Isle as their wife.

This time, only men from the human race were allowed to participate. At the Heaven Spirit World, when a lineage or race wanted a groom or prince-in-law, they would only demand for human males. Princesses and descendants with extremely powerful bloodlines or even those that reached atavism desired a marriage with human males.

Humans were very scarce in the Heaven Spirit World. At the same time, they had a special job — the breeding stallion! Their job was to mate with treants, sea demons, and even charming spirits for offspring.

Of course, these races with ordinary bloodlines mating with humans didn't have a big effect. However, if they inherited a mighty bloodline to an atavistic level, then this would greatly highlight the superiority of the human race in terms of breeding.

If the three great races mated with each other, they could still give birth to a powerful bloodline. However, the child would likely inherit the weaker bloodline.

Although mating within the same race could result in an even stronger bloodline for their offspring, the chance of a successful reproduction was abysmal.

A charming spirit with a powerful bloodline mating with another

charming spirit had a high chance of only giving birth to one offspring or even none at all!

Powerful bloodlines competed with each other, thus it was difficult for a true integration for offspring. And here was where the human race came in.

It was the race with the strongest reproductive power — no one would deny this claim.

At the same time, mating with a human with a powerful bloodline would result in a great integration with the three great races' own bloodlines.

For example, when a charming spirit mated with a golem, their offspring had a large chance of inheriting the characteristics of both races.

This was not the case when mating with a human. The bloodline of the charming spirit would maintain its purity while the human bloodline would not actively compete against it. Most importantly, even if both bloodlines were of the same power, the human bloodline would often be suppressed by the other races' bloodline. Their descendants would only inherit the charming spirits and sea demons' traits while forgoing the powerful human bloodline.

Unless this human bloodline was of the Immortal Emperor level, the other three great races had an absolute advantage in mating for certain bloodline under normal circumstances.

Because of this, humans had an extraordinary role as stallions in the Heaven Spirit World!

In the human race, both mortals and cultivators were welcomed as long as they had a strong pedigree. Some were even treated as treasures and earned the favor from other powerful races.

This groom selection at Golden Isle had many decent human cultivators participating. They must pass the first examination from the isle.

The stronger the human bloodline, the higher the reproductive capability when mating with a charming spirit. Such a bloodline was especially popular and loved.

In the present times, the stronger the lineage was, the better the method they had to measure one's bloodline — this was true for both charming spirits and treants.

The test took place on a high platform with a powerful array surrounding it. The surfaces were created from refined jades. Only people with powerful bloodlines would be able to pass through these jade surfaces.

The number of surfaces passed was the measurement of one's bloodline. Today, the final result of the examination was determined. A very stout young man had crossed through more than thirty surfaces of refined jades to become the winner.

He stood on the platform and raised his arms while shouting in excitement: “Who else wants to take on this challenge?”

This muscular young man had golden hair just like a lion while his blood energy was quite pure. This meant that his bloodline was both powerful and pure; a truly incomparable human bloodline.

The elders from Golden Isle nodded in satisfaction after seeing this. The bloodline examination in this place had a total of 108 surfaces and could be said to be the most complete testing ground in the world.

Until now, no one had ever been able to pass through all of these surfaces, but if someone could, then it meant that their bloodline was absolutely matchless.

In this day and age, a human bloodline that could penetrate through thirty surfaces was already quite exceptional. After all, the nine worlds had been closed off from each other for a good thirty thousand years. No new blood had been added to the Heaven Spirit World so the human race’s bloodline was on a decline.

“Anyone? Anyone dares to take on this challenge?” The youth stood there and flexed to show off his muscles while shouting.

In his eyes, becoming the groom of Golden Isle was the same as a carp turning into a dragon. He would become a big shot overnight.

“Swoosh!” At this time, a figure suddenly flashed through the sky

from the distant horizon. Before anyone knew what was going on, this figure slammed into the youth on the platform with a loud bang and made his blood jet out.

After crashing into the youth, this figure kept on going.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The figure instantly smashed through the 108 jade surfaces on the platform.

“Boom!” When this figure went through all the surfaces, the entire array activated and a powerful ray suddenly enveloped them. The formation here was stimulated by this powerful bloodline and began to emit endless dao runes.

The dao runes surrounded this figure as if they wanted to analyze their bloodline and origin.

Charming Spirits I would imagine to look like elves or feys/fairies, but I’ve seen elves used for different things before in ED, so I went against it. As for Treants, these are probably more humanoid than tree, but Wood Race sounds terrible.

Chapter 1157: Golden Isle

This sudden development stunned everyone in the crowd, including the elders from Golden Isle. They didn't dare to believe their eyes while looking at the formations that were completely activated.

“This... this has to be impossible, right?!” These elders were slack-jawed, but this was definitely the reality of the matter.

They had full confidence in their arrays. Only a few lineages in the Heaven Spirit World would have comparable formations. Such a powerful and complete platform was the work of their Treefather, so there was no chance of this being an error.

“Damn, don't tell me, a bloodline examination platform?” Li Qiye noticed the refined jades all around him and immediately cursed. He was currently seeing stars while his blood energy was churning like crazy; his body felt like it was splitting apart.

He was shot by the powerful water beam into the sky. Without the protection of the pentagate, he would have already been lacerated to little pieces by that terrifying beam.

Who would have thought that an even more outrageous circumstance would happen after landing? Li Qiye naturally knew what this platform was used for.

He smiled while seeing the platform's dao power enveloping him with runes in order to analyze his bloodline and said: “Not bad,

only an emperor level character would be able to create a platform like this.”

He then wanted to leave, but he started to stumble. His body felt especially heavy; it was as if something was pouring into his body.

“That’s good stuff.” He murmured after realizing what was happening. Outside of being wounded by the water beam, the bead of water he obtained from the maelstrom was also affecting him.

He took a deep breath to adjust his body while channeling his blood energy. However, he found that something has gone awry.

“Check it out.” The elders calmed down and immediately checked the formations on the platform. They found that there were no problems at all.

In fact, they also believed that there was nothing wrong at all with the array created by their Treefather.

At this time, an elder pulled Li Qiye’s hand up and loudly announced: “We have a victor!”

The defeated human youth from earlier didn’t say anything. Victory was in his grasp, but he had to now leave grumpily since there was nothing else he could do. However, it wasn’t a big deal since he had absolute confidence in his bloodline. Even if he wasn’t selected by Golden Isle, other lineages would pick him eventually.

In a short period of time, the disciples decorated the islands with lanterns and flowers. The lively sounds of drums and laughter could be heard everywhere.

One disciple bowed before Li Qiye and cheerfully smiled: “Our groom, please follow me. I have prepared a new house for you.”

Li Qiye could only wryly smile back. He magically became someone’s groom the moment he arrived at the Heaven Spirit World. This whole event was too strange.

He looked around and asked: “Where is this place?”

The disciple smiled in response: “[Our groom](#), you participated in the selection but you don’t know where this place is? This is Golden Isle of the Jade Sea.”

“Golden Isle...” He couldn’t help but smile helplessly while shaking his head: “You all are misunderstanding something. I accidentally fell down from the sky; it is out of sheer coincidence that I am your groom.”

“Then that’s even better. This is the will of the heavens, a predestined fate. This will be a topic that garners even more praises and songs!” The disciples smiled once more.

Li Qiye glanced at the disciple and said: “Predestined fate? What a pleasant way to put it. Isn’t it more like your island wants to use my bloodline?”

The disciple was not offended by this and maintained his jolly demeanor: “Our groom, you should know that a marriage with Golden Isle is not a bad thing at all, don’t you think?”

Li Qiye was quite amused. He naturally understood what this so-called marriage was in the Heaven Spirit World for humans. The ones with good bloodlines were simply breeding stallions. Although they wouldn’t have any authority within these sects, it would be a carefree life.

Because of this, many humans were willing to become said stallions. They would have a beautiful wife and an easy life. Despite not having any power to shift the clouds and winds, it was still a very happy result.

“Okay then, might as well go with the flow.” Li Qiye was fairly relaxed. Of course, he was not afraid of anyone in the present times. He smilingly said: “Take me to see the beautiful sceneries of Golden Isle.”

The disciple didn’t expect this nonchalant attitude from Li Qiye. Being a disciple of a great lineage, he was quite knowledgeable. Becoming the groom of Golden Isle should be something exciting. It was the same as a carp turning to a dragon by crossing the gate. Some people would even begin to act arrogant.

However, this ordinary young man ahead was still very calm; it was as if becoming the island’s groom was nothing worth mentioning.

“This way, our groom.” He didn’t say anything else and led the way for Li Qiye.

The two of them went on a sightseeing tour to check out the wondrous landscapes.

The Jade Sea was a blue ocean — vast and majestic. Few could actually explain how large it was in a clear manner. Golden Isle was actually very large, but it was nothing compared to the Jade Sea.

Here, one could see things never seen before, such as islands made out of gold and silver.

There were more than a hundred islands within [Golden Isle](#), so it looked quite big. Some were floating in the sky while others were hanging on tree branches. In fact, some islands were made from gigantic tree roots!

The more discerning crowd would be able to see that despite having plenty of islands, the main foundation of Golden Isle was based on two gigantic trees. They were situated in the central area of this archipelago. One was a bamboo tree made of gold while the other consisted of silver and black iron.

A regular tree and a bamboo tree created this entire area. Their roots were rooted in the depths of the ocean. Remember that in the past, this was just an empty ocean without any islands.

Not all of the islands here were created by the intertwining roots and branches of these two trees. Some of them were made from a great amount of refined sea water.

In addition to many vegetations and trees on the islands, there was also a lot of coral and seaweed surrounding the area. They grew very well as if they were sky-piercing trees arranged in a very spectacular manner.

While standing on one of the islands, Li Qiye stared at the two trees in the distance and insipidly commented: “Returning to the earth... there is nothing else that can protect the future generations better than this. The Golden Bamboo Father and Silver Treefather died here to turn into the land that protects Golden Isle for tens of millions of years. This might go on for millions more.”

The disciple smilingly praised: “Our groom is quite insightful.”

Li Qiye thought about many things while looking at these two trees, especially the origin of the treants.

It was one of the three major races of the Heaven Spirit World. They could cultivate just like humans. The moment their flesh and blood formed, they would turn into cultivators. There was no difference between them and the other cultivators since their realms and levels were the same as well.

The only thing that was different was the final outcome. Humans and the other races would have a chance to compete for the

Heaven's Will to become the Immortal Emperor. On the other hand, treants did not vie for the Heaven's Will; they would return to the earth and turn into a haven for their descendants.

Only treefathers were qualified to return to the earth. For the treants, treefathers were equal to Immortal Emperors!

When a treant was powerful enough to become a treefather, it would return to the ultimate origin and take root on the earth upon death. Their descendants would be able to multiply unceasingly in this newly created paradise.

This was the most frightening aspect of treants. When these treefathers returned to the origin and took root, they wouldn't be able to manifest themselves as regular beings anymore, but they were still extremely powerful. Some could become even stronger than when they were still alive.

This was just like the sects that once had a living Immortal Emperor to protect them. One could imagine just how mighty these lineages used to be during those periods.

The disciple looked at Li Qiye and suggested: "Our groom, it is getting late now, please go back and rest."

Li Qiye gently nodded while looking back at him: "Okay, I'll stay at Golden Isle for now, but it is too early to decide whether I'll be your groom or not."

The disciple repeated with a smile: “Our groom, remember that it is not a bad thing to be part of our Golden Isle.”

Li Qiye abruptly retorted: “You should remember that with my bloodline, many people would want to kidnap me so that I can be their groom instead.”

The disciple couldn’t come up with a response in a short time after hearing this.

Our groom is one of those honorifics with no direct translation without it sounding stilted. The bride’s family would call the husband “groom”. It is quite respectful.

Golden Archipelago is probably more fitting in a geographical sense than Isle, but since the author didn’t use the exact word for it, I’ll just stick to the raw.

Chapter 1158: Life Origination

There was quite a stir at Golden Isle due to Li Qiye's sudden arrival and successful crossing of the one hundred and eight bloodline jade test.

Though the isle had long been prepared for this groom selection, this new bloodline coming out of nowhere caught them off guard. Thus, while the disciple arranged the living quarters for Li Qiye, several ancestors gathered to discuss this matter. Even the isle lord showed up.

After all, the main protagonist this time was his daughter, so he was more attentive about this than anyone else.

The ancestors glanced at each other while one of them spoke: "I don't think there has ever been a bloodline that passed through all the refined jade surfaces."

"Outside of our treefathers, the Silver Treefather's imperial prince had done so. I think he also passed all of the tests." A different ancestor corrected him.

Even though the apex experts of the treants couldn't become Immortal Emperors, in the eyes of many people, they were equal to Immortal Emperors. In this way, their direct children were also imperial children.

"Perhaps something was wrong with the platform?" Another ancestor questioned the validity of the test.

The Golden Isle Lord gently shook his head: “Ancestor, there was definitely no problem. I have already rechecked the platform and it is fine.”

“It can’t have a problem because it was created by the treefathers. It isn’t something so easily broken.” One of the ancestors was very confident with his sect’s platform.

Another added: “A bloodline of the imperial prince level... This has not appeared in the Heaven Spirit World for a long time.”

The third ancestor elaborated: “At the very least, not for the human race.”

The isle lord mused for a second before stating: “I’m afraid it is not an imperial bloodline of the contemporary generation. It has to be an even older one if our platform cannot analyze his lineage and origin. This means that his original ancestors are even older than our treefathers.”

An ancestor responded: “Such an ancient bloodline is all the more precious due to its greater purity.”

From a certain perspective, the isle lord was correct. Li Qiye’s bloodline had been polished several times. After numerous refinements, it had become very powerful. More importantly, he also refined the true blood of the Blood Progenitor and three Immortal Emperors from the Blood-devil Tribe, resulting in his bloodline becoming even more powerful and ancient.

The second ancestor clapped his hands and said: “Such a bloodline is a perfect match for our princess.”

“Senior Brother, you can’t put it that way.” The third ancestor slightly shook his head: “I’m afraid that when an imperial prince bloodline and an even older one combine, it will lead to conflicts between the bloodlines. This level of bloodline might lead to a descendant with a human bloodline whereas we want a powerful descendant with our bloodline this time.”

This opinion made the elders and isle lord stare at each other.

The main reason why these lineages liked powerful human bloodlines was because of reproduction. As long as their race’s bloodline was strong enough, the offspring would surely inherit their side.

However, if the groom’s lineage was of an ancient imperial line, then it became a different story. Perhaps the human bloodline would overcome the treefather’s bloodline and the child would be more human instead.

The isle lord asked the ancestor standing in front of him: “What should we do now? Shall we cancel the marriage and give him some compensation then let him leave?”

The first ancestor pondered for a bit before replying: “Nothing is impossible. In principle, we treants don’t need to preserve our blood’s purity. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be marrying humans. This

might actually be a good thing. We don't have to decide to breed our bloodline in this generation."

With that, he surveyed the rest of the group and continued: "So what if the offspring will have an imperial prince bloodline? This also means that we can multiply this particular bloodline! At the same time, it leaves us with a better bloodline. And it's not like we can't have human descendants in our line."

The other ancestors wondered for a bit before agreeing: "This is indeed understandable. We can postpone passing down our bloodline for now. Even if the future offspring carries an imperial prince lineage, it would only make our sect stronger and richer with legacies. If we could produce an Immortal Emperor, it could even change the current temperament of our isle."

"An Immortal Emperor from a treant lineage... this will be an amazing experiment." Even the Golden Isle Lord felt his heart beating faster with excitement.

For both treants and sea demons, their ultimate fate was to be stuck at the Heaven Spirit World. Due to their own powerful bloodlines, it was difficult for them to have offspring with a different bloodline winning out. Thus, they didn't have Immortal Emperors like the humans and other races.

However, if the lineage itself could produce a human Immortal Emperor, then it would be a new pattern for the treant race.

Li Qiye was staying on one of the islands with verdant and thick

foliage. There was only one building. Living alone on this islet while gazing at the beautiful sceneries was indeed a very pleasant lifestyle.

As the future groom, Golden Isle treated him very well, so he was particularly comfortable here.

In fact, the stallions at the big lineages had always enjoyed superb treatment. After all, they needed these powerful bloodlines to produce more offspring. The loss of these stallions was the lineages' loss.

After the disciple from the isle left, Li Qiye sealed the space around him and began to channel his blood energy while examining his internal condition.

After doing so, he gained a better understanding of his internal injuries thanks to the water beam. With his mastery of alchemy and methods of treatment, these injuries weren't much and could be healed very quickly.

He understood now that the internal injuries weren't the problem, the main culprit was the drop of water that he obtained from the maelstrom.

He opened his fate palace and the spring of life emerged. A casual glance wouldn't yield any results, but with a careful observation, he noticed that the drop of water was still floating in the spring.

There was nothing strange about it since it looked quite similar to the water of life; it was all melting into life. However, with a meticulous gaze, one would find that the majority of the spring water here couldn't melt this particular drop. Eventually, through sheer effort and repetition, a little strand of this drop was finally removed.

Just like that, tiny threads of beads were melting into the spring. This made the water of life suddenly become heavy and full of vitality. The process of diluting these little threads of essences required a monstrous amount of life water.

It was precisely this incredible drop of water that was making Li Qiye's spring of life feel unbearable. Due to the shortage of life water, Li Qiye's vitality and strength were suppressed.

Thus, it appeared as if he was a mortal rather than a cultivator. Even a stronger cultivator wouldn't be able to tell that something special was happening to his blood energy.

"So amazing, this thing combined with the maelstrom created a unique condition. No wonder why all kind of unbelievable events occurred before in the past." Li Qiye exclaimed in admiration after seeing the essences within a single drop of water since he was aware of its true mysteries.

The great maelstrom was a dreadful place and even more ominous for the charming spirits. Not too many people knew about the secret hidden within.

“Life Origination, I have finally found it.” Li Qiye watched his own life water trying to analyze this bead and murmured: “Just missing one more part. If I can have all four, then the four cores of the [fate palaces](#) will open and a profundity understood by no one throughout this entire world will appear.”

He couldn't help but smile at this point. No one had been able to collect all four parts. In fact, Li Qiye had never seen the true appearance of these four parts before. He had only heard a few legends about them.

Of course, only characters like him were eligible to even know about these rumors! He even questioned their existence in the beginning.

It wasn't until he obtained the Ancient Void Rune that he confirmed that all of them truly existed. After grabbing the Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter, he began to see through their mysteries.

The rune, chapter, and now the origination, all of them had unbelievable mysticisms and power. There was no need to talk about other things, focusing purely on the Blood Progenitor, he had truly grasped the mysteries of the Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter and even thoroughly maximized its effects.

Because of this, the progenitor was able to establish the matchless Blood Race!

After obtaining the chapter, Li Qiye gained a new idea. He

wanted to gather all four items. Only by doing so would he be able to truly grasp their ultimate mysticism.

The truth was that in the last millions of years, he had spent painstaking efforts to learn more about these legends. Alas, it was all for naught, which made him quite suspicious about the claims.

But now, he was more determined than ever to collect all four. At the same time, he understood where to go to find the last piece.

“The ultimate mysticism of the fate palaces...” Li Qiye glanced over all three items and murmured: “Or rather, the mysteries behind the power of this world are hidden within.”

This fate palace theory was mentioned during the first fifty chapters when they were introduced.

Chapter 1159: Golden Isle Lord

The isle master paid special attention to Li Qiye. On the next day, he came to visit Li Qiye.

This was enough to show how much the isle valued a groom like him. After all, a great lineage like this normally wouldn't act in such a way.

It was built on two treefathers, meaning that it was equal to a lineage with two Immortal Emperors. However, remember how treefathers would return to the earth and the origin to protect their descendants? This meant that a lineage like the frightening isle had even more resources and power than a dual emperors lineage.

The personal visit from the isle lord was giving more than enough face for Li Qiye.

“Ah, Virtuous Nephew's entrance to my Golden Isle was truly a spectacle; you and my daughter are truly a match made in heaven.” The isle lord happily smiled after seeing Li Qiye: “I heard our disciples say that your entry was a complete coincidence. This simply means that this marriage is the will of the heavens, a preordained romance that will become a wonderful tale across the Heaven Spirit World!”

Li Qiye smiled in response while staring at the isle lord: “It's a bit strange to hear you put it that way. I'm more like a captive stallion, ready to mate at any time to produce more offspring.”

The isle lord burst out into laughter and replied: “Being qualified to be a stallion is also a type of capital; not just anyone can be a stallion no matter how much they desire it. We can also take a step back and say that being a stallion of our Golden Isle is not a shameful thing at all. We won’t talk about other stuff, but Virtuous Nephew will have no lack of riches here.”

The isle lord was being very frank and honest. In fact, there was no need for any trickery. With the isle’s status and power, they would look down on lying to Li Qiye.

“Then I suppose I should be thanking you for your honesty.” Li Qiye smiled leisurely.

The isle lord took another look at Li Qiye. This was an ordinary looking fella. If it wasn’t for the examination by their formation, he would find it difficult to believe that such a normal looking young man had the bloodline of the imperial prince level.

However, after a quick word with him, the lord truly believed that this person had a powerful bloodline. He might look ordinary, but his responses and demeanor were far from it.

Anyone would be ecstatic and jump happily after becoming the groom of Golden Isle. They would either start feeling smug and conceited or act bashfully out of apprehension for their status.

However, this youth was completely nonchalant and natural. He was at ease regardless of whether he wanted to become the groom

or that he was facing the island's lord.

It seemed that both being the groom and talking to the isle lord couldn't cause any waves in his mind, that it wasn't enough for him to care. Such a person must have experienced countless storms and had a determined dao heart.

The isle lord smilingly stated: "I believe that when Virtuous Nephew and my daughter live together, you two will become a dao pair that garners the envy of many people in this world."

Li Qiye gently shook his head and responded in a cordial manner: "Isle Lord has such confidence? To be frank, do you think that I will definitely marry your daughter? I know some of the conventions in the Heaven Spirit World. For many lineages, they would have started looking for a stallion the moment a powerful bloodline appears."

"I know full well that these powerful lineages have many stallions that have been groomed for a long time. Outside of allowing the pair to get to know each other, it could also cultivate loyalty and dedication." Li Qiye glanced at the isle lord and said with a smile: "But now, your sect is choosing from outsiders, this is quite interesting..."

"Everything will change with time, and conventions are no exceptions." The isle lord maintained his smile.

Li Qiye went on: "Whether if it was picking the right stallion or choosing the correct cauldron, in terms of humans, I know the best

choices are at the Exquisite Valley. It is the place with exceptional human bloodlines, so it makes more sense if your Golden Isle would cooperate with them.”

The isle lord smiled: “The world is vast, it is not certain that the Exquisite Valley will have the greatest bloodlines. Virtuous Nephew is someone like that. Your bloodline surpasses all of the bloodlines there. In fact, it is worthy of pride no matter where you go, whether it be the Heaven Spirit World or the rest of the nine worlds.”

The Exquisite Valley was the largest human lineage in this world. Its strength was unbelievably mighty and it had two brilliant aspects. The first was their beautiful appearances and the other was their great bloodlines.

It was also the sect that had the most relationships with other sects and powers in the Heaven Spirit World.

On top of this, it had the most dashing males and beautiful females. Of course, this was putting things tactfully. To be frank, it was a place that produced stallions and [cultivation incubators](#).

It had the finest and most comprehensive bloodlines of the human race, making them suitable for any other race and lineage.

There was an ongoing joke. If one couldn't find a suitable husband or wife at the Exquisite Valley, then they wouldn't be able to find one at all in the nine worlds and were doomed to live a single life till old.

Although it was a joke, it did show just how excellent and plentiful the bloodlines were at the valley.

Because of this, many main successors and daughters of the lineages here were very welcoming of men and women from the valley to be their [live-in partner](#).

Due to the inter-marriage relationships, the valley had ties with many lineages in the Heaven Spirit World, allowing them to have a matchless amount of connections.

Li Qiye laughed after hearing this: “Please don’t flatter me so much or I’ll feel so elated that I’ll have to say yes to you.”

The isle lord immediately said with a smile: “This can’t be considered flattery. Your constitution truly deserves such praise.”

Li Qiye leisurely answered: “But Isle Lord still hasn’t answered my question.”

The isle lord was still all smiles: “Nephew worries too much. The valley is indeed an excellent lineage and worthy of admiration regardless of the generation.”

“I see.” Li Qiye smirked and slowly said: “Your daughter’s bloodline is absolutely matchless. It contains something amazing, so you all don’t want to form ties with the valley. After all, with such an incredible lineage, why involve the valley and share it?”

“Moreover, you will even take an imperial level bloodline like me in. This means that you have great confidence in your own bloodline. Or perhaps my bloodline will be able to support hers. From this, Golden Isle might have a heaven-defying child in the future.” He stared directly at the isle lord at this point.

The lord only laughed out loud in response: “Nephew is overthinking things too much. We’re only making a minor change, it is no secret at all.”

“Fine, if Isle Lord does not wish to say it, I won’t push the issue.” Li Qiye smiled back: “However, I’m really not interested in this marriage at all, if we can call it that. I’m not willing to be your breeding stallion.”

The lord glanced at him quickly and said: “Our Golden Isle will not force such a thing onto Nephew, but you should know that forming a strong alliance rings true no matter the occasion. If you are willing to stay... there’s no need for me to explain all the benefits. As for other things, we can talk about it in detail.”

The lord was indeed showing enough sincerity and goodwill. It was a clear indication of how important he deemed Li Qiye’s bloodline to be.

Li Qiye was quite amused by this treatment as he chortled: “Even before taking my opinion into account, don’t you think this type of groom selection is too hasty? Will your daughter agree to having a random husband that appeared out of nowhere? I trust that no girl

wouldn't oppose this. Isle Lord is a smart person, I'm sure you know that in order to have a successful marriage with the aim of reproduction and strengthening your bloodline, the parties involved still need to like each other. This would be the best case scenario. There is no force greater than the word 'love', it is both a poison and panacea."

Stallions, incubators, and bloodlines were extremely precious. If there was a loss to either of the parties, then it would be a loss to the entire sect.

It was best that the man and woman liked each other so that they could reproduce and strengthen a bloodline. Because of this, the two would normally meet each other at a very young age. Their relationship would then develop to become a pillar for their emotional attachment in the future.

The powerful lineages usually wouldn't suddenly pick a stallion or incubator. Most would be groomed from a young age. Thus, Golden Isle's action this time contained a mystery that no one else knew about.

Incubators here are females.

Live-in partner here is a concept mainly for grooms. They would go live with their wife's family instead and the children would not carry their last name. It is a shameful thing.

Chapter 1160: Ye Xiaoxiao

The lord smiled and sincerely replied: “It’s just as you say, love requires time. You haven’t met my daughter, so how do you know that she won’t agree?”

“You are indeed worthy of being the lord of the isle, you’re already laying a trap with just a few words.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh. Without a doubt, this lord was a smart one.

The isle lord smiled in response: “We’ll decide it like this. Nephew can keep on thinking about it carefully. If you haven’t made up your mind, then it is fine to stay here for a bit. Our doors will always be open for you, just treat our isle as your own home.”

“Thank you for showing such love.” Li Qiye smiled and nodded his head.

This lord was an open-minded person. There was no conflict of interest between the two of them right now, so Li Qiye accepted the lord’s attempt at winning him over.

As the lord made it to the door, he suddenly turned back and asked: “I almost forgot to ask, may I know who your master is?”

Li Qiye freely replied: “I am only a vagrant cultivator and the oceans are my home, it’s not worth mentioning.”

The lord didn’t inquire further. He only laughed and said: “Then

I hope you can get used to this place. If you need anything, just let my disciples know.” He left after saying this.

He wouldn't be so inquisitive after Li Qiye showed his unwillingness to speak about his origin. For Golden Isle, if this person came from a lineage in the Heaven Spirit World, they could definitely find out as this was within their abilities.

Li Qiye sealed his surrounding space once more after the lord left. He sat cross-legged to meditate. Even though his internal injuries were very serious, they recovered in a short amount of time due to the Heaven Restoration Salve.

At this moment, his injuries were not a problem. The only issue was the unsolved Life Origination that was severely suppressing his blood energy.

Of course, he was not in a rush to solve this either. After all, such an item didn't come easily. The process required time and the water of life to slowly dilute the drop of water.

He instead focused on the Space Scripture and its fundamentals. Although he had grasped its mysteries quite well at this moment, there was still a long way to go before he could use it at will. To do so, he would need to master its profundities.

There were four parts to the scripture, or four major chapters: World Creation, Space Control, Parallelism, and Cryptic Space.

Among these four chapters, World Creation was the most important and incredible. It was the most essential part of the scripture.

World Creation was not referring to creating new worlds and existences; the Space Scripture had not reached that level. After all, this was beyond the boundary of cultivation. Life creation was something left to the heavens alone.

To be precise, World Creation was about opening up space. The truth was that after reaching a particular realm, all cultivators could do such a thing. Godkings and Immortal Emperors were able to open larger spaces.

However, the World Creation from the Space Scripture was different from these other methods. A space opened by an Immortal Emperor was different as well.

Once the user of World Creation reached the top level, even spaces opened by Immortal Emperors would seem much lesser in comparison.

World Creation was an arduous process, but if cultivated fully, then a new world would appear, a spatial realm on the same level as an entire world.

This level of space could accept everything, including any existence, item, and force. It was similar to creation like the start of the heaven and earth, the nine worlds. Because it had a spatial structure, the nine worlds were able to have sentient beings.

Thus, this was almost the opening of a world. With a successful opening, new life would one day be born. From then on, it would no longer be the nine worlds but ten. At that time, Li Qiye would become the supreme ruler. Of course, it was not something that could be done in a day or two.

The other three major chapters of the Space Scripture had their own characteristics and usages as well. Among them, Space Control encompassed the most content. For example, portal summoning, teleportation, banishment, space correction, deep space, displaced space, visual phenomenon space... all of this was part of the Space Control chapter.

Golden Isle treated Li Qiye with an incomparably warm hospitality as if he was the most esteemed guest they had ever received. This made his recovery very comfortable.

However, before two days passed, trouble had found his door. Early in the morning while he was cultivating in this room, someone shouting could be heard from the outside.

“Li Qiye, roll out here for this lady!” Despite the high volume, the voice was very sweet and pleasant. There was an indescribable charm and youthfulness to it.

Li Qiye stood up and left his room to find a girl standing in the living room, a very young girl to be exact.

The lass looked to be around thirteen years old. She grew up quite well and had a complexion as white as jade. Her spirited eyes were round and big in a fulfilling manner. Her small nose was sculpted without fault while her cherry mouth was as red as fire.

She stood with both hands on her waist while proudly arching her chest forward. This posture slightly revealed the valley and figure beneath the embroidered dress.

This little lass was truly lovely and cute; others couldn't help but like her. Of course, her demeanor and posturing showed off her hot and strong personality.

Moreover, she was barefoot. The moment her small and exquisite feet fell into sight, everyone would be in awe for it was a perfect masterpiece made by the heavens. The crystal white feet had perfect proportions; a bit more would be too fat while a bit less would be too thin.

Flowers blossomed and fresh grass would spring up whether she walked. It was as if she was walking on a field of flowers.

Her blood energy was still hidden, and the same could be said for her dao. It showed that she was not using any merit laws or techniques, yet lush vegetation was still appearing. This meant that she had an innate ability not found in others. This was a type of special constitution or unique bloodline.

Li Qiye glanced at her and the field below her. His eyes slightly

narrowed before he revealed a smile: “I am Li Qiye, who might you be?”

“Ye Xiaoxiao.” She maintained her aggressive appearance while glaring at him.

“I don’t know you.” Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head.

The lass was unhappy with this response. She replied in a fiery manner: “This lady is the princess of Golden Isle, the woman that you will marry!”

“Er—” Li Qiye smiled wryly. Other girls would be too bashful to say such words, but this Ye Xiaoxiao blurted them out without a problem.

He cupped his fists and said: “[Oh, so it is Princess Ye. Long time no see, long time no see, I didn’t expect Princess to come.](#)”

“Long time no see my ass.” Ye Xiaoxiao stated with disdain: “You didn’t even know who I am earlier. Stop your act right now.”

Li Qiye laughed amusingly after seeing her fiery attitude. This little girl was very interesting. He readily accepted being exposed and leisurely replied with a grin: “Okay, I messed up about saying long time no see. After all, I’ve never even heard of your name prior to this.”

“You...” She was stumped for a moment and couldn’t come up

with a response. She came with an imposing attitude to yell at him, so she expected him to arrogantly yell back at her so that she could kick him out of Golden Isle.

Either that or he would be suppressed by her aggression and become submissive. Thus, she would also kick such a submissive nobody out of Golden Isle.

She didn't expect him to not act arrogantly or submissively.

Something people say between friends. Li Qiye is being sarcastic right now by acting all familiar.

Chapter 1161: You Have To Marry Me

Li Qiye crossed his arms in front of his chest and leisurely smiled: “May I ask what you are here for, my young miss?”

She immediately became spirited after hearing his question and glared at him with her big and round eyes: “Why don’t you want to marry me?!”

“Er—” Li Qiye was caught off guard. Luckily, she spoke in an aggressive manner. If she spoke to him with a tone full of resentment and indignation like an abandoned lover, others would actually mistake him for an unloyal and fickle man.

He smiled and said while looking straight at her: “Why should I marry you?”

“Because this lady is the Golden Isle Princess, the number one beauty of the Jade Sea with a supreme and peerless bloodline.” She confidently stated while still posing with her hands on her waist. There was no trace of bashfulness to be found.

Li Qiye wondered whether he should laugh or cry. He shook his head in response: “And I should marry just because of that? What if a demon dragon comes out of nowhere one day and claims to be the number one beauty, do I have to marry her too?”

“Bah, who would dare to take my man?!” The unashamed lady claimed while glaring at him: “If you didn’t want to marry me, why did you run here and ruin my business by passing the others

on the stage?”

He shook his head once more: “I can’t be blamed for that as I only fell down from the sky by accident and coincidentally struck your formation.”

“What’s wrong with that?” She scowled while staring at him with a burning gaze: “Since it is the providence from the heavens, you still dare not to marry me?!”

To the amusement of Li Qiye, she looked as if she wanted him to take responsibility, prompting him to reply: “So you are saying you are particularly anxious to get married already?”

“I...” She wanted to erupt but stopped in time: “Bah, don’t think so highly of yourself. Who says I am in a rush to get married?!”

She simply wanted to kick him out of Golden Isle. Who would want to marry a stranger? Moreover, she was still a little girl, but the moment she returned, she heard some disciples say that someone named Li Qiye possibly didn’t want to marry her.

This rubbed her the wrong way. A man actually didn’t want to marry her! Thus, she wanted to come and see just what kind of person would do so.

He replied: “Then perfect, you don’t want to get married and I don’t want to either. Isn’t this the end of it? Plus, you are still a little girl. Time is still plentiful on this endless road. One day, you

will find a suitable man.”

“Bah, who says that I am still young? I’m an adult already!” The moment she heard the word ‘little’, she immediately became enraged. She hated being called little the most by others, so she grunted unhappily while exaggerating her posture even more by raising her barely gropable breasts.

Her appearance aimed to tell Li Qiye that she was not little anymore for she was already a grown lady.

He couldn’t really do anything against this bold girl. He only smiled: “Right, right, you are a grown up already.”

“[Are you a little puppy or something](#)? You are just going along with whatever I am saying, don’t you have your own thoughts?” She glared at him with disdain.

A girl’s mind was already quite fickle, leaving others confused, but on top of this, she was even more unpredictable.

Li Qiye didn’t argue against her and only leisurely said: “If you have no other business, I’m going to take a nap.” He yawned afterward.

“Bah, already taking a nap when it is so early, are you a pig?” She really wanted to antagonize him.

He ignored her and gently waved his sleeve: “I guess I’m a pig

then. Please leave if you have nothing else to say, I won't entertain you anymore." Li Qiye made it obvious about wanting to send the guest away.

However, she didn't want to leave and answered in a forthright manner: "If I leave after you tell me to leave, won't I lose all face? Golden Isle is my territory."

"Okay, girl, what do you want?" He looked at her and begrudgingly waved his sleeve.

Few things could deceive his eyes. He knew that the girl was not malicious and only wanted to cause trouble due to the fact that she didn't want to marry.

She declared with a domineering presence: "You have to marry me!"

He took a couple more glimpses of her before wryly smiling: "Little girl, do you know what it means to get married?"

"Peh! You are the little girl! If you call me that one more time, I'll personally strangle you to death. No, if you call me a little girl again, I will peel your skin and shred your tendons while drinking your blood!" She gave him a dirty look since she hated being called this the most.

"Fine, I'll just call you girl then." He raised both of his hands and acted as if he was giving up: "Girl, do you know what it means to

get married?”

“Please, I am not a fool, how could I not know?” She coldly snorted and said: “If I tell you to marry me, then do it, why waste time with so much nonsense?!”

He curiously looked at her and asked: “If I am not mistaken, you don’t truly want to get married, so why do you want me to marry you?”

“Hmph! Who says that I didn’t want to marry?” She arched forward to accentuate her chest again: “I am now old so it is time to start a family.”

Marriage was an embarrassing topic for many girls, but this little one didn’t care at all. She blurted out her words in a very comfortable and natural manner.

Li Qiye carefully looked at her up and down, letting her notice his burning eyes. This made her feel very uneasy. After all, although she spoke without reservation, she was still a little lady in the end.

“What are you looking at, pervert! Keep looking and I’ll claw your eyes out!” She turned fierce and suddenly lunged forward with her fingers aiming for his eyes.

Naturally, he wouldn’t let her succeed and immediately grabbed her small hand. With her being inches away, he smiled and said: “Since you said you wanted me to marry you, then I am your

husband. As your husband, it is not unreasonable for me to appreciate you a bit. Plus, it wasn't a big deal. It is not like I was taking your clothes off or anything."

"Bah! You old pervert!" Ye Xiaoxiao was still too young so she couldn't handle Li Qiye. With a blushed complexion, she yelled: "Watch! I'll teach you a lesson!"

With that, a snapping whip was heard. In the blink of an eye, a green vine had wrapped around Li Qiye's arm; it coiled around his body like a demonic snake. The moment it entangled him completely, countless sharp thorns spread out like quills that wanted to suck out Li Qiye's blood.

Li Qiye wouldn't entertain this notion. His Hell Suppression Godly Physique activated. With popping sounds, the vines surrounding his body were immediately split.

At this time, Ye Xiaoxiao had escaped Li Qiye's clutch and spoke: "Hmph, looks like you have some skill."

He resumed his gaze that was quite unpleasant to her. It made her feel very uncomfortable, but she didn't want to show any weakness, so she instead proudly stood straight with her soft breasts forward while glaring at him with a fiery stare.

"Have you had your fill?" She snorted in a very arrogant style with black lines on her forehead.

He withdrew his eyes and said: “I’m really curious about your bloodline now. Not too many things in this can actually hide from my eyes.”

She responded haughtily: “Why should I tell you?”

Li Qiye stroked his chin and quipped back: “If you tell me, I will marry you.”

This startled her as she blurted: “Who says that I want to marry you, bah!”

“Little girl will always be embarrassed.” Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: “Earlier, you were yelling and demanding for me to marry you, but now, it is the other way around. Aiz, this is really frustrating. Girl, do you want to marry or not?”

She stared at him and didn’t say anything for a moment.

He nonchalantly stood there with grace to let her look as much as she wanted. After a while, he said with a smile: “Girl, have you had your fill? I know I am incomparably handsome, but you shouldn’t be infatuated to this level.”

Her face turned red as she regained her wits and angrily said: “Bah! Shameless old pervert! Who would be infatuated with you? Go look in the mirror first. Daring to claim to be handsome with your common appearance, have you no shame?”

Li Qiye ignored her assessment and said: “Okay, girl, stop pestering me endlessly. I actually want to know why you want this marriage. If I’m not mistaken, you have changed your mind for now.”

Raw is Pekingese, but this is the first time I’ve heard of this dog breed. The Pekingese is an ancient breed of toy dog that originated in China. They are called Lion Dogs due to their resemblance to Chinese guardian lions.

Chapter 1162: The Fiery Ye Xiaoxiao

She fiercely glared at him and said: “Hmph! Why should I tell you? Just do what I say instead of blabbering about!”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “If that’s the case, then we have nothing else to talk about.”

Having said that, he turned back to go into his bedroom.

“Hey, stop, are you listening?” She shouted after seeing this.

Li Qiye paused and turned his head around: “You got something else to say? If not, then don’t bother me.”

She was annoyed by his attitude and maintained her fierce gaze and aggressive posture: “I’m asking you now, do you really have a bloodline of the imperial prince level?”

He turned his body around and gave her a quick look before smiling: “Are you doubting your Golden Isle’s formation? Did you come here to demand a marriage or to see if I have an imperial prince-level bloodline?”

“Don’t you worry about that, I’ll do what I want.” Her hands were often found on her waist as she said: “Stop asking so many things. Do you have it or not?!”

“It really looks like we have nothing to talk about.” Li Qiye waved his hand and turned around, leaving with a smile on his face.

“Hey!” Ye Xiaoxiao felt a little anxious and stomped once before blocking his path: “Do you have an imperial level bloodline or not?”

Li Qiye looked at the little girl in front of him and said: “I understand. You came here not to see whether I want to marry you or not, but to see if I have that type of bloodline.”

With that, he crossed his arms before his chest and looked at her in a carefree manner: “If you sincerely asked earlier, maybe I would have told you.”

She muttered under her breath after hearing this then shouted: “Just let me know, do you have it or not?!”

Li Qiye nodded his head and chuckled: “If we are using the definition of your treant race, then yes, my bloodline is of the imperial level.”

She didn’t completely buy this, so it was her turn to look at Li Qiye up and down to find some clues from his body.

After a careful examination, she asked with a voice full of suspicion: “Is it really at the imperial level? You don’t look like someone with that type of bloodline at all.”

Li Qiye burst out in laughter in response: “Can you really determine an imperial bloodline with the naked eye? Don’t you have a very powerful bloodline as well? Can we tell its strength just by looking at you?”

“Hmph! What do you know? My bloodline is supreme and unique in all the eons.” She was unhappy with his answer and spoke with confidence: “How can your commoner’s eyes see through my bloodline?”

Li Qiye replied in the same fashion: “Then the same goes for me. My bloodline is supreme and unique in all the eons, how can a little girl like you see through it with the naked eye?”

She managed to restrain her anger this time, but she still glared at him nevertheless: “Shouldn’t an imperial bloodline have a surging imperial aura as if an Immortal Emperor has descended? They can suppress their enemies with just their bloodline.”

Li Qiye was quite amused by this response: “Who told you that an imperial bloodline has such characteristics?”

A limited definition of an imperial bloodline was being the child of an Immortal Emperor and inheriting his bloodline. These people were called imperial children.

The truth was that Li Qiye didn’t have an official imperial bloodline, but in a sense, his was even more precious than an imperial prince because his blood contained the legacy of the Blood

Progenitor. More importantly, his blood had been refined multiple times by the Worldly Prime Liquid among other immortal items. Thus, his bloodline became even more precious.

After hearing his answer, she looked at him with skepticism and asked: “Don’t you humans always say this?”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Have you met an imperial prince with said bloodline? A few things are only baseless rumors.”

“Hmph, I knew that you humans couldn’t be trusted. Your race doesn’t have this imperial bloodline or whatever, at least not at the Heaven Spirit World.” She immediately became a bit spirited.

Her latter statement was correct. In fact, the human race didn’t have an imperial child in this world.

The truth was that in the nine worlds, this type of bloodline would not appear in every generation. For humans, the chance of it appearing was even lower.

He was a little interested after noticing her excitement and told her: “Isn’t one in front of you right now?”

She looked at him once more with suspicion: “You really have it...?”

Her suspicion was warranted, Li Qiye didn’t look like someone who has an imperial bloodline. His blood energy was concealed

and his dao force was weak. It could even be said that no matter how one looked at him, he simply resembled a mortal.

Even if an imperial bloodline didn't have a surging aura like the arrival of an Immortal Emperor, at the very least, the owner should have exuberant blood energy and an incredible physical body.

If Li Qiye didn't pass their trial, Ye Xiaoxiao wouldn't even be interested in doing this and would have just assumed that he was a lying swindler.

"It can't be faked." Li Qiye chuckled: "Even if you don't believe me, you should believe your Golden Isle's formation that was made by your treefathers. Plus, your father's people have confirmed it as well."

"Hmph, are you sure you aren't an accomplice of my father and scheming to trick me?" She fiercely stared at him and said: "If I find out that you are conspiring with my father's people to fool me, I will really peel your skin..."

"Okay, little girl, this isn't a conspiracy or anything." He waved his sleeve and interrupted her while laughing: "Even if your father wants to trick you, I don't have the time and interest to do so. Hurry up and tell me what you want from me."

She hesitated for a moment while peering at him. She truly looked like she didn't trust him at all, but in the end, she still asked: "If you have an imperial bloodline, do you feel that there is

something different about you or something special in the bloodline itself?”

Li Qiye’s curiosity was suddenly aroused. He stared at her for a bit before answering: “It looks like this groom selection from your isle really isn’t that simple. So if I didn’t have an imperial bloodline and it was someone else instead who passed your examination, someone found to be unsuitable for you in the future, the marriage would be canceled and it would just end there?”

There was a well-established system for stallions and incubators in this world. When a lineage picked them from a young age, a marriage wouldn’t take place if it turned out that they weren’t a good match or if there was a disparity between them. The majority of these stallions and incubators would be repatriated back to their sect.

In other words, even if someone was selected to be the groom of Golden Isle, it was just an agreement. The stallion still needed to undergo observation and trials. Once they passed, the marriage would finally take place so that they can produce offspring.

“Well, that has nothing to do with you.” She glared at him: “If you have a real imperial bloodline, you don’t have anything to worry about.”

“I understand, you all want to find the most powerful bloodline. Your first choice was not an imperial bloodline, maybe it was a search for an ancient bloodline.” Li Qiye narrowed his eyes while looking at her.

“Hmph, you’re talking nonsense.” She fiercely replied: “It is good that you have an imperial lineage since I’ll be marrying you. [No, actually, I’m the one who’s taking you in!](#)”

Li Qiye laughed it up while looking at her fierce appearance and said: “Girl, you’re thinking too much into it. Even if you were willing, I still wouldn’t want to marry you.”

She held her pretty little waist and tigerishly declared: “This is not up to you. If you dare to not marry me, I’ll beat you until your face looks like a pig.”

All along, people had only heard about a lady being forced to marry. How many had heard about a groom being forced to take a wife?

His piercing glare once again settled on her body before he gave a leisurely response: “Girl, it is not that I’m looking down on you, but do you think you can force me to marry you with your little body? Return from whence you came.”

In China, the common notion is that the bride is married off to the groom. In this passage, she’s implying that she’s the groom, the person in power.

Chapter 1163: Ye Xiaoxiao's Mysterious Bloodline

She was furious from being looked down upon like this by Li Qiye and shouted: “Bah, you’re the one with the little body! You dare to not marry me when it is not up to you to decide? That’s it, watch me beat you into a pig’s head!”

She immediately took action after finishing her threat. There wasn’t too much movement since she didn’t even use a merit law. There was only a frightening blood energy. Space seemed to be opening up as she waved her hand. One could hear a clattering sound as a strange flower appeared before Li Qiye.

It was large and had eight bright red petals. In other words, this odd flower was made from extreme Yang true fire.

“Extreme Yang Godflower.” Li Qiye’s eyes turned serious after seeing this flower. In a short time period of time, the endless sunfire trapped Li Qiye completely. With a clunk, the flames turned into universal laws. They didn’t only imprison him, they also attacked him like a scorpion’s tail that aimed to pierce his body.

“Clank!” A metallic bang resounded when Li Qiye immediately used his Nine Sun Locking Heaven Law. With a poof, the refined fire laws entered his body.

When fire laws of this caliber pierced one’s body, even if the victim didn’t turn into ashes instantly, they would be burned and

suffer a pain worse than death.

However, Li Qiye didn't show any signs of him being in pain at all. He only smiled and said: "Quite nutritious. This thing is quite rare."

"Try this then!" She shouted after seeing that Li Qiye wasn't afraid of her godflower at all. Her vitality soared. With a loud bang, a strange tree half the size of a man emerged. It seemed to be carved out of profound ice.

The moment it appeared, a buzzing sound could be heard as a terrifying power suddenly froze everything. Its target was Li Qiye.

However, Li Qiye's nine suns law began to blaze. His own refined sunfire circled around him and easily stopped the freezing attack from this tree, leaving him completely untouched.

He didn't bother looking at the flower and the tree for his eyes were fixated on Ye Xiaoxiao. He spoke with a changed expression: "Little girl, what is this bloodline of yours!"

Very few things in life could move Li Qiye. However, she really did shock him this time. She didn't use any merit laws, but the godflower and strange tree came out. They were not items created from merit laws, they were real existences.

Her summoning reminded Li Qiye of a very archaic legend about the treants. Perhaps even members of this race didn't know about

it because it was too ancient. Moreover, it had never appeared before, so there was no proof. Even in the distant ages, those who had heard about it paid it no mind because there was no way it was true!

“Hmph, why should I tell you?” She waved her hand and the godflower and odd tree vanished.

Li Qiye stroked his chin and said with a grin: “If you tell me a little bit about your bloodline, I might consider taking you in. And in accordance with your wish, I can also give you an answer to your question about the imperial bloodline.”

“You go first. This lady will listen to you first about the bloodline, then I’ll consider telling you about my own.” She snorted while looking at him.

Li Qiye stared at Ye Xiaoxiao as his eyes flashed several times. She suddenly felt uneasy against his gaze. Even though it was not a sharp and scary pair of eyes, they seemed to be able to penetrate all things.

“I see, I see.” Li Qiye noticed her demeanor and slowly spoke: “In the end, you yourself don’t even understand your bloodline, likewise with your isle. You all don’t even understand the mysticisms within.”

“The more accurate reason for this groom selection was to find an answer within the many bloodlines of the human race, it wasn’t just to find a mighty one. You are searching for a bloodline that is

truly comparable to your own so that you can analyze its mysteries.” With that, Li Qiye smiled: “If I’m not mistaken, even the items left behind by your treefathers cannot analyze your bloodline.”

“Hmph, what a bunch of nonsense, this is only your one-sided speculation.” She scowled: “What is this about not knowing my own bloodline? I naturally know everything about it. I just don’t want to tell you so that you’ll get mad.”

Despite her strong retort, it was evident that it was all for show.

He gently shook his head: “Girl, there’s no need to be stubborn, you can’t hide it from my eyes. If you tell me the truth about your bloodline, maybe I can even help you.”

Ye Xiaoxiao wanted to speak, but she immediately closed her mouth while turning cautious.

“Clang—clank—” At this moment, the alarm suddenly sounded at Golden Isle. A disciple shouted: “We’re under attack!”

Ye Xiaoxiao’s expression sank after hearing this. Her eyes narrowed as she said: “Which bastard is sneak attacking my Golden Isle!”

With that, she turned and left. A flower bloomed after each step as she soared into the sky.

Li Qiye smiled and went outside the room to look towards the island.

“Splash!” Outside of the islands, sea water in the form of aqua dragons rose. They were completely blue and soared into the sky before plunging down towards Golden Isle.

Even the Golden Isle Lord was alerted after this sudden attack. He stood up in the sky and shouted: “Who is it!”

Without a doubt, the assailant didn’t want to show themselves, they simply controlled these aqua dragons for the assault.

Bursts of alarms rang across Golden Isle. Keep in mind that it was definitely a powerful lineage comparable to any imperial lineage or immortal gate. It had to be someone skillful to even dare attack it.

“Activate!” The disciples immediately rushed out to meet the enemy the moment these aqua dragons reached the warning zones.

“Crash!” However, more and more dragons came out of the sea. In the blink of an eye, ten thousand aqua dragons leapt into the sky and attacked these crucial zones with great ferocity.

At this time, Li Qiye withdrew his gaze from the distance and redirected it down to the surface of the water. He turned serious after seeing the sparkling sea water.

Someone emerged from the ocean. It was a girl riding a seahorse.

She wore a blue dress and an ethereal silk veil. In the light breeze, she seemed particularly slim and graceful. Her entire being seemed to be swaying with the wind.

This dark green seahorse resembled both a flood dragon and a horse. With its perfect outlines, it was definitely the finest in terms of horses in the ocean.

The girl hid her face so no one could see her true appearance. She came out of the ocean without any warning or sound like a ghost. No one noticed her arrival.

If it wasn't for Li Qiye, no one would have detected her intrusion. Despite being completely soundless, she was extremely fast while riding her seahorse. In the blink of an eye, she was already next to Li Qiye.

“Get on.” She told him while concealing her real voice.

“Why should I?” Li Qiye smiled while looking at the girl; he was relaxed as always.

The girl didn't waste words. She immediately grabbed Li Qiye and pulled him onto the seahorse so that he was sitting in front of her.

“A bit interesting.” Li Qiye didn't bother resisting. He seemed to be entertained by this.

The seahorse turned around and snuck out towards the ocean in order to escape.

But before the seahorse could reach the sea, a shout came about: “Where do you think you’re going?!” Ye Xiaoxiao noticed the abduction and immediately attacked with blossoming flowers below her.

The odd tree emerged again. With a buzz, she instantly froze the nearby sea with astonishing speed.

The other girl noticed the frozen sea water, but she didn’t halt. She rode the seahorse into the sky with lightning speed.

“Where are you from, demoness, to dare steal my man! You court death!” Ye Xiaoxiao had a scorching personality indeed. She stomped on a vine below her feet. This swift vine instantly caught up to the seahorse.

With one more cry, she attacked once more. A gigantic willow emerged. Its branches were like immortal ropes that intended to ensnare the other girl.

However, this girl was not that easy to mess with. Her delicate and jade-like hand unleashed a palm attack.

“Boom!” Ice dragons instantly rushed out of the frozen water and attacked the willow branches with unparalleled speed.

“Pop!” The willow branches tied up the dragons. Shortly after, the dragons and willow branches began to fight; neither side wanted to give in.

In this split second, the sea horse suddenly leaped forward. This one leap alone caused space and time to reverse. The area ten million miles away suddenly appeared beneath the seahorse.

Chapter 1164: Mysterious Girl

This leap from the seahorse crossed space instantaneously. Even Li Qiye sitting on it had to praise: “Incredible, this is an exceedingly rare divine horse.”

A gap was instantly created after this jump. Even though Ye Xiaoxiao’s vine used its top speed, it was unable to catch up.

The seahorse made it out of the frozen sea. It instantly dived into the vast ocean and submerged itself.

The veiled girl then hid their presence and traces. Without a doubt, she came prepared.

The seahorse leaped a second time under the surface of the water. This was even faster than the leap in the sky. The ocean was its playground, so it could cross from one sea to another. People would be speechless by its speed.

“Shameless demoness, you better not let me find you or I’ll show you. Stealing my man now, huh?” The chasing Ye Xiaoxiao had lost her target and angrily stomped her foot.

At a certain place in the Jade Sea, there was a towering cliff with large shoal rocks and deep underwater gullies. After water flowed into these gullies, one would hear a loud roar. The water fell straight down like waterfalls. Waves of currents were wrestling with the boulders down here. Of course, there were also circular channels around the cliff in the form of whirlpools...

This particular location was quite dangerous. Ordinary cultivators wouldn't want to come here.

A loud bang occurred below the steep cliff. The seahorse climbed up from the water to the top of the cliff. There were two people riding it. Of course, it was Li Qiye and the mysterious girl.

A panoramic view of this sea was available at the top of this cliff. The sea breeze was blowing with water vapor everywhere. The waves were galloping in this place with loud roars. The scene ahead was quite extraordinary and precarious in a supernatural yet marvelous manner.

Li Qiye was still at home while riding the seahorse and bathing in the sea breeze. His head was resting against a soft and plump chest. This was indeed a time to be cheerful.

The girl's temper took a turn for the worse when Li Qiye rested against her chest like this. She coldly said: "It is time for you to get off."

Li Qiye remained unmoved while his head was still in the middle of the valley. His faint grin told the story of his comfort and enjoyment. "Little girl, if you want something, you have to pay the price. You might be thinking that I am taking advantage of you, but the truth is that you are taking advantage of me. If I was unwilling, you wouldn't have been able to take me along."

This answer left the girl silent. It was arrogant and narcissistic to

an unreasonable level.

She jumped down from the seahorse and looked around at the sea nearby. Who knows what she was thinking.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye was still leisurely sitting on the seahorse while closing his eyes to enjoy the breeze. After a while, he murmured: “The sensation of the Heaven Spirit World really makes people feel attached with strong sentiments.”

She finally turned back to look at him with a cold glare: “You should talk about your circumstances now.”

He finally opened his eyes to look at her and smiled: “Little girl, if you want to negotiate with me, you should assume a friendly attitude. If I am in a good mood, maybe I can point you towards a clear road.”

The girl became annoyed and asked: “Are you always this narcissistic?”

“Narcissistic?” Li Qiye laughed and replied: “Little girl, I don’t know what narcissism is, and you haven’t seen when I truly act smug. When I feel cocky and put on airs, a little girl like you can only stand to the side since even gods and demons have to prostrate before me.”

She stared at him for a good while. If it wasn’t for his sober appearance, she would have thought that she had caught the

wrong person, a complete psycho.

“Don’t look at me like that.” Li Qiye lazily looked at the distant sea and said: “This is the best your Exquisite Valley can do? You’re able to carry a few bloodlines, but your vision for the overall situation is still completely lacking. The criticism from before still stands; your valley does not lack fresh blood, it is lacking a wise strategic foresight.”

The mysterious girl was surprised and immediately took one step back while staring at Li Qiye with a chilling glint flashing across her pupils.

She had hidden everything so that others wouldn’t recognize her background. Even a God-Monarch wouldn’t be able to see through her, so she was astonished that this seemingly ordinary man was able to divulge her origin instantly. She was completely confident in her concealing technique, but now, she felt an urge to kill.

“Again, there’s no need to look at me like that.” Li Qiye was basking in the sea breeze as he calmly stated: “If you have any disrespectful thoughts about me, it will be your own undoing. I am not someone who enjoys plucking flowers, but when necessary, I have no qualms about eliminating beautiful women.”

The girl was bewildered and couldn’t guess his background at this time. It was quite pitiful how little she knew about him.

After a while, she calmed down and stared at him: “You are Li Qiye?”

He ignored her and took a deep breath to say: “What a world this is.” He smacked his lips afterward before speaking: “Among all the people I’ve met, I am the only person called Li Qiye.”

“Can’t you be any less narcissistic?” The annoyed girl found this answer to be quite exasperating.

He raised his brows and said: “And then? You mean like this?”

The girl was a bit speechless. The situation had somehow reversed. The man ahead was the one in charge, so she tried to take back the initiative: “Do you have an imperial bloodline?”

Li Qiye was bored and reached out to brush her hair that was blowing wildly in the wind. However, she immediately made some distance between them and coldly said: “You better act properly!”

Li Qiye withdrew his hand and stared insipidly at her: “What does it matter? Is this bloodline worth talking about? After so many years, your Exquisite Valley still relies on bloodlines for business. Back and forth, back and forth, only to go around in a circle. A nice way to put it is cultivating talents while a more offensive way is to call it a brothel. Marrying excellent bloodlines to powerful lineages — not much different from a breeding stable.”

The mysterious girl quivered with rage after hearing this. This was simply humiliating her lineage; he was treating them as if they weren’t worth a single coin.

“You better start acting more respectful to me!” She shouted. If it wasn’t for her great self-restraint, she would have already taught this guy who didn’t know the immensity of the heaven and earth a lesson.

Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t say anything else, or maybe he was too lazy to do so.

She took a deep breath to calm down and then said in a serious manner while looking at him: “If you have an imperial bloodline, you should have a different plan. There are wider paths for you to take, battles await your advance.”

Li Qiye turned and slowly looked at her carefully. She didn’t know why she felt so uncertain when subjected to his glance like this. She felt as if she was being stripped completely by his insipid eyes. All of her concealing methods were useless.

“Have you seen enough?” She raised her head and coldly stared at him.

“A very good bag of skin.” He withdrew his gaze and flatly said: “Worthy of being from the Exquisite Valley.”

She felt like vomiting blood after hearing this. She wasn’t only from the valley; if she revealed her true identity, she could look down on the entire Heaven Spirit World. Countless men would want to marry her.

But according to Li Qiye, she was only a “good bag of skin.” If this could even be considered a compliment, it was the most disdainful one she had ever heard in her life.

A homicidal impulse arose from Li Qiye’s triggering words. She had to try quite hard to stabilize her emotions.

“Little woman, don’t you know?” Li Qiye lazily glanced at her and said: “If I wanted to stay as a son-in-law at Golden Isle, then you would have spoiled my business. If that was the case, then you would have to be my concubine to make up for it, no, you are still not enough to even be a bedwarming maid.”

She had managed to calm down a second ago only to be enraged once again. She gritted her teeth while trembling.

“Would you die if you have to stop boasting for a single second?” One could hear the sound of her teeth grinding together. If she didn’t want to maintain her ladylike demeanor, she would have ruthlessly bitten big chunks out of him.

Chapter 1165: Exquisite Valley Lord

Li Qiye laughed and replied: “Boast? I am simply stating a fact. The only reason you were able to bring me here is because I had no intention of becoming Golden Isle’s groom.”

She coldly grunted in response: “So you are saying that you are confident to the point of thinking that you can sweep through the world.”

“Sweeping through the world? No problem. For example, I could have helped the isle capture you. Just one hand would have been enough to suppress you.” Li Qiye smiled.

“You!” She wanted to vomit blood again. Even someone with more self-restraint would become angry after being repeatedly provoked by Li Qiye like this. Even a Buddha made out of mud would become angry at times.

She once again proved her great emotional control: “I won’t lower myself to your level.”

He smiled and ignored her while enjoying this familiar and unforgettable scent in the air with the blowing winds.

After a good while, she eventually asked him: “What sect are you from? Which Immortal Emperor is your ancestor?”

He glanced at her and chuckled: “You should have prepared

better if you wanted to take me away from Golden Isle. The valley has an amazing network, so is there something at the Heaven Spirit World that you can't find out? Why bother ask such a simple question?"

This girl truly had a good temper. The fact was that she really wanted to give him a good beating because of his attitude. She had never seen anyone like him.

However, she went quiet after hearing this response because she couldn't find out anything about him. Any lineage in the Heaven Spirit World had some ties with the Exquisite Valley; these powerful sects were all in-laws. The issue was that they found nothing on Li Qiye, as if he had just appeared out of nowhere overnight.

"Want to know something? Anyone would want to beat you up after seeing your infuriating attitude." She coldly said: "Has no one told you this before?"

"I know that very well." He chuckled: "Many people in this world want to beat me up. If you want to as well, then you will have to join the line. It might take another hundred thousand years though. Plus, I'm afraid someone who can take me down has yet to appear in this world."

The girl realized that this man couldn't deviate from his narcissistic tendency for even a sentence. Each one was arrogant and crazy. She didn't know what kind of person actually gave birth to this man.

She changed her posture and went straight back to business: “The imperial bloodline is incredible. If utilized correctly, you could rekindle your ancestors’ glory and rule the nine worlds... However, you should also know that this world is vast with hidden dragons and crouching tigers everywhere. You are not the only one with an imperial bloodline. Moreover, even this great bloodline couldn’t look down on other people with humble beginnings. For millions of years, countless ordinary experts triumphed over imperial bloodlines. Vagabonds and those who came from tiny sects could still accept the Heaven’s Will and become emperors.”

She spoke earnestly while calmly staring at him: “Brittle is trouble. Your imperial bloodline might be an advantage, but if you are blinded by your own arrogance, you will die one day. At that point, it will not only be a personal loss, but also the loss of the entire human race, especially the ones at the Heaven Spirit World!”

These were her heartfelt thoughts. She said them for Li Qiye’s own good.

After hearing this, he carefully looked at her again. This time, he finally took her seriously. She met his gaze sincerely and didn’t try to hide anything.

“Is that what you wanted to say?” He smiled and answered: “Really, don’t you think it’s funny? Your valley marries off brilliant bloodlines, both males and females, in order to build stability for your sect’s position as well as strengthening your influence...”

“Your progenitor’s thought in the beginning was to spread your bloodlines to the entire Heaven Spirit World so that all the lineages would have traces of the Exquisite Valley! From this, the valley would be able to influence this world’s overarching direction.” He chuckled at this point: “I have to admit, your progenitor was ambitious enough by carrying out this step!”

He continued on cheerfully: “The original idea was to spread your own valley’s bloodlines to the others, but now, you are paying attention to someone else’s bloodline and even want to compete for it against Golden Isle. Don’t you think this is quite interesting?”

She looked him in the eyes and said: “Our valley bears no malice against you. We don’t want to take your imperial bloodline for our own or do anything to you.”

She spoke in a candid manner: “The only reason I took you away from the isle was to tell you that you don’t need to be a stallion with your bloodline, there’s no need to submit to anyone. You can go even further and perhaps even reach for the Heaven’s Will. With your imperial bloodline, you have a greater chance of becoming an emperor than anyone else.”

Li Qiye chuckled and replied: “Is that right? How do you think I should go about doing that, or rather, how does your valley want to approach this? If I stay at your valley, will your sect marry several beauties with great bloodlines to me so that my legacy will be passed down? Or would your sect muster all of its effort to help me become an Immortal Emperor before betrothing more

concubines to me? After all, the bloodline of an Immortal Emperor would prosper in your valley this way.”

“I...” She didn’t know how to answer this. After all, the Exquisite Valley didn’t have the same tradition and mission like the other lineages.

Li Qiye’s gaze continued to pierce through her. She made no effort to hide, however, and let him look as much as he wanted in a very natural manner.

It seemed that he was looking at her naked for a while before he laughed: “How interesting, how interesting, even you don’t know what to do...”

“... Perhaps you took me out of Golden Isle to let my bloodline be passed down at your Exquisite Valley. With this bloodline, your sect will become even stronger in the future.”

She could only gently sigh. This ordinary man was not ordinary at all. It could even be said that he was quite frightening since nothing could escape his eyes.

Perhaps this was the charm and charisma of an imperial bloodline, its true potential.

Li Qiye smirked and revealed: “I know full well that you are the current master of the Exquisite Valley. However, even with your position, you do have enough authority there.”

Her expression greatly shifted as she took a step back and stared at Li Qiye in disbelief: “How do you know that I am the Exquisite Valley Lord?! Have you seen me before?”

However, she thought about it carefully and was certain that they had never met before. At the very least, she absolutely didn’t see him in the past.

“You are overthinking it.” He gently shook his head: “I haven’t met you before, but after seeing the imprint in your bloodline, I knew right away that you are the current lord. After all, an ancient bloodline is running through your veins.”

She felt a chill inside. This man was getting scarier and scarier.

Li Qiye leaned back with his hands on the seahorse and spoke freely: “Despite being the lord, you don’t have absolute power there. A few things require the ancestors to decide. I’m curious about what thoughts you have regarding one particular issue...”

She had to ask: “What issue?”

He elaborated: “If your ancestors don’t have the same ideas as you and only want to treat me as a stallion, to pass down my imperial bloodline at your valley, what are your thoughts on this?”

The girl pondered for a bit. Li Qiye’s line of thought was not unreasonable. Their valley collected the best bloodlines in this

world and wouldn't give up on an imperial bloodline from the human race.

“Or one day, if your ancestors want to betroth you to me or have you be my bed warmer, in short, a breeding tool, what do you think about this? Will you agree to be my woman too?” He said with a grin.

Chapter 1166: Kong Qinru

“I...” She could find a response at this moment.

It was just like he said, she couldn't decide certain things by herself. Even though she wanted to make a change, she would ultimately need the support of the entire sect.

And in his example, if the Exquisite Valley wanted to multiple Li Qiye's bloodline, perhaps they would even pick her as an incubator. As the lord of the valley, what would she do about it?

Li Qiye smiled at the mysterious girl and said: “What do you want from me? An imperial bloodline, or an Immortal Emperor as well as an imperial bloodline?”

She took a deep breath and replied: “You're thinking too much. As someone with an imperial bloodline from the human race, I only want you to go on an even wider path.”

“I got it now.” Li Qiye's eyes slightly flashed as he answered leisurely: “You taking me away from Golden Isle was not the intent of the Exquisite Valley but rather your own. It seems like you want to make a change, a reformation of the valley, or rather...”

“... You hope that the valley itself could use these bloodlines to make it even stronger, unlike the current valley that relies on the bloodlines to affect the overall situation of the Heaven Spirit World.” He laughed out loud at this point: “Little girl, this is not just a change. It is a complete revamp that shakes the entire

foundation of your Exquisite Valley!”

“You... how did you know?!” She was frightened at this point with a hint of killing intent in her eyes.

She had never revealed this to anyone. She was determined to change the valley’s ways, but it was a secret decision that only she knew about.

Li Qiye smiled: “Little girl, it seems like you want to kill me to keep this a secret. That’s not a smart idea. Watch it or I’ll end you instead.”

She took even more steps back. This man was much more terrifying than she imagined. She felt as if she was without a stitch of clothing in the face of his all-seeing gaze.

He turned towards the far ocean and flatly said: “It is a good intention, but it might not be successful and it isn’t necessarily suitable either.”

She couldn’t help but eventually ask: “Why is it not suitable?”

“Because this is the Heaven Spirit World.” He smiled: “If your valley becomes capable of using your own bloodlines, experts will come in waves. If it can even produce an Immortal Emperor, what do you think the other races will feel about this?”

With that, he turned back to her and said: “I’m afraid many

lineages would be more than willing to destroy your Exquisite Valley and divide your bloodlines.”

She contemplated for a moment before asking once more: “Are there no other ways?”

She didn’t know why, but she started asking for his opinions.

“That would depend on your own thoughts.” He slowly elaborated: “The best way is to move away from the Heaven Spirit World when the time is right. Your valley has both bloodlines and resources. It would be much stronger in any other location. After all, this is not the world for humans, the majority of the human race isn’t here.”

She thought about this relocation. It was not like she didn’t think about it before, but even if she were to make up her mind one day, the ancestors wouldn’t agree. After all, the Exquisite Valley had been here for countless years. It had built a solid foundation and was deeply rooted in the Heaven Spirit World.

If they were to move away, then that was tantamount to giving up on their foundation. All of the efforts from their past wise sages would drift away with the current.

He claimed: “If you want to reform, then you must have peerless courage and determination. Without this, it is all empty talk.”

After contemplating for a long time, she finally lifted her head to

look at him and earnestly said: “Are you really from the Heaven Spirit World?”

She finally realized the true terror of this man ahead. Even though she couldn't see his cultivation, he was unperturbed in the face of danger. This showed just how powerful he was. This person would be renowned in the world no matter the generation.

However, she had never heard of the name Li Qiye before. Thus, this gave room for a bolder idea. She suspected that this person was not someone from the Heaven Spirit World but an outsider instead.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Little girl, you are not stupid at all. It seems that you are indeed a bit gifted. That's why you are the valley lord.”

The confirmation from Li Qiye shocked her. She wanted to inquire further, but Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve: “Where I'm from doesn't matter. Just heed my words, never hinder my path. Out of consideration that you are a human, perhaps I will lend you a hand if possible. However, if you hinder my path, I will annihilate you all the same.”

She slowly spoke: “We don't have a conflict of interest.”

Li Qiye only smiled at this response. Eventually, the girl removed her method of concealment to reveal her true form. She bowed before Li Qiye: “My name is Kong Qinru. I didn't know that Young Noble Li was a master, so I have offended you.”

She sincerely revealed her intention in order to become friends with Li Qiye. He slowly walked forward. This girl before him was truly beautiful. She was on the same level as Li Shuangyan and the other girls. Of course, she still had a ways to go compared to Bu Lianxiang or Ming Yexue.

Her hair was like a waterfall — soft and elegant. Her eyes were as bright as pearls. They would shine in the dark and reveal her wisdom.

Her figure could be described as perfect due to its slim size and gracefulness. The eyes of all spectators would light up before her presence. Her soft breasts were towering and plump while she herself was tall and slender. It was truly difficult to criticize her figure.

Adorning herself with a green garment made her look like a piece of exquisite jade in the blue sea. She was wise and farsighted with a gentle beauty.

Li Qiye stopped looking and smiled: “Descendants from the Kong Clan are always decent. It seems like they found a good successor in you.”

She wanted to say something else, but only a sigh came out. Li Qiye looked towards the horizon and said: “Whether you have something to ask me or not, you need to do something first.”

She was in a difficult position because she had witnessed this

man's overbearing nature. He was not requesting her service but telling her to do it. It was strange because she was the leader of a great power. Even the Golden Isle Lord wouldn't dare to command her.

She took a deep breath and said: "What does Young Noble Li need me to do?"

"Find someone for me." He slowly said: "This shouldn't be hard given the great network that the Exquisite Valley has at the Heaven Spirit World, right?"

She gently sighed in secrecy. At this moment, she understood that it was not her who captured him. From the very beginning, he had already come up his plan, so he decided to go with her.

She trembled a bit. It seemed that everything was within his grasp; even this vast world was no exception. She didn't know why she had this feeling. In short, after their short interaction, she became afraid of this man.

She nodded her head: "As long as the person you are trying to find is still at the Heaven Spirit World, we will try our best to uncover some clues. It will only be a matter of time."

Li Qiye also nodded in a carefree manner: "I'm confident in your valley. If the Exquisite Valley can't find someone in this world, other lineages would find it even more difficult."

After saying this, he stared at her and smiled: “What are your plans after capturing me? Where is your path of retreat?”

She had to answer: “My destination is Peacock Land.”

Li Qiye laughed out loud and said: “It seems like you didn’t plan to bring me back to the valley and instead wanted to hide me away.”

She didn’t know whether to laugh or cry after hearing this. He was right, she really didn’t plan to bring him back to the Exquisite Valley.

The valley was located at the Abyss Sea, so there was no need for them to go to Peacock Land if she wanted to bring him back to the valley.

Chapter 1167: Humans Are Only Sojourners

Li Qiye smilingly said: “Then let’s go to the land of the peacocks, it will be our first stop.”

She didn’t say anything else and only pulled the reins of the seahorse to lead the way. Her actions were quite natural without any hint of suddenness.

At this moment, she herself was startled at the lack of awkwardness. She was the lord of the Exquisite Valley, a great figure at the Heaven Spirit World, but today, she was acting as a mere guide. No one would believe it even if they were to see this scene.

“Little girl, come on up, stop dawdling around.” Li Qiye then patted the seahorse.

Kong Qinru took a quick look at him. She didn’t say anything before jumping up and gracefully sat behind him.

Li Qiye once again used her chest as a pillow. His head sank into her valley as he spoke: “Go.”

She was immediately infuriated. She thought that he was acting like a gentleman and didn’t want her to walk on the long journey. However, it turns out that he only wanted to use her as a pillow!

She had the impulse to kick this man off the horse, but after what

happened earlier, all of her anger went away. This was strange because if it was any other man, she would definitely kick him off to the horizon if they took advantage of her in such a frivolous manner. However, this man ahead looked natural and carefree as if this was no big deal. Nothing could ever faze him and he would just do as he pleased. There were no sexual thoughts or perverted intentions in his actions.

Ultimately, resting on a beauty seemed to be a natural course for this man. It didn't matter if the girl was a goddess or a fairy from the heavens.

In the end, Kong Qinru could only wryly smile and urge the seahorse forward.

This seahorse was superb with incredible speed and little flaws. It was even more uncatchable in the sea since it came and went as fast as lightning.

“Earlier, why did you say that the Heaven Spirit World is not a home for humans?” She looked at him leaning against her chest and asked the question that had been looming in her mind.

“This had never been a suitable place for residence.” He said: “Even though the nine worlds are sealed right now, humans should be staying at other places. For millions of years, many invincible generations of humans have appeared in the Heaven Spirit World. However, the majority of them didn't establish sects here; they would rather travel away from this world.”

“The truth is that I do admire the courage and determination of your valley’s progenitor. Building a lineage here must have required great courage.” He blinked and looked at her at this point.

“Why is it unsuitable?” In her opinion, there was no problem with the Heaven Spirit World. At the very least, she really liked living here.

“There are many reasons.” He flatly said: “For example, the human race is born to live on vast lands; the Heaven Spirit World, on the other hand, is full of oceans — this is not in accordance to human nature. Another reason is that the human race has been weak for a very long time in this world. We’re far from being comparable to the charming spirits, sea demons, and treants.”

“These are not the root cause, right?” She could pick out a few clues from Li Qiye’s words and said: “If an Immortal Emperor really wanted to build a lineage in this world, he could shift the earth and oceans. There would be no need to live at sea.”

“Good observation.” He closed his eyes and continued: “Yes, they are not the main reasons. The point is that this world is not the world for us humans. In the end, we will still have to leave for this is not where our root is.”

“Why specifically must we leave?” She consulted respectfully while feeling that her knowledge was quite shallow compared to this man despite being the valley lord.

“Because of the root of this world.” Li Qiye lightly stated: “If you

wish to understand it, you would have to trace back to very ancient and unrecalable matters.”

He went on: “To keep it simple, why is it that only this world has treants and sea demons? Why can’t they leave the Heaven Spirit World? Even if they did, they would have to return eventually...

“Let’s take treefathers as an example. Once someone is strong enough to be at their level, they would be comparable to Immortal Emperors, but eventually, they would still come back here to take root to become a tree that shoulders the world and protects their descendants. For what reason is this?”

While Li Qiye was speaking, Kong Qinru was in deep thought. This had always been a part of life in the Heaven Spirit World. No one would give it a second thought, but now, it seemed to have some other intriguing implications.

“In the end, this world is not ours. It is a world for treants and sea demons.” He said: “Humans are only passing travelers in this world. The majority would leave, only a few remain.”

She asked: “Then what about charming spirits? Why can they stand strong here?”

The strength of the Charming Spirit Race was even mightier than the treants and sea demons. They took root in this world without being affected or weakened at all.

“Charming spirits?” He smiled and said: “They are the favored children of the heavens. Humans can’t compare to charming spirits in many aspects. At least, this is what people say. Moreover, they have secret resources and reserves in this world that are beyond your imagination.”

“I don’t quite understand.” She inquired: “Though I have never left this world, there are records stating that humans can reproduce and take root anywhere.”

“That’s true.” He smilingly replied: “If charming spirits are the favored children of the heavens, then humans are the thorns in the heavens’ heart. They would take root everywhere they go and nail themselves down. You can imagine humans as locusts. Moreover, their reproductive capabilities are second to none.”

With that, he opened his eyes again and said: “Earlier, I wasn’t saying that humans can’t take root here in the Heaven Spirit World. Not having a continent and being few in number aren’t real problems. If they really wanted to make this their home, no one would be able to stop them.”

“But ultimately, the answer is still the same!” He paused with a sigh at this point: “This is ultimately not a home for humans. Those who have been to the other eight worlds, even if they weren’t very powerful, would still instinctively not want to stay in this world...

“At the end of the day, only humans incapable of leaving or those who don’t want to leave would take root here. Of course, there are also those determined to grow strong in this world like your

Exquisite Valley. As for the powerful Immortal Emperors, they were able to see through a few things and didn't want to take root here."

"Why is that?" She inferred a few things from the conversation and felt quite inquisitive: "What secrets are hidden in the Heaven Spirit World? Are there more stories behind it?"

Li Qiye stared at her for a good while before slowly starting again: "You won't be able to understand a few things for it is beyond your level of comprehension. Knowing too much is not necessarily a good thing sometimes. For example, the current you feels that the Heaven Spirit World is a great place for a home. Isn't this a wonderful and happy feeling?"

"My lack of knowledge does not deter my willingness to learn." She sincerely said: "You can give me guidance, after all."

He raised his head to take a serious look at her beautiful face before smiling and resting back on her soft and plump breasts. While appreciating the sweet fragrance, he said: "What will you do after knowing, can you change things? This is something that even Immortal Emperors can't accomplish, let alone you. If you want to change, it is very simple. Move the Exquisite Valley out of the Heaven Spirit World. That will be your change."

She asked: "What about the other humans here?"

"Look at the sky." Li Qiye leisurely said: "As long as it is a place with life, there will be humans. Not to mention that you are only a

cultivator, even if you were creation itself, you still wouldn't be able to control everything. Humans scatter all around the nine heavens and ten earths, will you be able to manage all of them?" He smiled: "If you really are thinking about the human race, then move out. As you can imagine, your valley spreads many bloodlines and even more humans in this world. Plus, a large number of humans are staying in this world because of your valley as well."

Kong Qinru's heart felt quite heavy after hearing this. Her valley was the most powerful human lineage in this world. As its lord, she had a great responsibility. Whether intentional or not, she felt that, in a way, the valley had to shoulder the human race...

"There is no savior in this world. Even if there was one, they could save the world, but not every single person in it." He slowly said: "If you want to make a difference, then don't focus on the small stuff and instead the overarching situation."

"I'll keep that in mind." She took a deep breath and solemnly nodded. His words made her even more determined to make a change.

Li Qiye smiled and rested once more. He had said everything he needed to. As for the future, let it be up to her own fortune.

Chapter 1168: Peacock Land

The human race was one of the rare races in the Heaven Spirit World. Outside of scattering all over the place, they had two famous locations.

The first was the renowned Exquisite Valley. It was one of the top lineages, so there were many human mortals and cultivators there...

Of course, the excellent bloodlines of the humans all came from this valley. If one couldn't find a suitable bloodline here, they would be hard-pressed to find one somewhere else.

The other base for the human race was Peacock Land. However, the land of the peacocks was in great decline in the present day. It could no longer be compared to the Exquisite Valley. Legend states that during its prosperous generation, it was even greater than the valley.

It was a landmass that spanned tens of thousands of miles. This was not much if placed in the other eight worlds; it could only be considered the territory of a nation at best.

However, in this world of boundless oceans, this vast landmass was already considered a great continent.

One could see rolling hills and green trees everywhere in this place, making it look full of life. Smoke from kitchens was lingering in the air with roosters crowing and dogs barking

continuously.

This was a land full of legends. In the past, it didn't have the name Peacock Land. Later on, it was changed due to the Peacock Treefather. It is said that a long time ago, this place was a very small landmass with only around one hundred miles of territory. It was not so much a continent as it was a large island.

Later on, the Peacock Treefather met his maker in this place and returned to the origin. He took root and refined the nearby sea region and turned it into a continent.

From then on, Peacock Land became prosperous due to the protection of the treefather. Humans were able to live here peacefully from one generation to another.

In principle, the treefather was still part of the Treant Race. He should have opened a new land for the treants, but he chose to do so for the humans.

There was a legend about this story. When he was younger, he was a wandering treant that was abandoned by his parents. He eventually wandered to this island and was adopted by a nice couple who then raised him. He grew up here where human cultivators taught him how to cultivate. They opened the doors for him to this world of cultivation, a door that he had never seen before.

As he became stronger and stronger, he traveled the Heaven Spirit World and even the nine worlds. Ultimately, he still viewed

this landmass as his home despite being a treant for he considered himself a human.

Eventually, he met his end. Even though he couldn't pass down his legacy, he still took root here to make Peacock Land even larger for the other humans, a land of contentment.

“Splash!” The seahorse leaped out of the ocean and stepped onto Peacock Land.

Li Qiye was still resting with his eyes closed on Kong Qinru's chest as if all in this world had nothing to do with him.

Kong Qinru was hiding her body again so that no one could tell that she was the Exquisite Valley Lord. If Golden Isle knew that she was the one who seized their groom, things would be quite problematic.

She slowly said as the seahorse landed: “We've arrived at Peacock Land.”

While taking in the fragrance of the earth and the breath of the continent, the scent of the flowers and trees, Li Qiye took several deep breaths and opened his eyes.

With majestic hills and scary peaks that towered all the way to the skydome like giants, this was a scene of greenery as far as the eyes could see. It gave spectators an incredible feeling.

Others wouldn't notice anything, but this Peacock Land looked different in Li Qiye's eyes. He was seeing the approaching twilight.

Despite its lush and vibrant appearance, Li Qiye saw a huge old tree. Even though its branches and leaves were still fresh, the body itself was aged and near death.

Li Qiye quietly spoke while looking at this land: "Peacock Land... The Peacock Treefather will wither eventually, and that time is not far from now."

Kong Qinru felt quite sad inside after hearing this.

A treefather would take root in the earth to protect their descendants. This was the difference between an Immortal Emperor and a treefather. Immortal Emperors would eventually leave, but not treefathers as they would stay for generations. Nevertheless, this didn't mean that they were everlasting. Even these divine trees would wither one day.

Returning to the earth was another method of living longer, but it was still not immortality. Of course, this period was still extremely long relative to the lifespan of mortals and even cultivators.

Li Qiye looked at Kong Qinru and said: "In the future, humans at the Heaven Spirit World will only have one base left."

She went quiet for a moment before helplessly speaking: "Maybe

in two or three generations, the treefather will die and Peacock Land will collapse with him.”

When a treefather died after taking root, a large part of the earth refined by him would also fall.

For example, at least Peacock Land would be destroyed after the treefather’s death. Moreover, the land would become increasingly barren until it became no longer habitable.

Li Qiye nonchalantly commented: “When it is time to leave, one has to leave.”

She could only sigh gently. In fact, this had been the trend for a while now; many cultivators began to migrate.

Remember that this place used to be extremely prosperous with several powerful human lineages due to the treefather’s protection. However, as the tree grew older, these powerful lineages began to decline and they moved away from this land. They didn’t move out of the Heaven Spirit World and instead to other territories. Some even chose to become tributaries to the other three great races.

In fact, many cultivators here understood that there was not much time left for the Peacock Treefather. Those who were able to move away have already left. Only mortals or weaker cultivators would stay here, or those who had a deep attachment to this land.

The seahorse slowly moved forward. Some villages began to appear among the rolling mountains. The smokes that wafted from them made it seem like this was a land of paradise. However, there was no escaping the signs of withering. It seemed that the young and robust have started moving away. Only orphans, widows, and the old were left in these villages.

The truth was not far from this depressing description. The capable have all left, leaving behind the mortals and those who couldn't make it.

Even though the Exquisite Valley also had a separate branch in this place, Kong Qinru couldn't conveniently come here at this moment. Of course, a cunning rabbit has three nests. There was more than just one stopping point that belonged to the valley here.

She brought Li Qiye into a house with a fully enclosed courtyard in a small village. The owner here was a disciple from the valley disguising as a vagabond.

“Do you have any plans, Young Noble Li?” She asked after preparing a place for him.

“If possible, I will wait for your message.” He looked at her and said: “Once you find the whereabouts of the person I'm looking for, I will set off immediately.”

She wanted to say something but decided to swallow her words. She nodded instead: “Don't worry, Young Noble. I have sent the order. As long as we find the person you are looking for, we'll

receive updates right away.”

Li Qiye nodded back. He was very confident in the valley’s ability in finding Su Yonghuang.

“I will go say goodbye to the Peacock Treefather tomorrow.” He said as she was leaving.

She paused and turned around to say: “I’ll go with you to the Peacock Peak tomorrow.”

“Very well.” He replied: “Prepare some incense for me. There might not be another chance in the future after this offering.”

Her heart sank again as she gently sighed: “I will.”

Regardless of whether she was willing to accept this fact or not, the Peacock Treefather was indeed wilting away.

Chapter 1169: Peacock Tree

The Peacock Peak was where the treefather died and turned into a gigantic tree.

It was tall enough to pierce into the white clouds and blue sky, a giant standing and protecting everything on this continent.

Not just anyone could come here. Only cultivators at a particular level who could withstand the power of the peak could climb up.

One would see that the top of the peak was completely flat like a small martial ground. The stone surface seemed to have been polished.

In the past, countless treant disciples came here and meditated when the Peacock Tree was still exuberant with life. They wanted to rely on the tree to understand the grand dao.

Countless people came and went, leaving their footsteps behind which was why the stone surface here was so shiny.

Li Qiye came very early to perform an offering ceremony for the Peacock Tree. In fact, this was him sending away one of the great treefathers to the end of his journey.

The withering of the tree was only a matter of time. Everything would turn into ashes afterward. The world would lose the remaining traces of the treefather.

When they arrived, some people could be seen already worshipping the tree.

The tree itself was not very tall, only around three meters tall. The body was old with hardened bark. The cracked bark resembled dragon scales. Although they had lost their luster, one could still feel their toughness.

There weren't that many branches left, only around three or five with very few leaves growing on them. Although these leaves were still quite green, they gave off a sense of withering.

Plumes of smoke were curling before the tree. People were lighting incense in order to worship him.

There was a young man wearing a hemp robe. Even though he didn't emit a powerful aura, a very majestic power emerged when he blinked.

His whole body exuded the breath of vegetation, making others want to approach him. He was clearly from the Treant Race. Three old men stood behind him, all with vast blood energies. One didn't even need to look at them to know that they were experts. It was easy to infer the young man's status if he had these three old men as his company.

In fact, people besides Li Qiye and this young man came to offer their respects from all over. Everyone knew that in the near future, the Peacock Tree will die.

The human cultivators in this world were grateful for his protection for so many generations. This land gave them a place to live and work.

After offering the incense, the young man stood there and watched the smoke drift away without saying anything.

Once Li Qiye and Kong Qinru made it to the top, the young man finally said: "Let's go."

With that, he and the old men left. As he was walking by, he bowed to greet Li Qiye and Kong Qinru in a very polite manner.

Kong Qinru nodded back to reciprocate the gesture while Li Qiye didn't say anything, he only gave a quick glance.

After that group left, Li Qiye flatly said: "A good pair of wood pupils, it has been awhile since someone like that showed up from the treants."

She was surprised to hear him say this. With a single glance, Li Qiye could discern the person's secret — this was a bit too terrifying.

She stated: "He is one of the descendants of the Heavenvine Citadel, Teng Jiwen. He has reached Virtuous Paragon a few years earlier, a very promising youth."

Because of her concealment, the youth from earlier couldn't recognize her. However, since she was the valley lord, she recognized many famous cultivators in this world.

Li Qiye didn't say anything else and stepped before the Peacock Tree. He placed down his incense sticks and stared at the withering tree in silence for a long time.

Eventually, he gently sighed and said: "Eternal life is too far away. Even a treefather cannot escape death and has to return to the origin in the end."

With that, he lit up the incense and bowed towards the Peacock Tree. In his eyes, the treefather was still an amazing existence. Moreover, he had protected the humans for many generations.

Kong Qinru did the same with reverence straight from the heart.

After the ceremony, Li Qiye gently touched the tree's hard bark. With a buzz, his hand suddenly disappeared into the tree like passing through a portal of water.

He closed his eyes and stood there as if he was sleeping. After a while, he withdrew his hand and concluded: "The Peacock Tree will die within fifty thousand years."

This was shocking to Kong Qinru. She thought the treefather could still hold on for another two or three generations, so this was much faster than she imagined.

She murmured in a daze: “Only fifty thousand years?”

Li Qiye spoke emotionlessly: “To be exact, it could struggle on for another forty thousand years. The rest of the time will depend on how much it is attached to this land. Regardless, that day will come when it has to let everything go.”

Suddenly, she became quite dejected. She felt helpless because there was nothing she could do to change the situation. She could only sigh and say: “Even treefathers will die one day. No one can save them. I just hope that it will come slowly.”

“Who told you that?” Li Qiye chuckled under the tree: “It depends on the person. Going against the heavens to replenish one’s longevity is not an impossible matter.”

Such words were like bells ringing in her mind. She immediately looked up to stare at the nonchalant fella in disbelief while trembling.

“You, you mean to say that you can replenish the Peacock Tree’s lifespan?” She nervously stared at him while shaking despite being a great valley lord.

He glanced at her then back at the tree and lightly said: “Even though these treefathers take root in the earth, they are still similar to cultivators with a chance to replenish their life. This applies to the Peacock Tree. Moreover, it has never undergone this procedure before, so the probability of success is even higher.”

“Are, are you telling the truth?” She suddenly became spirited with hope filling her heart while looking at Li Qiye with excitement.

“My words are a hundred times more precious than pearls.” He looked at her and stated: “Besides, this is common knowledge. Going against the heavens to replenish life is the most basic technique of an alchemist.”

If any alchemist was present, they would be vomiting blood in anger or be struck with such great insecurity that they would feel the urge to commit suicide by slamming into tofu.

Life replenishment was a very lofty goal for alchemists, only Legendary Alchemists were able to accomplish this. Moreover, success was not certain either. But now, according to Li Qiye, this was the most basic of means.

“So you are saying that you can replenish the tree’s life?” Her eyes were bright as she tried to get confirmation.

“It’s possible.” He said while looking at the tree: “Since it has never done this before, the first life replenishment has very good odds and the length will be quite long. For an existence like this tree, living for another eight or ten generations would not be a problem if the procedure is successful.”

She exclaimed: “Then what are you waiting for? Hurry and replenish its life!”

He slowly looked back at her and said: “Why should I replenish its life? It is not my relative or an elder.”

“You are a human!” She stated: “The tree has protected the human race so long that it’s only right for you to reciprocate the kindness.”

Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head in response: “Little girl, why do you think so? There have been many people who have accomplished many things for the human race. Does that mean that I have to do something for them or their descendants as well? Countless wise sages and invincible existences have fought for the survival of the human race; compared to them, the things that the Peacock Tree have done can’t reach the apex.”

“You...” Her face turned red; she didn’t know what to say in this situation.

He glanced over her direction and flatly said: “There are choices in everything and everyone. For example, the old wise sages pushing the human race forward or the Peacock Tree taking root in this place; they have made their decision. They walked on this path not to ask for repayment from the future generations. They simply walked on their own path with great responsibility and perseverance, staying true to their pursuit to the very end.”

Chapter 1170: Fate Of The Peacock Tree

Kong Qinru pondered Li Qiye's words. Setting other matters aside, she didn't really know him. Plus, he was not someone from the Heaven Spirit World, so why should he replenish the treefather's life?

Li Qiye continued on with a smile: "There are too many injustices in this world; too many powerless thoughts; too many things that people don't want to do. Even a savior cannot save everyone in this world or satisfy all of their prayers. Moreover, I am not a savior or a charitable person."

She asked: "How do we replenish its life?"

Li Qiye shook his head and said: "It is useless even if you know because only I can do it. Plus, the price is not small."

She took a deep breath and solemnly asked him: "What do you want before you are willing to replenish its life?"

He smilingly shook his head: "Little girl, you can't offer what I want."

She breathed deeply once more before offering: "If you are willing to do so and if it is a success, you can have whatever you want, including marrying me and having a great position in the Exquisite Valley!"

Her eyes directly met his gaze in a natural manner with great persistence and earnest.

He noticed her stare and laughed: “I’m not looking down on you, but I need to make things clear. Let’s not talk about treasures, just the proposed marriage and entrance to the Exquisite Valley alone...

“... You are thinking too highly of yourself. First of all, I have an imperial bloodline; countless women in this world want to be my dao companion. For example, the little brat from Golden Isle. Which aspects do you have that are better than her? Beauty, intelligence, sexiness, or maybe talents?

“... Now take a step back and pretend that I don’t have an imperial bloodline. Marrying you would be my loss. It would be you taking advantage of me, not the other way around. The truth is always grating to the ears, but you are not qualified to be my wife.” He concluded with a smile.

Such words left Kong Qinru speechless. As the Exquisite Valley Master, she wasn’t only enchantingly beautiful, she also possessed an excellent bloodline. Countless others at the Heaven Spirit World wanted to marry her. As long as she gave the okay, even the descendant of the most powerful sect would be willing to do so.

But now, this ordinary person that couldn’t be more ordinary considered these things that she had been so proud of as things not worth mentioning.

Her demeanor eventually dimmed as she helplessly said: “I have

overestimated myself. You are right, how can it be that easy to replenish a treefather's life. The price must be too great."

"You misunderstood me." He smiled and said: "It is not that I want something outrageous, it's just that the process itself is costly."

She didn't know what to say for this was beyond the scope of her abilities. It was just that Li Qiye gave her hope just now.

Li Qiye continued: "Why are you so insistent on this? In fact, this doesn't affect you too much and, to be frank, if Peacock Land ceases to exist, it would make the Exquisite Valley become even more precious, don't you think?"

She looked into his eyes and said: "True, this has no effect on the valley, but it is a different story for the inhabitants here. Without their home, they would no longer have a place in this world."

"For many people, there were only two places at the Heaven Spirit World; the mainland of the Exquisite Valley and Peacock Land. Without one of them, it would be one less home for the human race and half of their hope extinguished. Moreover, countless creatures would perish with the withering of the treefather." She sighed helplessly at this point.

This was not to say that she was overly humane and kind or someone who was too weak to accept death. It was because, as the Exquisite Valley Lord, the most influential person of the human race, she wanted to work for the welfare of her race. She wished

for peace and hope for the rest of her kin.

“Life and death are part of nature.” Li Qiye faintly smiled: “After millions of years, how many people have died in wars? And how many people are currently living in Peacock Land? I’m sure this number is less than one-tenth of the number of people who will die in a battle for the Heaven’s Will. Thus, even if this place collapses, it is insignificant in the grand scheme of things for the human race.”

“I know that.” She answered: “But it is another beacon of hope for the humans here.”

“Hope?” He was amused by this notion: “This hope is a cause for their demise, the death of their future, the death of their descendants. Because Peacock Land and Exquisite Valley are there, more humans will decide to stay at the Heaven Spirit World. Without these two, this amount would be quite negligible.”

She contemplated for a moment before replying: “Maybe you are right, my vision is quite short-sighted. I only want to do a few things for the future generations. A little glimmer of hope is the only thing I can offer to our kind here, the hope of a peaceful and happy life.”

Li Qiye looked at her in silence for a while before gently shaking his head: “Little girl, this world is not meant for a peaceful and happy life, at least, not for humans. One day, you will understand why it is not their home, but maybe you won’t be able to wait until that time.”

Kong Qinru replied: “So what if you are right? For experts and real heaven-defying existences, they could leave the moment the nine worlds are connected again. But what about the others? What about the mortals? Even if they wanted to leave, there is nothing they can do.”

Li Qiye flatly answered: “Like I said before, if you’re really thinking for the sake of the human race, the wisest thing to do is to prepare to move the Exquisite Valley out of the Heaven Spirit World. The nine worlds are vast, there will be a new foothold for you somewhere.”

She weakly said: “Maybe, but even if I wanted to, it won’t be that easy. Three-meter deep snow isn’t formed overnight.”

Eventually, Li Qiye shook his head and commented: “It seems that I have grown old. I am not a soft-hearted person for my will is made of steel. However, one’s heart will soften with time.”

After hearing this, Kong Qinru was slightly surprised. After calming down, she happily blurted: “You mean...”

He glanced at her and insipidly said: “Since I’m already here, so be it. I suppose I have to give it a try. As for the fate of the human race in this world, I’ll have to leave it to them, or you.”

She couldn’t believe her own ears and took a deep breath to confirm: “Are, are you serious?”

“Do I need to lie to you?” He answered: “However, you need to be mentally prepared. Defying the heavens for life replenishment is not easy. The price will be quite heavy!”

She solemnly responded while bracing herself: “What do you need? As long as it is within our valley’s capabilities, I will definitely get it for you.”

He shook his head: “The price I’m referring to isn’t treasures or spirit pills or even alchemy ingredients. In short, it isn’t something you or your valley can afford.”

“Umm...” She was at a loss for words.

He waved his sleeve dismissively: “Such an exchange is required at times. There’s no need to think about it any further. As for some other items that I require, you will be responsible for them.”

She nodded with great austerity: “Rest assured, just let me know about whatever you need. I will not let you down!”

A fire of hope was ignited within her. If the Peacock Tree could live longer, the other resting place of the human race would continue to exist. With this home, people would continue to have hope.

He didn’t say anything else and opened his fate palace. An old tree emerged. There were several green branches growing from it

with fresh leaves swaying in the breeze.

Kong Qinru didn't know what this old tree was, but she felt that this inconspicuous-looking tree was not so simple.

It wasn't strange that she didn't know about it; it wasn't due to a lack of knowledge on her part. In fact, outside of Li Qiye's group, those who had seen this tree simply didn't exist. The world had forgotten about its name, let alone recognize its appearance.

At this time, the green branches of the Myriad Age Tree slowly stretched out like tiny serpents. They drilled into the Peacock Tree in an instant.

Chapter 1171: Replenishing Life For The Peacock Tree

These slightly green branches continued to stretch even further while inside the tree as if it was going through the Peacock Tree's trunk all the way underground to reach every root.

“This is...” Kong Qinru was slightly stunned to see this. Although a treefather would die and turn into these trees, no one could violate or shake them. Even an Immortal Emperor would have trouble doing so.

But now, Li Qiye could control these branches to drill into the treefather's body before going underground. Any spectator would be dumbfounded by this scene.

Li Qiye closed his eyes. He wanted to use the Myriad Age Tree to check the Peacock Tree. As a treefather, the Peacock Tree was an untouchable existence. However, the Myriad Age Tree was different. It was something nearly comparable to the Longevity Grass.

Moreover, Li Qiye had no malicious intents. He was only checking the Peacock Tree in order to have a comprehensive diagnosis.

After a good while, he opened his eyes and told Kong Qinru: “Let's go.”

With that, he reached out with his finger. With a buzz, a door was opened. Before she could calm down, he dragged her to a different location.

They reappeared at the bottom of the sea in front of an underwater cliff. This was the bottom of Peacock Land.

She was shocked once again; Li Qiye could freely travel through space while locking onto a coordinate with incredible precision — this was the most frightening and heaven-defying method of travel she had seen yet.

At this second, she didn't know how powerful Li Qiye was for his techniques have exceeded her comprehension.

“Hum—” Li Qiye placed his palm on the cliff, allowing dao lines to emerge to form abstruse runes. Even a genius like Kong Qinru couldn't understand them in the slightest.

The emerging runes eventually intertwined to form a portal. Li Qiye pulled the dazed girl into a different realm once again.

She turned a bit silly while standing in this realm. The space inside was vast as if it was an entirely different world. One wouldn't be able to see the end of this space.

Gigantic dragons were dancing in the sky with all kinds of shapes and forms. Some were lying there, others were descending while more were coiling about... However, upon a closer inspection, it

turned out that these beings were not dragons but gigantic roots. These were the Peacock Tree's roots.

However, it was much more majestic than how it was described because they were simply too large. A few of them shouldered hills of accumulated mud while other roots even had waterfalls running down from them.

When one looked up high, many bright flashing stars in the sky could be seen.

"These are the Peacock Tree's roots?" She was quite shaken to see this.

The treefather had turned into a tree after death, but this world was completely inaccessible to outsiders. It was because these roots were the foundation of the treefather. If they were damaged, the land created by the tree would be damaged as well.

"Don't be fooled by its magicalness." Li Qiye lightly said: "This place is at its end and extremely close to exhaustion. Otherwise, it would be even more magnificent."

This reminder made her look twice. At this time, she noticed that these thick and huge roots were quite close to death while some had withered already. If all of them did, then the tree itself would die.

Li Qiye walked around these roots and observed every one of

them. If necessary, he must cut off a lot of these roots. She followed right behind him as he was making the assessment. She wasn't an alchemist and didn't understand the treefather's situation after returning to the earth. The only thing she could do was follow him and assist if asked.

After a careful observation, he finally stood before the main root that was as large as a great mountain.

At this time, he opened his fate palace to release the Ancestor Ginseng, the Immortal Injury Peony, the twelve transformations Dragon Silkworm Soulgrass...

After seeing something like a true dragon soaring and howling in the sky, Kong Qinru stammered: "Twelve... twelve... transformations soulgrass..."

The dragon soulgrass had been cultivating nonstop. More importantly, it had absorbed many good items, such as the roots of the phoenix ginseng as well as the Pinnacle Lifewater!

She was shocked to see all of these immortal grasses. No, they were existences even above immortal grasses. The Exquisite Valley didn't have any of them. In fact, in the entire Heaven Spirit World, very few lineages could have immortal level medicines, let alone something even greater.

"These things, these things..." She couldn't form a coherent thought at this moment.

She finally understood what Li Qiye meant earlier about how she couldn't provide the things he truly wanted. There was no need to think any further, she had to admit that few would be able to provide what he truly wanted in this world.

He had this many existences even above the immortal level, what other things could actually tempt him?

Something like a twelve transformations soulgrass was unheard of, let alone seeing one in person.

“Alright, listen up.” Li Qiye clapped while looking at the happy grasses: “Here is a mission for everyone. Go into the main root and inject some essence and vitality into it.”

“Incredible, this is the main root of a treefather.” Even the Ancestor Ginseng commented emotionally while looking at the enormous main root. It took a good look and continued: “This treefather is dying for sure. It won't be easy to save it without spending a massive amount of essence.”

Li Qiye commanded: “Don't worry, you won't do it for nothing. Now try your best.”

“We were waiting to hear those words.” The ginseng cheered after hearing this. All of them quickly plunged into the main root.

Even for them, replenishing the treefather's life was very difficult due to the great price. However, Li Qiye had more

Pinnacle Lifewater — this was a great tonic for them.

“Can they do it?” Kong Qinru asked.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Life replenishment for a treefather isn’t so simple. This is only the beginning. We are recovering some of its vitality before carrying out the more drastic measures.”

He glanced over the other thick roots and said: “Wait until it is a bit stronger. We will have to sever a lot of these roots or else it will die.”

“Can it be done?” She was quite worried. Cutting these roots would be a great loss for the tree, so of course it would be met with resistance. Even though the Peacock Tree was on the verge of death, it was still an existence that could easily kill Godkings even in this state.

“It will agree.” Li Qiye said: “If we don’t chop off a large number of roots, this would consume more vitality and essence since all of them require these resources for replenishment. Although it won’t be easy for it in the beginning after losing these roots, it will be much easier after this hurdle, and I’ll save a huge amount of resources as well.”

She asked: “How much time will this process take?”

“It will take some time. You need to be ready for when I ask for

help from your valley about certain things.” He answered apathetically.

For Li Qiye, this was not a challenging matter. After all, he had even revived the Myriad Age Tree before, let alone a simple life replenishment.

However, there were two different methods for this process. If Li Qiye wanted to finish things quickly, he would use the Pinnacle Lifewater. That would save him a lot of time and alchemy ingredients.

However, this water was too precious to him. He would only use an extremely minuscule amount to act as the leading ingredient for the Peacock Tree. The true life replenishment would come from the other medicines using a different method.

The truth was that Li Qiye wouldn't be the only one with this train of thought. Even if Immortal Emperors had some Pinnacle Lifewater, they wouldn't necessarily use it to replenish someone else's life. It was too precious, much more precious than any immortal medicine!

Thus, in order to minimize the amount of Pinnacle Lifewater spent, he would have to utilize a slower method.

Chapter 1172: Teng Jiwen

Eventually, Li Qiye looked at the bunch of grasses connecting to the main root of the Peacock Tree before telling Kong Qinru: “Come, we have a lot of things to do.”

With that, he turned and left. After returning to the resting point of the Exquisite Valley, he wrote down a long list and handed it to her: “Go gather these things for me, as fast as possible.”

She carefully scanned the list. It contained many things such as pills and alchemy ingredients among other strange items. Some were quite common while others were even poisonous...

She put the list away and cupped her fists to say: “Young Noble Li, don’t worry, I will personally go back to the Exquisite Valley. When I’m not here, just tell the other disciples if you ever need anything. They will take care of it for you.”

Li Qiye needed too many things that were quite precious, so she had to personally take a trip back.

After she left, Li Qiye carried out his own business. He truly had too many things to do, such as working hard to sever the roots of the Peacock Tree. Moreover, he had to climb to the peak once more to prepare a grand stage for the entire land.

This was indeed a great price to pay for life replenishment. Alchemy materials alone weren’t enough, so Kong Qinru couldn’t afford to pay this price. This tree used to be a treefather. The

difficulty of this life replenishment was not much different from revitalizing an Immortal Emperor.

Even without using a lot of the Pinnacle Lifewater, the other method was quite expensive. It required a lot of life force, so Li Qiye had to prepare this stage for the final moment.

While he did all of this, the valley maintained a steady stream of materials to him.

Kong Qinru was very determined in this process. She spent painstaking efforts to gather the massive amount of materials and expensive treasures.

Even as the master, she couldn't decide it all by herself due to the sheer amount that was involved. In order to do so, she worked hard to convince the other ancestors of the valley and gained their support.

Due to the constant supply of materials, Li Qiye's plan was moving along quite smoothly.

On this day, Li Qiye was at the top of the Peacock Peak and was using the Myriad Heavenly Cauldron to unclog the blocked runic lines of the Peacock Tree. He controlled the cauldron with one hand and its fire with the other. This flame poured into the tree like a type of liquid.

Because of its age, many of its runic channels were blocked. By

doing this, it would buy a lot more time for the tree.

However, in order to replenish its life, Li Qiye must get through all the blocked channels. Otherwise, its blood energy and essences would be quite limited, so the entire process would be meaningless.

As he was clearing through these impassable channels, someone came to worship the Peacock Tree once more. It was the descendant of the Heavenvine Citadel that Li Qiye had met before, Teng Jiwen.

The same three old men were following behind him. The moment Teng Jiwen reached the top, he saw Li Qiye burning the tree and immediately shouted in shock: “Stop, what are you trying to do?!”

He was a treant, so as one of its disciples, he was full of admiration for an existence like the Peacock Tree. So now, after seeing someone actually burning the treefather, he was astounded and wanted to stop the perpetrator.

When he rushed over to see Li Qiye’s cauldron pouring an endless amount of fire into the tree trunk, he was completely stunned. The elders following him were stunned as well.

Their Heavenvine Citadel was also a lineage with a treefather, so they understood these great existences very well. Naturally, this scene was certainly astonishing.

Teng Jiwen asked in disbelief: “What, what are you doing?” Earlier when he told Li Qiye to stop, it was just an instinctive reaction.

Coming from the Heavenvine Citadel, he naturally knew that ordinary people couldn’t harm this ancestral tree that used to be a treefather.

Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile and spoke in a profound manner: “Life replenishment for the Peacock Tree!”

“Life Replenishment?!” Teng Jiwen and the three old men stared at each other. If this was a joke, then it certainly wasn’t a funny one. However, all four of them were speechless at this moment.

If others were to say this, they would be amused by the joke. However, the scene unraveling before them was far from it.

Li Qiye didn’t look like he was joking. More importantly, he could actually invade the Peacock Tree. This was simply inconceivable.

When a treefather turned into an ancestral tree, it wouldn’t keep its original sentience, it would become just like other trees. However, there was one aspect that was different; these ancestral trees were extremely powerful. Even Immortal Emperors wouldn’t be able to invade them easily.

It didn’t matter if the Peacock Tree had given permission or Li

Qiye used a special technique, this was still a heaven-defying matter and definitely not a joke.

The four of them then watched Li Qiye add more gushing fire into the body of the tree.

After a long while, Li Qiye withdrew the flames and the cauldron. This was enough time to ameliorate these blocked runic pathways.

Before leaving, he glanced at Teng Jiwen and smiled: “Life replenishment isn’t such an easy matter.”

He drifted away coolly after leaving behind those words. Meanwhile, the four of them were still astounded and couldn’t say anything.

A long time after Li Qiye left, the group finally calmed down. Teng Jiwen looked at the old man next to him and asked: “Third Uncle, do you think this is possible?”

The old man pondered for a moment before replying: “I really haven’t heard of life replenishment for an ancestral tree before. These are unfathomable existences, this task is probably as difficult as trying to prolong an Immortal Emperor’s life.”

A different old man added: “If we are purely speculating, then there is only one possibility. He is an Alchemy Emperor! Only an Alchemy Emperor would be able to replenish the life of an ancestral tree.”

At this time, Teng Jiwen touched the spot where Li Qiye was pouring fire into, but there were no signs of charring. It looked as if the Peacock Tree had opened a hole for Li Qiye to pour in the fire.

“Life replenishment for an ancestral tree...” He muttered to himself in a daze. Eventually, he composed himself and told the old man: “Third Uncle, go back and tell the elders that I won’t be coming back for now.”

This old man was surprised to hear this and retorted: “You can’t, all of the elders are coming out now for your assessment! If you miss this chance, you will be handing the citadel lord’s position to someone else.”

Teng Jiwen was only one of the descendants from the citadel. He had another strong competitor that was not lesser than him in both background and ability. Because of this, the position for the main successor had yet to be decided.

Teng Jiwen was touring the world and offered his respects to the different ancestral trees in order to learn the dao. Through this, he wanted to enhance his strength to pass the assessment of the ancestors.

But now, he actually said that he wasn’t going back. This made the people near him jump in shock.

A different old man worriedly spoke words of persuasion: “That’s

right, this assessment is of utmost importance. If you miss it, I'm afraid your chance of becoming the citadel lord will become slim."

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and earnestly said: "I know the gravity of the situation, but I will still remain here. Everyone, don't worry, I understand the implications very well."

The three old men glanced at each other. They couldn't do anything if Teng Jiwen had made up his mind.

Kong Qinru returned from the Exquisite Valley. All of the supplies Li Qiye specified had been brought in full.

With enough materials, Li Qiye began to perform the finishing touches for the stage he was building at Peacock Land. He had been through all the locations here, including the oceans nearby, and nailed down formation arrays. The center was done as well.

After finishing the final preparations, he could breathe easy. He looked down at his work from the mountain before casually entering a tavern in a nearby town.

He leisurely ordered some dishes and sat by a window. After being served, he slowly poured wine into his cup as if he was waiting for someone.

Chapter 1173: Deal With Teng Jiwen

While leisurely drinking his wine at the tavern, someone finally came. It was Teng Jiwen, followed by the three old men.

Li Qiye gave a faint smile after seeing him and said: “You all have been following me for a long time now, so this can’t be a coincidence.”

Teng Jiwen didn’t hide anything after hearing this. He came forward and bowed: “This little brother’s name is Teng Jiwen of the Heavenvine Citadel. Sir, I admire you, so I have decided to stay here to watch you. Please excuse us.”

He was quite polite and candid. As someone from a treefather’s lineage, he was not arrogant at all. This was quite rare.

Li Qiye glanced at him and said: “If I cared about it, you wouldn’t be standing here and talking to me right now.” Having said that, he tapped on the table with his finger.

Teng Jiwen bowed again with cupped fists before sitting down. He looked at Li Qiye but was quite hesitant for he was searching for the right words.

Li Qiye chuckled: “Speak, my time is very precious so I can’t sit here all day to entertain you.”

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and spoke: “Sir, you have a

supreme dao of alchemy. Your techniques are wonderful, to be able to see your method of revival—”

“No need to flatter me.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve with a smile: “I know my alchemy dao is supreme and matchless. I am the best alchemist in the nine heavens and ten earths.”

Teng Jiwen was suddenly dumbfounded. If Li Qiye praised himself like that, there was no need for him to say anything else.

He lamented this situation deep inside. Other people would start acting quite humble, but this person actually boasted even more!

Teng Jiwen went straight to the point after making up his mind: “Sir, can you really replenish the life an ancestral tree?”

Li Qiye gave a mysterious smile: “I can also cure your ancestral vine. After the calamity, its situation should be quite bad.”

“You...” Teng Jiwen’s expression shifted as he stood up and took several steps back. The chair behind him was knocked down in the process.

The three old men had similar expressions. They stared at Li Qiye intensely, making the situation tense. This was because only the upper echelons of the citadel knew about this matter. Teng Jiwen was a descendant-level disciple, so he knew as well. Ordinary disciples didn’t know about it.

Li Qiye sat there nonchalantly while sipping more wine: “Don’t have any stupid thoughts such as killing me to keep it a secret or I’ll bury you under the Peacock Tree as fertilizer.”

In just a moment, the elders glanced at each other. They didn’t know what kind of power this man ahead had, but they didn’t dare to act carelessly.

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and gently waved his hand towards the three elders. They then converged their auras and slowly retreated to the side.

He went back to the table and cupped his fists: “Sir, you are quite well-informed. May I ask how you found out about this?”

Li Qiye lazily replied: “Why dwell on this dull topic? Not too many things can hide from me in this world. You stayed behind to see my dao of alchemy, so this is naturally what you were aiming for.”

Teng Jiwen responded: “Sir, the truth is that this little brother is very interested in your dao of alchemy. After all, very few people in history are capable of such a feat.”

Li Qiye waved his hand dismissively: “There’s no need to waste time with polite formalities. You just want to ask me to save your ancestral tree.”

“Sir, you are correct.” He knew he couldn’t hide it any longer and

decisively stated: “I do have this thought simply because your dao of alchemy is matchless.”

“Requesting my service is not difficult, but you need to be mentally prepared. My asking price is very high.” With that, Li Qiye turned around and left.

However, he left one last message as he was walking away: “You better decide soon. My time is precious; if you miss this opportunity, it will be your lifelong regret.”

Teng Jiwen mulled over the situation left in silence after Li Qiye.

One of the old men said: “Asking an outsider with an unclear background to cure our treefather is too dangerous. I’m afraid the ancestors will not agree.”

A different one shared this sentiment with a nod: “We don’t know anything about this person. It is still too early to know if his dao of alchemy is actually matchless or not. If he can do it, then it’ll be easy. If he can’t, it will be a big disadvantage to you. Your opponent will use this against you and, with one misstep, you will never be able to redeem yourself. At that time, not to mention competing for the position of the citadel lord, you might not even have a place to stay in the city.”

“I know that full well.” Teng Jiwen wryly smiled: “But if he is truly a master, isn’t this a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity? In the present times, how many people in the Heaven Spirit World actually have the ability to cure a treefather?”

He paused with a sigh: “I know, the wise decision is to recognize the complexity that lies within and focus on winning the position of the citadel lord first. However, if we truly miss this chance, then it would be a huge regret for our city as a whole.”

“That might be true, but such a great event should be decided by the elders.” The old man called Third Uncle said: “Just focus on becoming the lord for now. If you are truly determined, it won’t be too late after you take the position.”

“But the issue is, will this opportunity wait for us?” He replied: “If he is truly able to replenish the Peacock Tree, then it shows just how heaven-defying his alchemy is. He would become famous the moment he successfully carries out this task. At that time, people all over the world would come begging him, including many imperial lineages and treefather heritages, to prolong their ancestors’ life and trees!”

“And once the nine worlds are reconnected, there would be an even larger world in front of him; even more would kneel before him to ask for life replenishment.” Teng Jiwen said: “At that point, he would be the ultimate alchemist, would he bother looking at us then? It’s just as he had put it, this will become our lifelong regret.”

The man called Third Uncle responded: “But these are only his words. He might not have this ability. Otherwise, he would be famous already.”

“Some things in this world can’t be judged with common sense. The world is too vast with many great and eccentric people.” Teng Jiwen said with a tinge of helplessness: “In my opinion, he isn’t a man of empty words. Without absolute confidence, no one would say such things. It is unwise to deceive and offend our Heavenvine Citadel unless he is powerful enough.”

After hearing this, the three old men glanced at each other. One of them said: “Even if you believe so, the other ancestors might not necessarily agree with you.”

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and replied: “Rest assured, I will certainly be able to convince them. I’m confident in this.”

The three old men had nothing else to say after seeing that Teng Jiwen had made up his mind. In fact, his good foresight was one of the reasons why he was a top candidate to become the citadel lord.

Li Qiye went back to the Exquisite Valley’s abode for several days and, sure enough, Teng Jiwen came to find him.

Kong Qinru asked: “Young Noble, were you waiting for him to come?” She knew that Li Qiye was no joke. If he didn’t wish for it, Teng Jiwen wouldn’t be here right now.

“Yes, I have been waiting for him to come since I do need to go to the Heavenvine Citadel.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“The Heavenvine Citadel?” She was surprised and asked: “What

about the Peacock Tree then?”

Li Qiye shook his head in response: “Can’t rush this matter. We have done what we need to do for now. Give it time to digest. When the time is right, I will carry out the last step.”

He looked at her and continued: “This is mainly because in order to have a successful replenishment, we still need some more special items.”

She said with haste: “What else is needed? The Exquisite Valley will get them for you.”

Li Qiye shook his head: “They aren’t things you lot can obtain. I have to do it in person.”

She realized something and asked: “Does the Heavenvine Citadel have them?”

“Yes, a very important item, the key to replenishing the Peacock Tree.” He replied with a smile.

She said: “I think the citadel won’t give it up so willingly.” How could a treefather’s lineage give away their treasure to an outsider, and a human at that?

“I have always gotten what I wanted.” Li Qiye smirked.

Such domineering words left her slack-jawed. She eventually said: “Young Noble, you want to rob them?”

Chapter 1174: Ongoing Plan

“Rob?” Li Qiye chortled and said: “Whether by force or as a gift, it is entirely up to them. This is their own good fortune; if they miss the chance, I can only say that they will feel very regretful later on.”

Kong Qinru lamented the upcoming event. Forcing a treefather’s lineage into giving him something... Outside of Immortal Emperors, no one would dare to carry out this domineering task.

“The ancestral vine from the citadel is still there.” She had to remind him: “Rumor has it that it is still very young and powerful, plenty capable of fighting an Immortal Emperor.”

After treefathers turn into ancestral trees, these existences wouldn’t care for mundane matters and weren’t much different from ordinary plants.

However, when an enemy invades their lineage or when a calamity approaches, these non-sentient beings would still fight to kill the enemies to protect their descendants.

The young trees were especially powerful, no less than their peak form when they were still alive. Thus, not even Immortal Emperors could defeat them with certainty.

“I know.” Li Qiye chuckled: “It’s no big deal if that tree is still there. If I wasn’t certain, I wouldn’t be going to the citadel in the first place.”

She heaved a sigh of relief after hearing this. Even though she knew that Li Qiye was not a bulliable nice guy, she still didn't know the true source of his power. After all, he will be facing a treefather's lineage, an invincible ancestral tree. Not too many would come out unscathed from a battle against such foes.

Both Godkings and Emperor Candidates won't do unless they were at the Emperor Assailant level.

"Is there no other way? Maybe we can try negotiating with them. My Exquisite Valley still has some influence, perhaps we can exchange some treasures with them." No matter which angle she looked at it, she didn't want him to quarrel against the citadel.

In her mind, even if he couldn't replenish the Peacock Tree's life, he still had an imperial bloodline. She hoped that he would be able to pass down this legacy in great numbers.

"Your valley has a lot of treasures, but even if you take out the best ones hidden in your sect for exchange, they still won't agree." Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Kong Qinru was startled and blurted: "Don't, don't tell me that you want that item from the citadel..."

"Yes, precisely." He nodded before she could finish speaking: "It won't be easy for the Peacock Tree to survive for another eight to ten generations, so that item will be very useful."

She was dumbfounded right away. Initially, she thought that he wanted something else from the citadel, not their mythical item. While looking quite silly, she had to spill her mind: “Well, well, it will be impossible. The citadel will definitely not give it to you.”

“Don’t worry, they will.” He smiled and shook his head after noticing her expression: “Don’t think of me as an unreasonable brute. Sometimes, I am very reasonable. I might need someone else’s stuff, but I will give them a deal of equivalent value. Look, I’m giving them a huge chance right now, it is up to them to take it.”

“It’s still impossible, they will want nothing in exchange for it.” She shook his head: “It is too precious to them.”

“That’s a pity because if that’s the case, the Heavenvine Citadel will collapse into ashes.” He faintly smiled.

“What...” She was stunned once more. No one would believe the upcoming destruction of the Heavenvine Citadel. Their ancestral vine was in its prime and would live for a much longer time across the generations.

Furthermore, with its protection, who would dare to attack the citadel?

“Don’t let your imagination run wild. It won’t be destroyed right away and I won’t be the one to do it.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I can only say that if they give up this godsend opportunity,

they will cease to exist in one or two generations.”

She didn't know what to say for this matter was beyond her comprehension and imagination.

He glanced over and said: “Outside of some other things, there is one more matter that you need to do. Go spread a message that the Peacock Tree is about to die. Remember, do not leave any traces.”

“That the Peacock Tree is dying?” She tried to confirm: “Do you want to spread this message right now?”

“No, wait until the time is right. I will let you know then.” He insipidly stated: “But you must be ready before then. I want this news to spread very quickly across the entire Heaven Spirit World.”

“I understand, the valley will do our best.” She nodded.

“One more thing.” He ordered: “Make plans to temporarily evacuate everyone from the Peacock Land. I will let you know when the time is right.”

“Evacuation?” Despite being a bit startled, she still agreed: “Leave this to our valley as well.”

Li Qiye asked: “And how are you doing on my issue?”

She quickly replied: “I have just received a new message. The person you are looking for has been seen before. She was seen at the Jade Sea, to be exact, at—”

“Cavalry Town.” Li Qiye gently sighed and finished her sentence. Who understood the Su Clan’s secret channel more than him? He naturally knew where she landed after coming to the Heaven Spirit World.

“Yes, her first appearance was at Cavalry Town. She traveled through several places since then, it seems like she was asking about an ancient tribe.” She elaborated: “But later on, she crossed the sea to the Dragon Demon Sea. It gets more complicated there and we haven’t received anything back. It might require more time.”

Li Qiye nodded and said: “Keep on searching and update me when possible. Let Teng Jiwen in, it is about time for me to leave as well.”

Kong Qinru acknowledged and followed his instructions. Of course, she couldn’t see Teng Jiwen herself. She took Li Qiye from Golden Isle, so if others were to find out that she was the mastermind behind this, it would bring a lot of trouble to the Exquisite Valley.

A moment later, Teng Jiwen marched inside and bowed the moment he saw Li Qiye: “Sir, this little brother will be bothering you again.”

Li Qiye glanced at him and eventually smiled: “You are not bad at all.”

Teng Jiwen was surprised to hear this. He didn’t know why Li Qiye would suddenly make this statement. Nevertheless, he still bowed and said: “[Thank you for the kind words, Sir. This little brother, no, this student](#) came this time to ask you to come visit my Heavenvine Citadel.”

Li Qiye cheerfully and said: “It seems like your ancestral vine’s problem is not trivial.”

The youth coughed and replied: “There is indeed a problem with our ancestral vine, so I’m inviting you to personally come and perform your skillful healing art, Sir.”

Li Qiye nonchalantly responded: “If I can’t cure your ancestral vine, no one else in the world can. However, you, or rather, your citadel should be ready. My price will be sky high, don’t blame me for not bringing this up at that point.”

Teng Jiwen felt that he and the citadel were fishes on a platter; Li Qiye was free to do whatever he wanted to them.

He took a deep breath and solemnly said: “Sir, rest assured that everything is negotiable as long as you can cure our ancestral vine.”

Li Qiye looked at the boy and smirked because the boy didn’t

know what he wanted at all. Li Qiye then spoke: “It is good that you all have such determination. Let us go then, my time is very precious.”

Teng Jiwen didn’t waste words and immediately led the way.

The Heavenvine Citadel was a great lineage in the Jade Sea. It was built on top of the Heavenvine Ancestor, also known as the Heavenvine Treefather.

Of course, it was not comparable to Golden Isle. The isle had two ancestral trees and was much older than the citadel with inconceivable resources.

Nevertheless, the citadel was still a great lineage even when placed among the rest of the Heaven Spirit World since it still had one treefather. Not to mention ordinary cultivators, even Godkings wouldn’t dare to have any ideas against a place protected by an ancestral tree.

However, little did the citadel know that Li Qiye was preying on them. Moreover, the item he wanted was their lifeblood.

Teng Jiwen and Li Qiye traveled through a portal to directly reach the Heavenvine Citadel.

While standing here, anyone could feel a majestic aura full of life wafting in the air. On the platform, Li Qiye glanced at the lofty sky and boundless sea.

It is important to note that he has been calling Li Qiye “sir” nonstop. This “sir” can also be what students use to call their teachers. He moved himself one position lower on the hierarchy by addressing himself as student instead of little brother. This sentence is awkward but is necessary to show the change of tone, the speaker’s change of belief in the duo’s relative status.

Chapter 1175: Heavenvine Citadel

It was more apt to describe the Heavenvine Citadel as a world suspending in the sky rather than a city.

If one were sailing on the grand sea and looking forward, this would seem like a gigantic monster, an unimaginably large tree growing on the water.

In fact, this was not a tree but a gigantic vine of an unreal magnitude since it reached even the sky canopy. One could see islands scattered about right below this great vine.

Outside of little islets that were actually made from soil, there were also islands made out of the branches from intertwining vines.

When squatting down for a different perspective, people could actually see more astonishing islands. They were being held up by roots and even the leaves of the vine tree. Such islands were mountains taken from under the sea and placed on top of the vine tree.

While standing below the vine and looking up, the entire sky would be blotted out by its branches and leaves. In fact, in this sea region, countless vine roots were crisscrossing each other. Some surfaced on the sea and looked like mountain ranges.

At the same time, there was a feeling that the sky up above was another world entirely due to the sheer size of the vine tree. Its

parts intertwined to form a new world. Palaces were built on them and even smaller cities could be found. The old ancestors worked hard to bring many mountains up the vine tree to form landmasses and cities.

In the deepest recesses of the vine tree were numerous peaks brought together into a huge continent. It was refined into a forbidden location. This was the heavenly grotto meant for the ancestors.

Such a magical scene appeared before everyone, causing them to be overwhelmed with awe. An entire world was held up by this vine tree.

“Prosperity and downfall both brought about by the heavenly vine.” Li Qiye commented as he gazed at the scenery.

Such words shook Teng Jiwen’s mind as an ominous feeling arose. He wasn’t clear of what this omen meant.

“Sir, this way, please.” He calmed down and quickly told Li Qiye: “Our disciples have prepared your quarters. Please rest well, [it has been a long and hard journey.](#)”

Li Qiye faintly smiled without saying anything and left the dao platform.

After preparing Li Qiye’s quarters, Teng Jiwen went to report to his seniors before talking to the upper echelons.

The citadel treated Li Qiye with the greatest amount of respect for a guest. Such treatment was no less than if he was a sect master from an imperial lineage.

After Teng Jiwen left, Li Qiye opened his palace and released the Myriad Era Tree. It drilled into the ground like a spirit serpent.

The ancestral vine was everything in this place. Its roots were the foundation of the citadel. Nothing was more important and comparable to the vine. Thus, many generations of wise sages here worked quite hard. Despite the large territory, every single branch and leaf had formation seals on them. Anyone who wanted to conspire against the ancestral vine would be found out right away.

Outside of being vigilant against outsiders, they prevented disciples from their own sect from causing trouble as well. However, the truth was that even without these preparations from the wise sages, invading the ancestral vine was next to impossible since it was powerful beyond imagination.

Even if a truly heaven-defying person could infiltrate a leaf or a branch, they wouldn't be able to infiltrate the main root of the tree, let alone the truly important zones.

Of course, this was no problem for Li Qiye. Outside of the Longevity Grass, there was nothing more precious than the Myriad Era Tree.

More importantly, it didn't drill into the ancestral vine with

malicious intent. It carried a vigorous amount of life force. This was the power of eternal life, something one could only come across with great fortune.

Without a doubt, the ancestral vine did not refuse and even welcomed this quiet intruder.

Li Qiye used the Myriad Era Tree to diagnose the ancestral vine. He eventually shook his head and murmured: “Even more serious than I imagined.”

Eventually, he recalled the Myriad Era Tree and smiled before leaving his room to stand on the edge of the sky.

The pavilion he was staying at was built on top of a medium-sized mountain. It was clearly transported from somewhere else to the top of this particular leaf.

While looking at the strange world ahead, he chuckled and said with emotions: “No matter which generation, [there are no rootless duckweeds in this world.](#)”

He stood there and gazed at the horizon while contemplating many things. It was difficult to find someone who understood the Heaven Spirit World more than him.

Just like he told Kong Qinru before, he didn't agree with humans staying in this world; they were simply rootless duckweeds here.

In the future, they would one day come to find that this was not their world and that they were simply traveling passersby or even those less significant than that. In his eyes, they were orphans without any shelter or support.

This was a world of the charming spirits, the world of the treants, and the world of the sea demons, leaving nothing behind for the humans.

Of course, everyone had the choice and rights to stay or leave. For millions of years, Li Qiye had been too lazy to care about it. After all, people didn't know about certain things. Only when that day arrives would they realize it.

Of course, that would be when they have to face the choice they must make.

He stood there for an unknown period of time. Teng Jiwen came back and stood next to Li Qiye without daring to disturb him. After a long time, he softly spoke: "Sir, my master is here."

Li Qiye came back from his reflection and casually smiled: "Have you ever thought about where the Heavenvine Citadel will go if the ancestral vine does collapse one day?"

Such words were too much for Teng Jiwen. The jolt made him take one step back. He had never thought about such a terrible thing before. It would be disrespectful towards his ancestors.

He wryly smiled and spoke right away: “Sir, that is a very unlucky statement.”

Li Qiye raised his brows and flatly said: “I am only stating the truth, there is nothing unlucky about it. Even if an ancestral tree could be revived, it will also wither once more in due time! Nothing is eternal in this world, and your ancestral vine is no exception. At the Heaven Spirit World, many ancestral trees have already fallen with their lineages soon afterward.”

Teng Jiwen couldn't come up with a retort right away for his mind was quite confused. These ancestors would scold him if they were to hear such words. Even though he was unwilling to think about it, Li Qiye was right about this fact. That day would come. However, it was very far away to him. He would definitely not live to see it.

Li Qiye turned and walked inside at this time. Teng Jiwen regained his composure and quickly followed behind him.

There was already an old man waiting in the room. He was a little bit different. Although his body was made out of flesh and blood, his right arm still carried the characteristics of a treant for it seemed to be carved out of wood.

“Profound Treehand.” Li Qiye took a glimpse at the man's right hand and smiled: “To have such a level of atavism, you must be the Heavenvine Citadel Lord.”

The old man was surprised to see Li Qiye blurting out his

background so quickly. Anyone could see that his right hand was atavistic. However, few could see through its mysteries.

And yet, an outsider was able to discern it with a single glance. His surprise was well warranted.

Teng Jiwen was scared by Li Qiye as well. He eventually gave the introduction after calming down: “Sir, this is my master and also the current lord of our citadel.”

Despite being the citadel lord, the old man was very respectful and polite towards Li Qiye. He bowed and said: “[You](#) must be the supreme alchemist that my disciple has been harping about...”

This last part is just a literary formality. They took a portal here. Usually, the host would say it to the guest who traveled far distances, especially when they’re here to carry out a favor.

I’m not familiar with this expression. The only idiom I know of duckweeds is duckweeds coming together by chance or strangers coming together by chance. I’m not sure what this one means, but I would guess from the narrative that the root signifies home.

The “you” here is not quite “sir” level, but it is a polite and formal “you”.

Chapter 1176: Heavenvine Citadel Lord

Li Qiye glanced at both of them and smiled: “It is indeed not easy to be in a great lineage. Citadel Lord, you have just won a great opportunity for the city.”

The two were slightly confused at Li Qiye’s words. They didn’t know that their attitude and posture had just garnered great benefits for their city. It could be said that countless lives were saved because of them.

“I heard my disciple say that you are the current shining beacon who is willing to use your great skill to rid our city of worries.” Though the citadel lord was a bit puzzled at this moment, he didn’t lose his respectful attitude and bowed once more.

Regardless of the time and place, powerful alchemists all enjoyed great statuses. This was doubly true for alchemists who were capable of life replenishment. A single word could command experts all over the world.

Li Qiye flatly stated: “I wouldn’t be standing here if I didn’t want to cure your ancestral vine of its calamity.”

The citadel lord’s mind was moved after hearing this. If Li Qiye could actually do so, this would be the greatest of news for both the citadel and him.

He took a deep breath and replied: “My disciple has told me that you are also life replenishing the Peacock Tree...”

Li Qiye waved his hand to interrupt him: “Citadel Lord, I know what you are thinking. You want to know if I will be successful or not.”

He looked at the lord and insipidly continued: “I can tell you that it is not yet done. Life replenishment can’t be completed in a day or two, so there is no need to hide it. However, since I have come here, I am confident about curing your ancestral vine. It is time for you to cast aside your doubts so that you can answer one question, will your citadel be able to pay this price?”

“I can guarantee that I will be able to fully cure your tree, but my asking price is exorbitant.” Li Qiye uttered clearly: “This depends on if you are willing to pay or not!”

The citadel lord stood up to bow once more: “I was being presumptuous. Sir, if you have such capabilities, then nothing could be better. Just name the price, our citadel will not disappoint you—”

Li Qiye interrupted him once more while shaking his head: “Citadel Lord, do not be so quick to accept, give it a moment. Should you still decline when the time comes, don’t blame me for not giving you an easy way out.”

The lord’s heart trembled a bit, but he was already prepared. He solemnly replied: “Sir, just tell us what you want.”

In fact, before meeting Li Qiye, the citadel lord had already

arranged for everything. When Teng Jiwen reported this to the ancestors, they had discussed this matter in detail. If someone could actually cure the ancestral vine, the citadel would do its best to accommodate that person.

The truth was that the upper echelons were prepared for this as well. After all, they had assessed the potential cost earlier. An item desired by a supreme alchemist would, of course, be invaluable.

Naturally, they were also quite confident. After several generations of accumulating wealth, they could take out any treasure or great medicine. Regardless of what this alchemist wanted, they would still be able to afford the price.

“Well, in a sense, what I want is not that difficult for your Heavenvine Citadel to provide.” He leisurely smiled and said: “I’m not asking for much. To cure your ancestral vine, only your Heavenvine Calabash will be enough.”

“The Heavenvine Calabash!” Even Teng Jiwen blurted after hearing the request.

The citadel lord became silly. He stared at Li Qiye and stammered: “Sir... you, you really want the Heavenvine Calabash?”

Li Qiye flatly confirmed: “That’s right, as long as you can give me the calabash, I will cure your ancestral vine fully.”

Very quickly, both the citadel lord and Teng Jiwen became slack-jawed. The calabash was too important to the citadel. In their minds, even if they had imperial weapons, the calabash was still worth much more.

“Sir, I’m, I’m afraid this isn’t possible.” The lord calmed down and shook his head. Such a request was out of the question for both him and the citadel as a whole.

“It seems like, in your mind, the ancestral vine isn’t worth as much as a single Heavenvine Calabash.” Li Qiye laughed and said: “This is truly disappointing. It looks like your treefather’s lineage only has a bunch of short-sighted old geezers.”

The citadel lord proceeded with some helplessness: “Sir, you must know that the calabash is unique. Our ancestral vine produced just one. We’ll lose too much without the calabash...”

Li Qiye waved his hand and interrupted him dismissively: “I know the usage of the calabash. To keep it simple, those old geezers rely on it to prolong their lives, the undying ones buried underground that is. All in all, they are not willing to die and want to live longer by using the calabash.”

The lord was put in a difficult situation. He coughed and said: “Sir, it is good that you know the usage of the calabash. The truth is that your demand is too much. Could you consider asking for something else? If you want, we have two nine transformations soulgrasses, or we can give some divine weapons, ancient scrolls from the human race, or even immortal dewdrops from a heavenly tree...”

Li Qiye stopped him short once more: “Citadel Lord, I don’t care for such things, only the Heavenvine Calabash will suffice.”

Li Qiye’s firm attitude halted the conversation. The citadel lord had no response because too many ancestors required the calabash for their own lifespan. The citadel simply couldn’t hand it over.

“Sir, can you reconsider...” The lord was quite helpless as he tried to persuade Li Qiye.

Li Qiye looked at him and smiled: “In your mind, is this calabash really more precious than the ancestral vine?”

“Of course not.” The lord denied right away with an awkward chuckle.

“I know very well that all of you want to maintain an optimistic outlook. In your minds, the ancestral vine’s issue can wait a bit. If it can’t be dealt with right now, then you’ll wait until the next generation. In short, your tree is still young and can live for a long time...

“... But have you ever thought of the day when your ancestral vine will actually fall?!” Li Qiye coldly looked at the lord: “Once your treefather falls, what will be left of the Heavenvine Citadel? Your numerous mountains and countless palaces are all built on the vine tree. The day of your ancestral vine’s destruction will be the day when your citadel falls into ruins...

“... How many of your islands are actually supported by the earth and sea? Only around ten or twenty percent at best. Compared to Golden Isle, your citadel is only [a pavilion in the air](#). They have thousands and thousands of islands that are supported by the earth and rooted in the oceans to gain great stability! What about you lot?” He snorted at this point.

“Well, well...” The citadel lord had to admit: “We are indeed not as great as Golden Isle.”

Li Qiye went on with his criticism: “Your citadel wants to believe in luck. Because your ancestral vine is still in its prime, you think that as long as you leave behind enough ancestors and train a new treefather out of them... With this plan in mind, there will be no need to do more since your pillar is still there, and that there is ample time. All of your resources are being poured elsewhere.” He said with a laugh: “Even if this generation cannot deal with it, the next might be able to, or the one after that.”

Even though the citadel lord knew that Li Qiye was ridiculing them, he was not in a position to fight back and could only smile wryly: “Our citadel has been looking for an alchemist to cure our ancestral vine.”

“Yes, you all are still searching because death is not in the corners of your eyes just yet. Thus, you are not in a rush at all.” Li Qiye grinned.

The citadel lord had nothing to say. Li Qiye was correct in his

analysis of their current plan and beliefs. They were taking their time to find a suitable alchemist to treat their ancestral vine's calamity.

Reminder, “pavilion in the air” is an idiom meaning unrealistic utopia/imaginary future plan.

Chapter 1177: Ancestral Vine's Calamity

Li Qiye sneered at the citadel lord: “Really, if your ancestral vine ever lives again one day, it would crush all of you into meat paste out of anger. It would be incredibly disappointed at how greedy its descendants are. Back then, in order to bear another calabash, you all tried to seize the essence of the Heaven’s Will, but none of you expected the punishment from the heavens that left behind an eternal calamity on your ancestral vine.”

“How, how, did you know?!” The citadel lord was feeling quite ashamed, but he became shocked after hearing this.

This was a great secret. Outside of the citadel lords across the generations, even very few ancestors knew about it.

Teng Jiwen was stunned as well since he didn’t know about this matter. As one of the descendants, he only knew that the ancestral vine was in trouble and needed an invincible alchemist. He didn’t know that this illness was caused by their ancestors in the first place.

“This is no secret at all. Even if your citadel has been quite deliberate in your attempt to conceal it, you still can’t hide from me.” Li Qiye smiled: “Back when Immortal Emperor Bu Si collapsed and the Heaven’s Will returned to the void, your group of ancestors became greedy and wanted to seize its essence to produce another calabash so that they could live on via life replenishment. Alas, it was a complete disaster and the heavens answered with a punishment. If your ancestral vine wasn’t extremely powerful back then due to being young, your

Heavenvine Citadel would have been rendered to ashes right then and there!”

The citadel lord fell into silence after hearing this. Teng Jiwen was frightened as well. He didn’t expect that their citadel carried such a secret. He looked over at the lord and asked: “Master, is this true?”

After a good while, the lord smiled wryly and said: “Since Sir already knows about it, then there is no need to hide it from you. Yes, it is true.”

Teng Jiwen was stunned. He didn’t expect that the ancestral vine’s calamity was brought about by their own ancestors. His prior understanding was that it was just a natural punishment from the heavens.

“It was a very long time ago and only a few ancestors personally experienced it.” The citadel lord had to tell the story: “You are qualified to become the next citadel lord, so there is no need to hide it from you. Back then, Immortal Emperor Bu Si fell into ruin and the Heaven’s Will returned to the origin. The Sacred Ancestor’s group had an extremely bold idea to obtain another calabash, but it only ended with the wrath from above.”

Teng Jiwen was quite shaken after hearing this, it simply contained too much shocking information.

“With the collapse of an Immortal Emperor, many priceless items appeared, inciting the greed of the salivating crowd.” Li Qiye

chuckled. Even he was moved by this event.

Immortal Emperor Bu Si was praised as an undying who possessed true eternal life. However, his death was real. Moreover, he was the only emperor among all of them with a known ending.

The legend said that he was unkillable throughout his entire life. He was put down time and time again; these were real deaths, not a type of suspended animation. However, he always climbed out of the dirt and succeeded in reviving himself regardless of how he was killed.

After so many deaths, he eventually became an Immortal Emperor. However, no one could have imagined that he would eventually collapse and die! Such a thing was too unbelievable. It became a stirring mystery.

For millions of years, everyone wanted to figure it out. Why was Immortal Emperor Bu Si unkillable? Why did he collapse? Alas, an answer was not found.

The only thing people knew for certain was that this was the only emperor whose fate was known to all.

The boy stood there, frozen. There was too much within this matter that he didn't previously know.

"I don't want to talk to you about the individual aspects of this matter since there is simply too much." Li Qiye gazed at the citadel

lord and said: “Instead, I come with a message: your ancestral vine doesn’t have much time left.”

The lord was shaken and immediately stood up again: “Sir, are you certain?!”

Li Qiye replied: “You can also think of it as mere alarmist talk, an attempt to scare you and not worry about it. However, I can only say that I have told the truth and laid out the opportunity. Whether you wish to seize it or not is now up to your citadel.”

The flustered citadel lord didn’t believe Li Qiye at all. Nevertheless, he still asked: “Then, Sir, how long can our ancestral vine hang on for?”

“If I was motivated by my own gains, I could scare you and say ten years, or maybe that it’s already on the verge of demise.” Li Qiye smiled: “However, there’s no need to do so. Your ancestral vine can still survive a bit longer than the Peacock Tree.”

The citadel lord simply didn’t believe Li Qiye and blurted out: “That is impossible!”

In fact, Teng Jiwen was skeptical as well: “Sir, that can’t be. Our ancestral vine is still full of vitality. It can shoulder stars and grasp the sun and moon. If it wasn’t doing well, we would have recognized it already.”

This was an understandable reaction. After all, the tree was still

in its prime with exuberant life force. How could it collapse so easily?

“This has nothing to do with its lifespan.” Li Qiye lightly said: “It is due to the calamity. Despite it being very strong, it won’t be able to handle this stress for much longer.”

The lord countered: “Sir, our ancestors have sealed the calamity. If it broke through the seal, our citadel would know right away. I’m afraid your words are not very persuasive.”

Li Qiye looked at him with one eye and dismissively said: “It is your business to believe it or not. Go ahead and think about it, but let me remind you, my time is limited.”

There was nothing left to say, so the citadel lord stood up and bowed: “Since it is so, I will have to discuss this with the ancestors.” He turned and walked away afterward.

Teng Jiwen was one step behind his master. After the citadel lord, he hesitated for a moment and looked at Li Qiye then spoke with sincerity: “Sir, is this the truth?”

Li Qiye looked at him and smiled: “You can think that I am deceiving you, but the person making the choice is no longer me. I’m giving your citadel exactly one chance. Think about it carefully.” Li Qiye then pointed at his own head: “I can replenish the life of the Peacock Tree, what else can’t I do? Do you really think that I must beseech your citadel for the calabash?”

Teng Jiwen mused quietly. It was definitely not wise for Li Qiye to try to trick them for the calabash. After all, it wasn't that easy to trick them. Plus, if he offended them, there would be no place for him to stay at the Heaven Spirit World. Lastly, the people who are truly capable wouldn't resort to such trickery.

He eventually said: "Sir, even if I trust you, the ancestors won't."

"That is your business. As the descendant, you can go do something about it. The fate of the Heavenvine Citadel is up to you and those old geezers."

"I'll try." He said weakly: "But I'm not sure whether I can convince them."

At this moment, he believed Li Qiye more. The person didn't need to trick them. Moreover, curing the ancestral vine was much better than losing a single Heavenvine Calabash. Eventually, he bowed and left.

The citadel lord immediately met several ancestors upon his return. After hearing the claim, the group immediately went to check the seal of the calamity. The seal remained completely untouched.

Nevertheless, for prudence's sake, the citadel lord still convened a meeting and invited several more ancestors. Many old ancestors disagreed with Li Qiye's claim and thought that he was simply trying to scare them for the calabash.

However, the citadel lord still carried out this meeting solemnly. He personally met Li Qiye and, though he still had a lot of questions, his conversation with Li Qiye left him feeling that the probability of Li Qiye lying was quite low. After all, this was their territory, Li Qiye shouldn't even think about leaving if he was trying to trick them. On the other hand, those strong enough to leave their citadel forcefully would look down on such trickery.

After the meeting, many ancestors opposed Li Qiye's argument. They thought that even if he wasn't trying to trick them, it was still exaggerated.

The citadel lord's idea was to ask Li Qiye to treat the ancestral vine. In his mind, regardless of how long the vine had left to live, it indeed was trapped by a calamity that they had always wanted to eradicate.

Chapter 1178: Negotiation

Meanwhile, the Hao branch strongly opposed the citadel lord's proposal. They were quite adamant in this regard.

The Hao branch was a powerful family in the Heavenvine Citadel. They had an ancient and powerful bloodline, especially their main disciple, Hao Yuzhen. Hao Yuzhen had an old regal bloodline. Both their background and bloodline were extremely noble.

The reason was very simple. Hao Yuzhen and Teng Jiwen were evenly-matched and both were competing for the seat of the citadel lord.

At the same time, the current citadel lord and Teng Jiwen were from a different branch. Though this competition between the two branches had yet to escalate to a life-and-death conflict, it had never ceased.

In particular, the rivalry between Hao Yuzhen and Teng Jiwen was quite fierce. The old regal bloodline of Hao Yuzhen made their cultivation quite strong. On the other hand, Teng Jiwen had his wooden eyes, so he was equally powerful. Both of them had the potential to become the new lord.

Thus, the Hao branch naturally wouldn't agree with this matter. If Li Qiye could actually cure the ancestral vine, this would be a great merit for Teng Jiwen.

“He is only a charlatan of unknown origin, why should we trust his words?” An ancestor from the Hao branch was certain that Li Qiye was here for the calabash: “If our ancestral vine’s calamity was really as grave as he says, we would have felt it already. Even our forefathers don’t seem to think so. The calamity is clearly sealed, he is just trying to get attention.”

Many ancestors outside of the Hao branch agreed as well. After all, there were no negative signs coming from their ancestral vine.

If it was on the verge of collapse, the citadel would have felt it by now. There should at least be some ominous signs, but none could be found. This was indicative of the vine’s current status. Moreover, their seal was completely untouched as well.

“I don’t think so.” The citadel lord went against the crowd: “If Mister Li was a liar, he should know that there would be no place for him to stay at the Heaven Spirit World after tricking us. However, if he is confident enough in his own strength to deal with us, then does he need to lie in the first place?”

With that, he glanced at each ancestor and said: “Moreover, he knows more than even our imagination, secrets unknown to outsiders. How could a mere charlatan be privy to these things?”

The Hao Ancestor coldly retorted: “Some things will be found out if people try hard enough to learn about them. Plus, who dares to say with certainty that no one else has leaked the secret?”

The lord ignored him and focused on the other ancestors instead:

“Let us take a step back and assume that Mister Li is simply exaggerating. Our ancestral vine was indeed inflicted by this calamity. Because of this, we have been trying to find treatments from one generation to another, yet we still haven’t found an alchemist capable of doing so. But now, Mister Li is confident in his ability to cure our ancestral vine — this is [a once-in-myriad-generations opportunity](#) for us.”

The Hao Ancestor asserted: “What if he is just bragging in order to scheme for the Heavenvine Calabash?”

The citadel lord looked at him and flatly said: “Gentlemen, all of our ancestors are here. Do you think a single junior can deceive all of us? If Mister Li is able to cure our ancestral vine, it will finally resolve this timeless agony. Even if he doesn’t, what do we have to lose? If we don’t even have the courage to try, we will never be able to cure our ancestral vine.”

These words were quite logical. The ancestors here took a gander at each other and thought that how could a junior possibly trick all of them?

“We can indeed let Mister Li try.” An ancient ancestor finally spoke: “It will be great if he can actually succeed, but he is asking for too much. You should know that the Heavenvine Calabash cannot be traded.”

“That’s right!” The Hao Ancestor immediately parroted: “Do you know what not having the calabash means for our citadel? We have too many ancestors relying on it to renew their lifespans!”

Many ancestors fell silent on this topic. At this moment, they had several heaven-defying ancestors that needed the calabash to prolong their lives. Without it, they would have fallen long ago. One could even say that without it, it would result in a huge loss for the citadel in the near future.

The citadel lord contemplated quietly for a second. In fact, he meticulously considered this problem before the meeting and had made up his mind.

He stood up to look at the ancestors and raised his voice: “Ancestors, apologies for the upcoming disrespectful words from this junior. Even though the calabash is very important to us, what is more important than the ancestral vine...”

“... Without the ancestral vine, the citadel will cease to exist. Upon its collapse, what will be left of this place? Only a few islands scattered about at sea! This alone cannot help us reach the pinnacle in the Heaven Spirit World! Without the ancestral vine, our children will have to leave their home! Please ask yourselves, is the calabash more important than the ancestral vine?!” He was very solemn in his speech.

This was difficult for many of these ancestors. Of course, the ancestral vine was the most important for them. However, [those who don't put themselves first would be scorned by the heaven and earth](#). This was especially true for the dying ancestors. They would be doomed without the calabash! Moreover, they still thought that they had ample time to delay the treatment!

“Collapse — this matter is still too far away from us.” The Hao Ancestor coldly said: “We have plenty of time to find an alchemist who can heal it. We don’t necessarily have to rely on this Junior Li!”

The citadel lord uttered clearly: “It might be far away and we might have enough time to find the right alchemist, but one thing is certain. For many generations, we have never been able to find one!”

The ancestors here found themselves in a dilemma. If Li Qiye were to actually cure the ancestral vine, it meant that they must pay a great price! Not everyone was willing to do so.

“On this matter, I will have to consult some of the older ancestors.” The oldest ancestor here made his decision.

The citadel lord and the younger ancestors could only agree. They would make a final call after the ancient ancestors have made up their minds.

Regardless of whether they would employ his services, the great hospitality did not go away. Li Qiye was still treated as an esteemed guest.

He stared at the vast sea above his room on top of the giant leaf. His eyes then focused on the distant horizon.

The truth was that he didn’t care for the ancestors’ decision.

Regardless of the method, he must obtain the Heavenvine Calabash with or without their consent.

A sweet breeze blew by. A woman suddenly floated closer and stood by his side.

She was very beautiful and emitted a fresh aura like a pearl placed on top of a green leaf.

She looked at him and asked: “Are you the alchemist invited by Senior Brother Teng?”

He looked at her and faintly smiled: “Yes, that’s me.”

She said: “I am a Heavenvine disciple. Senior Brother Teng asked me to come here to tell you to leave right away!”

Li Qiye laughed in response: “Leave? Why should I have to leave?”

“Sir, you might be unaware of this, but the situation is quite unfavorable for you.” She explained: “The ancestors think that you want to steal our calabash, so they want to imprison you...”

Li Qiye burst out in laughter before she could finish as if he had just heard the funniest thing in his life.

“Why do you laugh?” She didn’t understand.

Li Qiye observed her for a bit before leisurely replying: “An ancient regal bloodline flows within you. At the Heavenvine City, only the Hao branch has this old treant bloodline!”

“There are two main branches, Hao and Teng. For millions of years, the citadel lord would sometimes be someone with a different last name, but the majority of the time this position would be taken by one of these two branches.” Li Qiye smiled and looked at the girl: “Teng Jiwen has wooden pupils, so he is qualified to be the citadel lord. Your regal bloodline can keep up with him, but barely. When his wooden pupils reach the peak, it can sentence one’s life and death!”

The girl was startled and had to stagger back after hearing this. She stared at Li Qiye as if he was a ghost. Not even in her dreams would she expect for this seemingly insignificant person to reveal her identity.

“You’re only a junior yet you still dare to scheme before me? You don’t know your own limits.” Li Qiye lazily sneered: “You just want to scare me away before telling everyone that I have escaped from being found out. Then you would put the blame on Teng Jiwen in order to smear him. This little trick is not enough to get into my sight.”

The girl’s complexion turned white then green in a short period of time. Her tricks were exposed in such a humiliating manner!

Once in a lifetime sounds so much better but it has been used recently. This phrase sounds silly in English, but it does elevate the scale and stay true to the raw

This is a common idiom that has a twisted meaning in this particular usage. The original intent is: those who don't cultivate themselves would be scorned by the heaven and earth. Cultivating oneself is one step to benefit society and others, not just for the self. However, the new meaning in literature is: those who don't put themselves first would be scorned by the heaven and earth. It is a justification for selfishness. Everyone is selfish, so you have to be as well in order to survive. Of course, there are other interpretations of this idiom. Another one is: those who don't better themselves (by taking action) will be scorned by the heaven and earth. One must be active and work for improvement or the heavens will not help you.

Chapter 1179: Hao Yuzhen

This girl was Hao Yuzhen, Teng Jiwen's strongest rival for the citadel lord's position. She had an ancient regal bloodline that qualified her for the position.

She coldly sneered: "It seems like Senior Brother Teng is quite close to you to actually tell you so many things. You better be careful, revealing the secret of the citadel is a capital offense!"

At this time, she had other plans to [splash some dirty water](#) on Teng Jiwen.

Of course, she didn't believe Li Qiye saw through everything about her. This man ahead couldn't reach the apex. It must have been Senior Brother Teng Jiwen who told him everything.

"I don't care for your Heavenvine Citadel's bullshit." He didn't bother to look at her as he said: "Your competition with him is your own business, do not touch me with your dog paw or I won't mind hanging your skull on the highest peak of the citadel!"

"You!" Hao Yuzhen's expression turned ugly to the extreme. She immediately wanted to burst out in a furor, but she managed to endure it. At this moment, the ancestors were still discussing whether they should let Li Qiye cure the ancestral vine or not. Taking a shot at Li Qiye was very unwise, and Teng Jiwen would take advantage of this!

She coldly looked at him and said: "[Don't make porcelain](#)

[without a piece of diamond](#). Curing this calamity is not a joke, don't even think about it if you are not capable. If you can't do it, the ancestors will become furious and at that point, Brother Teng will push you out as a scapegoat... “

“I accept your goodwill.” Li Qiye laughed and started before she could finish: “But this is as easy as breakfast for me. There's no need for you to worry, the calabash is as good as mine already.”

Hao Yuzhen was quite unhappy. She initially wanted to scare Li Qiye away. If he had actually fled out of fear, it would have been quite beneficial for her. She would immediately use this to attack Teng Jiwen and accuse him of leaking the citadel's secrets.

However, Li Qiye simply didn't take her bait, so her efforts were for naught.

She snorted and said: “Even if you are capable and obtain the Heavenvine Calabash, you should know that paper cannot wrap fire. There are no secrets in this world; if people know that you have a calabash capable of replenishing life...”

“... You can easily imagine how many ancestors will salivate while staring at you. In less than three days, you will become prey in everyone's eyes, a piece of meat among a shiver of sharks. In just three seconds, they will tear you into pieces...” She continued to intimidate him.

He finally looked at her lazily and smiled: “Good, I have heard your advice and warning.” With that, he went back into his room.

She, on the other hand, was quite unhappy. A nobody junior like him dared to look down on her — this was truly maddening.

After taking only a few steps, he turned back and laughed while issuing a warning: “By the way, stop your noxious little game. As I have said before, try to touch me with your dog paw and I’ll off your head and put it at the citadel’s peak.”

“You!” Her face blackened from being livid while her entire body trembled. She would have killed Li Qiye already if she wasn’t afraid of Teng Jiwen using this against her.

He ignored her and went back to his room.

On that same night, Teng Jiwen came back and asked: “Sir, I heard our disciples say that my junior sister visited you?”

Li Qiye noticed his tense demeanor and smirked: “Only a little matter, there’s no need to be nervous. If she could do anything to me, I wouldn’t be sitting here right now.”

He heaved a sigh of relief after hearing Li Qiye’s words. Li Qiye glanced over at him and asked: “How was your citadel’s discussion? They should have an answer by now.”

When this matter was brought up, Teng Jiwen rubbed his palms nervously and coughed: “Sir, my master has talked with the other ancestors. Now we have to wait for the ancient ancestors to agree.”

Li Qiye lazily drank his tea and asked: “Do you think those ancient ancestors will agree?”

“Well...” Teng Jiwen found it difficult to answer: “The ancient ancestors are wise; I trust that they will come up with something more sagacious than us juniors.”

Li Qiye snorted and said: “A person will be afraid of death. Those who are in higher positions and have lived for a long time would be even more scared. For ages now, very few have been able to see through life and death. These types of people are amazing and capable of having their names recorded in history.”

In fact, Teng Jiwen was not certain in the least. After all, no one needed the calabash more than these ancient ancestors. It was just as Li Qiye had said, people would always be afraid of death. Those who were more powerful would try to prolong their lives regardless of the cost.

“I know that their penetrating insight will come through.” Teng Jiwen quickly answered: “Sir, just be patient, they will give you a satisfactory answer.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I know this issue better than you. Those old buried geezers would take a year to make a decision. I’m not idle enough to wait for them and for you all to make a decision as the chance will pass by.”

“Sir, you mean...” He asked with some confusion.

Li Qiye smiled and put up two fingers: “Two days. I will give your citadel two days. After that, I will take the calabash.”

“Sir, this is too much.” Teng Jiwen was a very good-natured person. He was hospitable, but he couldn’t accept such an unreasonable demand.

Li Qiye nodded: “Yes, I am indeed pushy right now. To put it plainly, I have no time to waste at your citadel. I’ll take the item after two days regardless of whether your citadel agrees or not!”

“Sir, are you trying to force us?” Teng Jiwen’s expression quickly shifted.

Li Qiye placed the teacup in his hand back on the table and smiled: “You can view it as that since I want the calabash for sure.”

Teng Jiwen thought of something and immediately stumbling back a step while staring at Li Qiye in disbelief: “Sir, you wanted the calabash from the very beginning! Curing our ancestral vine was only an excuse. I, I have led a wolf into our home!” He breathed in hard at this point.

“You are right yet wrong at the same time.” Li Qiye looked at the frightened youth: “You can indeed become the leader of this city. Your talents are not the best, but you aren’t blinded by your noble upbringing. For someone with your background, it isn’t easy to be free of complacency and arrogance. Although many geniuses put on an air of humility, they are still very arrogant inside. This

makes you better than many people.”

“Sir, I suppose I should be honored by your praise.” At this time, the youth was clearly showing his hostility.

Li Qiye smiled: “I can understand your emotions right now. You’re right, I simply wanted the calabash from the beginning; it is very important in the process of life replenishment for the Peacock Tree. Very few things can replace it.”

The boy murmured: “I knew it...” He had his suspicions earlier, but now, Li Qiye had confirmed it with his own mouth.

“You can think of it as you having led a wolf into your home.” Li Qiye said: “But I don’t agree with that notion.”

Teng Jiwen coldly countered: “Sir, you have been scheming against us from the start, so how are you not a wolf?”

Li Qiye laughed in response: “Will your citadel not pay me after I cure your ancestral vine? Will you not hand the calabash over? Regardless of the process, I will get the calabash in the end, so is it a crime to be aiming for your calabash in the first place? If I didn’t want it, do you think I would be sitting here wasting my time?”

“That’s, that’s different.” He had maintained a strong front despite finding things difficult: “Sir, you are simply forcing us.”

Li Qiye casually replied: “I am, but what is more important, the

ancestral vine or the calabash? Without the vine, you will have nothing. Your citadel will be nothing.”

The boy’s face turned white. He didn’t know what to say at this moment. In the end, he stared at Li Qiye and asked: “So you are saying you are one hundred percent confident in curing our vine?”

Li Qiye lazily answered: “Do you think the Peacock Tree’s condition is more serious, or your ancestral vine’s? If I can renew that tree’s life, how can I not be capable of curing your ancestral vine?”

Smear, frame.

Okay, this phrase requires some explanation. In ancient China, poor people would not throw away broken bowls and other pieces of ceramic unless they were unrepairable. There were specific artisans skilled in repairing these ceramics. Their most important and essential tool is a drill-like contraption with a little diamond at the tip. Thus, this idiom is an old one meaning if you don’t have the ability, don’t try to do it.

Chapter 1180: Fairness

After internally deliberating his next question, Teng Jiwen asked Li Qiye: “If the citadel doesn’t hand the calabash over in two days, will you take it by force?”

“Correct.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Two days is all you have before you must hand it over.”

“You...” He didn’t know whether to be scared or angry. Li Qiye was being quite blunt with his intentions.

Li Qiye raised his teacup again and took an elegant sip: “There’s no need to be angry. Trust me, even though I am a fierce person that is unreasonable at times, I won’t take your calabash for free. I will cure your ancestral tree, a quid pro quo.”

Teng Jiwen had been finding it difficult to choose his words when talking to Li Qiye. It was just as the man said, even if he took the calabash by force, as long as he were to cure the ancestral vine the ultimate outcome would still be the same. The only thing different would be the process.

“But you should ready yourself.” Li Qiye drank another mouthful and smiled: “I am not a nice guy. I won’t show any mercy to those who try to stop me, and you are no exception.” A light flashed across his eyes as he uttered these words.

Teng Jiwen felt a cold chill after seeing the glint, as if something sharp had pricked his heart. At the same time, he felt death

looming over him. He took a deep breath and said: “The Heavenvine Citadel isn’t a place where people can come and go as they please. Not even a Godking could tread freely within our walls, let alone become our enemy.”

His statement was not a threat, he was simply telling the truth. The citadel was powerful enough to the point where no one could look down on it. Moreover, who would dare to do anything foolish while the ancestral vine was protecting it?

“You underestimate me too much.” Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: “You still don’t know who you are facing or the gravity behind your citadel’s choice. Do you think I am scared of the citadel after choosing to come here all by myself? Do you think I even place it in my sight?”

Such words left Teng Jiwen breathless. They were arrogant and aggressive to the point of being humiliatingly offensive.

Someone was blustering and viewing his citadel with such contempt. As its descendant, even though he was very well-mannered, a blazing fury still burned in his heart. Even a mud Buddha would become angry at times.

“Sir, your words are too outrageous. In the entire Heaven Spirit World, not too many people would dare to say them in front of me.” He took a deep breath and glared at Li Qiye while lowering his voice.

“Look me in the eye.” Li Qiye retorted: “Do you see the

Heavenvine Citadel in there?!”

Teng Jiwen shivered and subconsciously stared straight into Li Qiye’s eyes.

He immediately felt something with just a glimpse and took several thumping steps backward with a shocked expression.

What he saw was bloodthirst, a bloodthirst that blotted out the sun; one that would slay any god that attempted to block its path! This direct and naked bloodthirst couldn’t be faked.

A wanton will to murder was the most terrifying emotion. It was a force that instilled an instinctive fear in others, thus it was also the most authentic sensation.

Teng Jiwen was frightened by this murderous aura. At this second, he understood that Li Qiye truly wasn’t lying to him and that he would really kill anyone that stood in his way.

Regardless of where his confidence stemmed from, he knew that Li Qiye really didn’t care for the Heavenvine Citadel. He would truly start a massacre in this place.

“You...” He stared at Li Qiye with awe and anger. At this time, he was full of regret for bringing a wolf into his own home, an unlucky star to the citadel.

Li Qiye withdrew his gaze and blinked before setting the teacup

down again: “There’s no need to feel regret or anger, you did not bring an enemy to the citadel.”

The dazed youth asked: “What do you mean?”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Think about it, even if you didn’t bring me here, how would that stop me from wanting the calabash? I need it in order to heal the Peacock Tree, so whether you led me here or not doesn’t matter at all.”

Nevertheless, Teng Jiwen still felt guilty because it was him who took Li Qiye here.

Li Qiye began: “Instead of standing there hating me or feeling regretful, why not seize the opportunity?”

He looked at Li Qiye and asked: “What opportunity?”

“A chance to maintain the peace of your citadel.” Li Qiye lightly said: “Me telling you to bring me here was to give you and the citadel a chance for peace. Complete the trade willingly and there will be no need for killing, for blood to stain these walls. This is a transaction beneficial to both sides.”

“Take this chance and I won’t have to bother cutting people’s heads off one by one, and your citadel won’t have to lose too many people. Finally, everyone would happily end this deal with a smile on their faces.” Li Qiye glanced at the youth after saying this.

The boy blurted out: “But you are just forcing us! How is this a deal? Do we actually have a say in this matter—”

Li Qiye interrupted him with a wave of his sleeve: “What you are choosing between is the trade or the collapse of the ancestral vine and your citadel turning into ashes! To be frank, right now, your citadel only consists of a bunch of idiots...”

Having said that, his glare turned cold: “A group of greedy fools that only want everything without paying the price. Your ancestral vine’s calamity has lasted for how many years? Yet you all have failed to eradicate it. Were you willing to pay a fortune to look for an alchemist in the nine worlds? The answer is no, the effort has never been there. This so-called search for an alchemist was only a little sham...”

“... To be even harsher, the descendants of the Heavenvine Citadel are a bunch of parasites latching onto the vine itself! You’re all only worrying about your own desires instead of thinking about the ancestral vine. Meanwhile, those undying geezers struggling to live till now, are they actually thinking about trading away the calabash? No, they simply don’t want to die! In their eyes, their dog lives are more important than the calamity that is tormenting their ancestral vine!” He sneered with disdain.

“If you weren’t the treefather’s descendants, I’m sure it would have trampled all of you to death, a bunch of vermins and parasites!” He was particularly harsh this time.

This denunciation left Teng Jiwen’s complexion red and white. At this moment, he had even forgotten to refute.

“We, we still have plenty of time...” He replied weakly. In fact, he didn’t know if this was true or not. If Li Qiye was speaking the truth, then they didn’t have that much time left.

“Plenty of time?” Li Qiye laughed: “How many times do you think those geezers have repeated this phrase? Ever since the end of Immortal Emperor Bu Si, how many generations have passed?”

“Your ancestors only know how to spew this worthless drivel and have never proven it with any actions! Just a bunch of trash!” Li Qiye sneered in disdain and said: “Go repeat every single word I have said to them. Let them know that they are all talk, a bunch of useless parasites! So what if they are strong? Using the calabash to prolong their own lives without doing shit, there is nothing more useless than them!”

Teng Jiwen was quite stimulated by this blatant disdain. He wanted to retort, but no words came out of his gaping mouth. He felt completely powerless to refute Li Qiye.

“If I didn’t want the calabash to save the Peacock Tree, I wouldn’t bother coming here. Your ancestral vine’s fate has nothing to do with me. To be frank, if I didn’t have to save the Peacock Tree, even if your ancestors prostrated before me while handing over the calabash to save your ancestral vine, I wouldn’t care about your citadel’s bullshit!” Li Qiye coldly stared at the youth.

Teng Jiwen stood there for a moment, speechless. At this minute,

he felt his voice waning away. This was because Li Qiye's words had penetrated his innermost thoughts. He was right, the citadel had never cared for or tried to save the ancestral vine.

Chapter 1181: Teng Jiwen's Ability

Li Qiye's criticism deeply stabbed into Teng Jiwen's deepest fear. It was mercilessly striking at the scar of their Heavenvine Citadel.

"We are not trash, parasites, or vermin to the ancestral vine!" In the end, he could only utter this sentence.

Li Qiye dismissively glanced at him: "In my eyes, there is not much of a difference. What are you all if not that? Your old geezers are all talk. Prove it, then, by acting as real descendants for the ancestral vine to see."

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and bowed to say: "Sir, keep waiting. The citadel will give you an answer within two days!"

He turned and left, determination evident in his firm steps.

Li Qiye smiled and closed his eyes for a moment of repose without a care. In his mind, it didn't matter if the boy was going to ask for reinforcements or to persuade the ancestors. When the time was up, he would take away the calabash and do what must be done.

After Teng Jiwen left, the island became quiet; no disciples came to capture Li Qiye. It seemed like the youth didn't go tell the ancestors to capture him.

On the evening of the second day, Teng Jiwen came back in a

hurry with a gaunt demeanor, but his eyes were bright and full of vitality.

He took a deep breath and told Li Qiye: “Sir, our ancestors have agreed to the deal. As long as you can cure our ancestral vine, the calabash will be yours.”

Li Qiye looked at the boy and smirked before speaking: “It seems like I must reevaluate you. I’m sure it wasn’t easy to convince those geezers from your citadel. This requires great determination.”

“This is all to the credit of Master’s group.” Teng Jiwen sighed without any signs of complacency: “I have only done what any disciple of the citadel should do.”

“Very good, if the citadel comes under your leadership in the future, it will certainly be prosperous.” Li Qiye nodded.

The youth remained humble even after being praised. He bowed and asked: “Sir, may I ask when you will begin the treatment?”

“Right now.” Li Qiye flatly replied: “Time waits for no one. It is time to end the business here as I must go elsewhere.”

This startled the youth. He didn’t expect Li Qiye to start so soon. Keep in mind that many powerful alchemists had tried to cure this calamity to no avail.

Li Qiye told him: “Tell your ancestors to prepare. I will go to the forbidden area to cure your ancestral vine.”

The youth took a deep breath and went to carry out the command. Eventually, the citadel agreed for Li Qiye to begin anytime. It also opened the forbidden ground for him.

Many wise sages implemented an incomparable seal on the land near the ancestral vine. Without their permission, outsiders would have difficulty moving in this area, let alone launching an attack.

The citadel’s response and actions were quite swift this time. Who knew what Teng Jiwen did to lobby them? To be able to do so in just two short days was quite impressive for a junior like him.

Of course, Li Qiye wouldn’t care about such things. This was the citadel’s business, he only cared about curing the ancestral vine and taking the Heavenvine Calabash.

When everything was ready, Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord led Li Qiye to the forbidden ground.

In fact, the boy was only able to successfully persuade the ancestors because of his master’s support. Otherwise, a junior like him trying to convince those ancestors would have been much harder.

A couple moments later, they stood right outside of the forbidden ground. This was the most important location in the whole citadel.

It had the densest amount of worldly energy. Legend states that one could enter the inner world of the ancestral vine through this forbidden ground, but no one had entered since the death of the treefather's son.

Many disciples and ancestors were standing right outside of the forbidden ground at this moment. They were all important characters of the protector level and up. Some were supreme elders as well.

The treatment of the ancestral vine was of the highest importance to the citadel. Whether it was to be vigilant against Li Qiye or fear of accidents occurring during the process, in short, the citadel's powerful forces were here to cope with any unexpected circumstances!

Li Qiye only gave this crowd a quick glimpse. Regardless of their preparations, he didn't mind killing those who stood in his path.

"Hold it!" As Li Qiye was about to enter the forbidden ground, a shout rang out. Hao Yuzhen stood up.

This made Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord furrow their brows. They had reached a unanimous agreement regarding this deal. They didn't want any complications that might cause the deal to turn awry, thus they had a bad feeling as she stood up.

Li Qiye glanced at her and lazily asked: "What's the matter?"

She put on a business-like appearance as she coldly said: “You must hand over all of your belongings outside of the materials required for the healing process. Other items aren’t allowed inside the forbidden ground.”

Teng Jiwen raised his voice: “Junior sister, what are you doing?”

Hao Yuzhen was causing trouble on purpose. She didn’t know how he managed to convince the ancient ancestors in the sect, but at this moment, his position had soared and it was a great threat to her.

Therefore, she wanted to use this opportunity to stop Li Qiye. Stopping Li Qiye was the same as stopping Teng Jiwen!

“Ancestor, we reached an agreement about this matter, so what are these sudden complications?” The citadel lord was unhappy as well and looked over at Ancestor Hao.

Ancestor Hao slowly said: “The deal and agreement are still unchanged, but we must be cautious for the safety of the ancestral tree. Your alchemist is here for our treasure, who dares say that he won’t do anything shady in secret?”

The citadel lord glanced over at the other older ancestors here and asked: “Ancestors, what are your thoughts?”

“Alchemist Li can still bring items inside, but as a preventative measure, we must ask to check your items first.” An old ancestor

spoke with a deep tone.

They were still very wary of Li Qiye. After Hao Yuzhen's comment, they were indeed afraid of Li Qiye doing anything to the ancestral vine.

Despite being annoyed, the citadel lord and Teng Jiwen had no retorts. The reasoning was sound. Even though they weren't necessarily cautious of Li Qiye, they still didn't want to complicate the deal. Otherwise, all of their efforts would have been in vain.

“Did you hear that? Let us perform a full body search; every item of yours must be checked as well.” With the approval of the older ancestors, Hao Yuzhen was emboldened.

Li Qiye didn't bother looking at her. He glanced over at the old ancestors from the citadel and smiled faintly while shaking his head: “There are a few excellent members in this place, so I thought that there would have been changes. It seems that in the end, it is still just a bunch of inflexible old men. What a disappointment.”

The older ancestors were not happy to hear this disdainful comment. Meanwhile, the master and disciple pair turned bitter. This matter had taken a sudden turn for the worse.

“Naive fool, you dare to shame our citadel? [Take this!](#)” This was a rare opportunity, so Hao Yuzhen naturally wouldn't let it go. Her palm aimed for his face.

However, before this slap could reach Li Qiye, her hand was suddenly gripped by him. He stared directly at her face and smiled: “An idiot like you dares to scream in front of me? You don’t know life from death!”

“Crank! Crack!” He crushed her slender, [jade-white arm](#) before even finishing his sentence.

“Help!” She screamed for assistance. Her reaction was too slow, Li Qiye’s right hand was already clutching her milky pale neck.

He was way too fast. Even the ancestors here had a difficult time seeing him move. Before they knew it, he already had her raised into the air by the neck.

“Take this” in the raws was actually “Slap (his) mouth”. It’s fine in Chinese because people know that she is referring to slapping the face as a punishment for disrespect. It just sounds weird in English that she is announcing her own punishment while carrying it out herself. “Take this” makes more sense as a localization versus “Slap him” or “Take this slap”. Maybe “you deserved to be slapped” would make sense as well.

Raw here is jade-white arm like a spring onion. The root of a spring onion is white, so it is describing that color.

Chapter 1182: Kill Without Mercy

It only took a single blink for him to crush her wrist and then grab her neck; it was too late for anyone to even try and save her.

“No—” Both Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord were jolted with shocked expressions.

“Save, save me...” Her face turned red due to a lack of oxygen from being choked.

“Junior, what are you doing!” The Hao Ancestor was shocked. Very quickly, the disciples from the citadel completely surrounded Li Qiye.

Outside of a few ancestors from the Hao branch, many elders from the citadel itself were present as well.

Li Qiye maintained his grip and coldly glared at the group before nonchalantly declaring: “Still want to play? Try and stop me and I’ll crush your heads!”

“Wait, let us talk it out first.” The citadel lord was sweating. He quickly mediated: “Sir, we can slowly discuss this again. Just let go of my niece first.”

“Sir, we can still talk it out.” Teng Jiwen was quite scared as well and hurriedly told Li Qiye: “There’s no need to ruin the friendly atmosphere. It was only a misunderstanding.”

Li Qiye lazily declared: “There’s nothing to talk about. Either scram to the side and don’t bother me or I’ll cut all of your heads off!”

In just a moment, everyone’s expressions turned quite ugly. This was no longer about the internal competition. Li Qiye’s blatant contempt had humiliated and antagonized the entire citadel.

“There is nothing to discuss now.” The Hao Ancestor coldly said: “Let go of Yuzhen right now and surrender before you risk your own life!”

“With just you all?” Li Qiye dismissively responded: “Only a bunch of nobodies, not enough to even be an appetizer.”

The citadel lord was speechless. He couldn’t mediate anymore, so he said with a bitter expression: “My little ancestor, just let go of her and I can guarantee your safety.”

Teng Jiwen had no words to say. The deal was supposed to be smooth, but look at things now. Just one word of discord could cause blood to splatter every three steps!

At this time, all the experts and ancestors of the citadel were glaring at Li Qiye. He was completely provoking their city’s prestige and authority. If they didn’t teach this ignorant person a lesson, people would think that their city was easy to bully.

“Junior, you are being too arrogant. Let go of Yuzhen or we’ll end your dog life!” Even those who weren’t part of the Hao branch were shouting, unable to contain their anger.

If it wasn’t for her being a hostage, they would have pounced forward and cut him into countless pieces already.

“Li, listen! Even a Godking would die if they come to our citadel!” With so many ancestors backing her up, Hao Yuzhen became more courageous despite being in his clutches. She struggled to breathe before shouting: “Just let me go. Break your own arms and legs and end your cultivation, then we’ll spare your—”

“Crack!” It was a familiar scene. Before she could finish, he had crushed her neck. She didn’t even have the chance to scream since death came too quickly.

Everyone became dumbfounded. In the middle of the encirclement, he still dared to kill his only hostage. This was the same as cutting off his only path of retreat!

No sane person in this predicament would kill their only hostage. This truly stunned all the experts and even the Hao Ancestor.

“No...” Teng Jiwen was completely frightened. He spent painstaking efforts to convince the ancestors to agree to this deal. But now, everything had turned into smoke.

“Incomparably foolish, threatening to break my arms and legs as

well as my cultivation under this situation.” Li Qiye didn’t even bat an eye. He threw her body to the side like trash.

“Little animal, I’m going to grind your bones to dust!” The Hao Ancestor’s roar echoed to the clouds. He unleashed a palm capable of chopping tides and splitting the ocean.

“Bang!” Li Qiye remained undaunted. With a tyrannical pose, he unleashed a direct punch, a fist that could shatter the past. It was a quiet fist that didn’t create gales or display an overbearing momentum.

One could hear something fracturing. The Hao Ancestor’s arm shattered after receiving this fist. He had to take several steps back while spewing out blood.

This shocked everyone present, forcing them to take deep breaths to calm down. The Hao Ancestor was still a grand character at the citadel, but he wasn’t a match for Li Qiye.

The ancestors became cautious right away. They took out their weapons and began to circle him. The other experts instantly left the battlefield to give room to their ancestors.

This level of battle was not something the juniors could participate in. They would only get in the way.

The Heavenvine Citadel Lord was completely stupefied. He thought that the ordinary-looking Li Qiye was just an alchemist, he

didn't expect him to be heaven-defyingly powerful.

Teng Jiwen couldn't speak at all. This had escalated out of his control. It was up to the ancestors to decide now. He had wondered how powerful Li Qiye was, but this remained a mystery until now. He finally got a general concept of how strong the guy was.

“Zzz—” A buzz resounded as the shattered arm of the Hao Ancestor quickly recovered. However, he was in a frenzy. Being seriously injured by a junior was truly a disgrace in his eyes.

With a twisted expression, he took out his true weapon and coldly said: “Little animal, if our Heavenvine Citadel doesn't peel your skin, sever your tendons, and drink your blood, we won't need to stay in the Heaven Spirit World any longer!”

Another ancestor yelled at him: “Junior, it is not too late to surrender!”

Li Qiye sneered at the experts and said: “Surrender? In my eyes, all of you are mere insects. I can trample all of you to death with one stomp.”

“Naive fool, still blustering before death.” The Hao Ancestor shouted: “Brothers, what are we waiting for, let's chop this little animal to—”

“Xshhh!” Blood splattered everywhere. Before the ancestor could finish his words, a tree branch came out of nowhere and pierced

his skull. His eyes dilated from confusion about his sudden death.

The spectators were dumbfounded by this scene. To their surprise, a long vine was wrapped around Li Qiye's arm. This vine actually grew out from their ancestral vine's body.

The elders audibly gasped after seeing this sudden development. They turned pale and retreated while staring at Li Qiye in disbelief.

A vine growing from their ancestral tree actually killed the Hao Ancestor! How could such a thing happen?!

In their citadel, the ancestral vine was not only their progenitor, it was also their divine guardian that had been sheltering them for generations. But today, instead of killing the enemy, it killed an ancestor from their city.

If such a thing were to be spread, no one would believe it. This was already inconceivable, even when they witnessed it in person.

An ancestor murmured in astonishment: "Evil art, this is definitely an evil art..."

This was the only explanation they could come up with. Li Qiye used some strange and evil witchcraft to control the ancestral vine to kill the Hao Ancestor!

A frightened ancestor screamed: "He cultivates an evil art! We can't let him live any longer, kill him at all costs!"

“Kill!” The rest of the ancestors present all roared together and unleashed their weapons to slay Li Qiye.

They wouldn't mind paying any price to stop Li Qiye from leaving the citadel alive. Otherwise, he would certainly become a great menace in the future.

“A bunch of fools.” Li Qiye coldly glared at them and simply flipped his palm over, not bothering to give them another glance. A large leaf that was growing from the vine tree suddenly shot out.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The weapons attacking Li Qiye all shattered before this leaf.

With another loud blast, the flower swept through the ancestors like the end of autumn, sending them flying while spurting blood.

Chapter 1183: Sunflower Forefather

“Splashh—” A series of splashes came about. All of the blown away ancestors fell into the ocean.

This scene was too shocking. The experts here couldn't regain their composure.

Both Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord were slack-jawed from fear. This was simply a legendary tale!

In this split second, they suddenly thought about the possibility that their ancestral tree might be controlled by Li Qiye! However, that would be preposterous. Even their own ancestors couldn't control the vine, let alone an outsider.

If this was indeed the case, then the only plausible explanation was that Li Qiye did have a demonic art.

“Anyone else want to stand in my way?” Vine branches from the ancestral tree began to merge behind Li Qiye.

The experts here were aghast, to say the least. They had never seen such a demonic art before. It was beyond their imagination.

Eventually, the experts glanced at each other. They continued to slowly converge on Li Qiye to the point of not even letting a single drop of water through.

Naturally, they were quite afraid. Even their ancestors were blown to the horizon like flies, and they were not as strong as them.

However, letting Li Qiye go or retreating weren't options they could take. They deemed him too great of a threat to let him leave alive today.

Li Qiye smiled at these experts: "A bit idiotic, but still quite unyielding. Daring to come despite knowing the disparity..."

"Vine Controller!" A loud explosion came from a cave along with a voice. Although this voice was very quiet, everyone could hear it clearly.

An old man emerged from the forbidden ground. To be exact, it was a sunflower tree.

It was much taller than an adult. Moreover, the sunflowers on the tree were blossoming to great sizes.

There was an old man's face on the sunflower in the center. He came out of the forbidden ground without exuding any blood energy. However, he gave the feeling that a simple flip of his palm could cause the world to collapse.

"An ancestral form!" Teng Jiwen murmured after seeing the shape of this sunflower.

The ancestral form was a method of obtaining atavism for treants. Many within this race would cultivate a human form and become powerful existences.

However, this was not to say that a humanoid form was more powerful. In fact, it was precisely the opposite. A humanoid treant was not as powerful as an ancestral form treant because this atavistic form allowed them to control the strongest origin power.

However, despite the great benefits, there was a fatal weakness to the ancestral form. There was no way to pass down their bloodline if they were to keep this form, regardless of how powerful and heaven-defying they might be. Eventually, their legacy would end.

Only those with a flesh and blood body could reproduce and spread their bloodline to future descendants.

Because of this, the majority of the treants would cultivate into a human form. Very few were willing to maintain the ancestral form. After all, everyone wanted to pass down their legacy.

Being strong was meaningless if it meant that one would lose the ability to reproduce and pass down their legacy!

The citadel lord came back from his shock and murmured after seeing this sunflower: “Sunflower Forefather!”

An expert was ecstatic and muttered: “It is the forefather, our forefather has come into being!”

So it turned out that this large sunflower was the Sunflower Forefather. He was the most powerful and oldest ancestor of the citadel. His appearance was a rare sight. Even the citadel lord had only seen him once in his life, and this was at a very young age.

At this moment, this forefather couldn't believe it either. He stared intensely at Li Qiye and the vine branches behind him while feeling that this was a dream.

As the forefather came closer, the experts surrounding Li Qiye all made way.

In fact, they could finally breathe easy. No one would be able to oppose the forefather, not even Li Qiye's demonic art, even if it was stronger.

The forefather was not very confident as he asked Li Qiye: "You, can you really manipulate it? Are you a Vine Controller?"

He glanced at the sunflower and smirked: "Old man, try me and see. I'll be happy to display this majestic and invincible power."

Teng Jiwen panicked after hearing Li Qiye's response. For millions of years, no one had dared to be disrespectful towards the forefather.

The Sunflower Forefather's eyes began to flash like blossoming starlight.

In a split second, he whisked his arm and isolated space as if he wanted to banish Li Qiye.

“Bang!” But before the banishment could take effect, the nearby space shattered. With another bang, the forefather was pushed back into the huge vine tree.

Vine branches then came together to form a hand of god that coiled around the forefather’s neck. His entire body was propped up against the vine tree, instantly suppressing him.

“No way!” The citadel lord and everyone else were aghast. It was not an exaggeration to say that they nearly pissed their pants in terror!

Even their invincible Sunflower Forefather was suppressed, so how could they not pale from fear? All the experts felt despair, there was no one left to oppose Li Qiye outside of their ancestral vine.

In spite of this, they still mustered together to try and stop Li Qiye once more. They must face him despite knowing that they were not his match.

In just a moment, both Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord felt suffocated. In their minds, no one should be able to stop the forefather in present times, yet he was rendered motionless — this was too terrorizing.

The forefather being pushed against the vine tree raised both of his hands and quickly said: “Wait, I bear no malice, it was just a test.”

Li Qiye glanced at him, then the branches in the form of the godhand loosened to let him go. It turned back into vine branches that hovered behind Li Qiye.

“You really are a Vine Controller...” The shocked Sunflower Forefather couldn’t believe it despite having confirmed it.

He finally took a deep breath and asked while staring at Li Qiye: “Is your bloodline from our citadel?”

Li Qiye laughed in response: “Old man, you are overthinking things. My bloodline is the purest of the human lineage. I am not a descendant of your ancestral vine and definitely have nothing to do with your citadel.”

“How inconceivable.” The forefather carefully looked at Li Qiye and confirmed that he indeed didn’t have even a hint of the citadel’s bloodline. He continued: “Outside of the only biological son of the treefather, no one else has appeared in all these generations that can communicate with the treefather. No one aside from its son has been able to become a Vine Controller, yet an outsider like you can control the vines!”

Here, his eyes flashed with a revelation: “Could it be that the ancestral vine has chosen you to become the Vine Controller of our

citadel...”

“Your imagination is too much.” With a grin, Li Qiye waved his sleeve to interrupt the forefather: “I am not your divine guardian or a Vine Controller, I’m only someone who is teaching a lesson to this group of foolish descendants in the vine’s stead.”

Li Qiye naturally wasn’t a so-called Vine Controller. He used the Myriad Age Tree to communicate with the ancestral vine. Although the vine itself had no sentience, its instinct was still there and allowed Li Qiye to use its power.

The forefather said with excitement: “Regardless, you can still control everything here, so you are a Vine Controller. Only those with the permission of the ancestral vine would be able to use its power.”

“You are speaking too much nonsense, but one thing is indeed true.” Li Qiye smiled: “I can indeed control the power of the ancestral vine!”

Chapter 1184: Vine Controller

Despite Li Qiye's denial of being a Vine Controller, the Sunflower Forefather was still very excited: "After so many years, we have finally waited long enough for a Vine Controller to appear. We shall be able to rise in this generation..."

"Old man, you are overthinking things." Li Qiye interrupted the forefather again and spoke in a lackadaisical manner: "This Vine Controller thing or the citadel rising... I don't have any interest in this. I am only here to make a deal."

Despite Li Qiye's lack of interest, the forefather pressed on with some wishful thinking. He shouted at the experts and said: "What are you waiting for?! Come and greet his venerable Vine Controller. His will is the will of the ancestral vine!"

In the mind of the forefather, this was a one and only chance of this generation. This was a Vine Controller! If he could keep the guy here, his ability would be absolutely priceless for their citadel.

The experts here felt quite confused, but after carefully thinking things through, it made a little sense. Even though Li Qiye was an outsider, he has clearly been accepted by the ancestral vine. Now, even the forefather has recognized Li Qiye's identity. This meant that Li Qiye had won the will of the ancestral vine.

The experts came forward to bow towards Li Qiye. This sudden reversal was like a dream. A few moments ago, they were trapped in a fight to the death against Li Qiye, but now he had become the

representative of the ancestral vine.

“Go back and do some personal reflection. There are things that can be done and things that shouldn’t be done.” In the end, the forefather yelled at the experts from the citadel before chasing them away.

Eventually, the only juniors left were the citadel lord and Teng Jiwen.

“Vine Controller, since you are already here, please stay at our citadel. There are many juniors that require your guidance...” The Sunflower Forefather smiled brightly.

Li Qiye was not interested in being this so-called vine controller. He halted the forefather again: “I won’t bother with this kind of laborious undertaking. My time is limited, I am only responsible for curing the ancestral vine. After taking the calabash away, I will have nothing to do with this place.”

“Er—” The forefather couldn’t find an excuse to reject his refusal. He could only smile wryly: “That’s fine, that’s fine, we’ll focus on the ancestral vine then.”

He was someone who understood the logic that [an impatient person shouldn’t be eating hot tofu](#). It would be troublesome to push Li Qiye too much.

He led Li Qiye into the forbidden ground. Meanwhile, the master-

disciple duo finally regained their composure and quickly followed. Even in their wildest dreams, neither of them could have expected the change of tides.

After Li Qiye killed Hao Yuzhen, they knew that the deal was over and that ultimately, they might not escape unscathed. Even if their citadel was strong enough to catch Li Qiye, the two of them would still be responsible for this disaster.

But in the end, Li Qiye was in complete control of the situation. At this time, Teng Jiwen finally understood why Li Qiye was so confident about forcing this transaction. He now realized Li Qiye's ace and where his confidence stemmed from.

The group saw a majestic landscape with peaks towering all the way to the sky dome. Vine leaves were whirling high above. This place truly gave the sensation of being a kingdom of elves.

These protrusions with lush trees and flowing rivers as well as the gigantic vine towering to the sky would make the unaware believe that they were lost in an untouched eden.

The worldly energy was plentiful. Of course, there was also the force of life coming from the ancestral vine. This was the most important location in the Heavenvine Citadel, hence its exuberance.

This was definitely a holy land for cultivation, but not just anyone was eligible to train in this place.

Eventually, the forefather brought Li Qiye to the highest peak of this area. A vine was drooping down from the sky. It was quite thick and resembled jade pillars. It emitted a faint luster as if it was the green vein of the heavens.

This sight would make people recall a certain legend. When a cultivator dies and becomes an immortal, their body would also turn into jade. This vine branch was awfully similar to this legend, so it made people envision the scene of the Heavenvine Treefather meeting his end and turning into this tree.

“A treefather’s atavistic end to return to the earth, it is quite an incredible sight.” Li Qiye looked at this vine and said: “During that great moment, heaven and earth would shift with wondrous images as the treefather ascends into a jade form.”

Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord were surprised because they hadn’t heard of this description before.

The forefather praised: “My lord, you have such great knowledge, worthy of admiration and awe. When the treefather returned to the earth, those images were indeed present.”

Li Qiye gave the forefather a dismissive glance: “Don’t rush to praise me, I’m about to be frank. After the treefather returned to the earth, there should have been two of these jade pillars, but now there is only one left and even it is about to disappear. Everything has been ruined by the hands of his unfilial descendants.”

The forefather coughed awkwardly after hearing this while the

duo kept quiet without daring to say a word. In the citadel, who would dare to talk this way to their forefather? But right now, he was being scolded by Li Qiye like a junior. There was no way they could add their own comments in this circumstance.

“From the two jade pillars back then, one bore fruit to the Heavenvine Calabash. Later on, when Immortal Emperor Bu Si collapsed, my senior brother wanted to go all out and tried to steal from the heavens so that another fruit could come to be...” The Sunflower Forefather lamented at this point with a soft sigh.

Back then, not only did they fail in their attempt, they also suffered grievous losses.

“Not everything will go according to plans in this world. One can only say that you old geezers were too greedy for wanting another calabash. Were you all trying to squeeze your ancestral vine dry?” Li Qiye sneered.

The forefather rubbed his palms while showing an awkward smile: “Because of that, my senior brothers also wanted to pour the essences of the Heaven’s Will into the ancestral ground to revitalize the ancestor...”

“You all were too bold, greedy, and insane.” Li Qiye snorted: “A treefather from the Treant Race returning to the earth and taking root to live on is already an act against the heavens, but you all even tried to steal its essences? What was this if not courting death?”

The forefather helplessly replied: “No one knew that such a thing would happen back then. It was already too late once we realized it. The other jade pillar was destroyed while the heavens unleashed its scourge upon us.”

Li Qiye coldly said: “Greed is one thing, but to not understand your own limits to this point... Of course the heavens would send down its punishment. If you all had an Immortal Emperor overseeing things, then it might have been a successful struggle. However, relying on you old bones alone? Heh, it was already very fortunate that the villainous heavens didn’t render your citadel to ashes.”

The forefather sighed again. Several of his senior brothers died miserably during this disaster, not to mention the calamity left behind on their ancestral vine.

Meanwhile, the duo quietly listened. Even though the citadel lord knew a lot, this was the first time he had heard about the details of the past.

While looking at the jade pillar that resembled a tendon of the heavens, Li Qiye ordered the lord: “Go up there and break it!”

“Break it?” The lord felt his legs suddenly become weak and thought that he had misheard. This jade pillar was extremely significant to their citadel. Smashing it was tantamount to smashing their own treasure.

“Break it?” Even the forefather turned silly. He stared at Li Qiye

in disbelief and said: “This is the only one left, if you break it now —”

Li Qiye dismissively countered: “Break it and you will understand.”

The citadel lord glanced over at the forefather. He didn’t dare to do such a thing.

The forefather took a deep breath and commanded: “Break it. If his lordship orders it, it must be correct.”

The citadel lord took a deep breath then flew into the sky with a huge hammer in his hands. Both of his hands were trembling at this moment. With one smash, he would personally be destroying the most precious treasure in the Heavenvine Citadel. Perhaps he would even become a sinner of his sect.

Okay, the explanation for this is that when you cook tofu, an outer layer is formed, trapping the heat inside so it won’t look hot. Someone impatient would start eating right away and burn their tongue.

Chapter 1185: The Missing Calamity

Eventually, he took a deep breath while tightening his grip on the huge hammer. He clenched his teeth and made up his mind before ruthlessly slamming it down.

“Clink!” With a pleasing sound, the jade pillar shattered in one hit as if it was made out of glass. Countless fragments fell down from the sky like dust.

The citadel lord and the Sunflower Forefather both shouted: “Impossible!” They were both aghast and lost in disbelief.

The citadel lord looked in bewilderment at his hammer since he didn’t expect to destroy the jade pillar in just one smash. He wondered if his hammer had always been this strong.

“What... this can’t be. The seal is still here with the surviving jade pillar, but why is it completely undamaged?” The Sunflower Forefather was overwhelmed with shock.

As for Teng Jiwen, he stood there looking silly because he didn’t know what was happening. He had never been here before, so he had no clue about this seal or the calamity.

“Where is the calamity? It isn’t here!” The forefather swept through the entire citadel with his divine intent, but there was no trace of it.

“Oh no, damn it!” In the end, even someone in a high position like the forefather cursed vulgarly. He thought of one possibility!

“Fuck, don’t tell me, the calamity has secretly invaded the ancestral vine!” His soul left his body when he came up with this conjecture and he felt his knees giving in.

“The ancestral vine has been invaded—” The citadel lord had the same reaction after hearing his forefather. The hammer in his hands fell straight to the ground.

“That’s... impossible...” The lord was dumbfounded. Until now, all the ancestors and even the Sunflower Forefather were confident in sealing the calamity within the seal. It was just that they had no way of destroying it.

Because of this, they had always been confident. The sealed calamity couldn’t cause any damage. It was only a bit problematic that they couldn’t destroy it. The seal gave them confidence and the illusion of having ample time to find the right alchemist to get rid of it once and for all.

“It is gone...” The distressed forefather dropped to the ground. At this moment, he knew where it had gone and what they would have to face.

He was scared out of his wits just imagining it. No one would be able to reverse this disaster. The citadel lord thought of the vine’s imminent demise as well. He was dazed while his legs trembled.

“Is it that serious?” Teng Jiwen didn’t know the implications of the calamity escaping the seal, so he had to ask after seeing his seniors act this way.

“Very serious.” The forefather calmed down and stood up to take a deep breath: “A disaster is looming over our heads. Within just two generations, our citadel might turn into ashes!”

“In just two generations?!” Teng Jiwen was shocked. This timeline felt far too short when a real disaster was approaching.

The forefather glanced over the broken jade fragments that contained nothing. He was still as amazed as before: “How could this have happened? The seal is untouched so our citadel was not notified. How could it have escaped?”

“You have to understand what this is.” Li Qiye flatly said: “All of you wanted to steal from the villainous heavens, do you think the punishment it sent down would be this easy to seal? If the bastard was so easily dealt with, it would no longer be the villainous heavens. If it was so easy to oppose him, there would be more than just one Immortal Emperor in each generation.”

Teng Jiwen looked over towards Li Qiye: “Sir, can you cure it?” At this moment, Li Qiye was the only hope for their citadel.

The Sunflower Forefather smiled wryly and said: “It is not a matter of just treating it anymore. The calamity has fled into the ancestral vine’s body and could even have taken root deep inside. We have to go there and remove it at the source, but that might

mean uprooting the entire vine.”

Teng Jiwen’s heart fluttered after hearing this. He didn’t expect the problem to be so serious. Prior to this, Li Qiye had said that their ancestral vine didn’t have much longer to live. He was skeptical back then and felt that it was only a threat. Who would have thought that it was the truth?

“The real issue is that we can’t enter, no one has been able to do so for many generations.” The citadel lord was almost paralyzed on the ground. This news was completely devastating to the citadel; it caught them off guard like thunder in a clear sky.

“No, one person was able to enter.” The forefather explained: “The Supreme Forefather was able to do so. He was the only child of the progenitor; not only was he a Vine Controller, he also inherited the bloodline.”

Teng Jiwen had to ask Li Qiye: “Sir, you are also a Vine Controller, can you go inside?”

Li Qiye looked at them and smiled: “Right now, I feel like the Heavenvine Calabash alone is too low of a price.”

The forefather immediately looked at Li Qiye: “My lord, what do you want? Just say the word and our citadel will make it happen!”

He felt that Li Qiye could actually succeed in curing the vine at this time.

The citadel lord added: “Yes, please. Anything will be fine.”

If this was before, they wouldn't be so anxious since they thought that time was on their side. But now, with the new findings on the calamity, they finally understood how insignificant they were. Each and every disciple of the citadel was willing to protect the ancestral vine regardless of the price.

Li Qiye glanced at the forefather and slightly narrowed his eyes: “If I wanted other things from your citadel, would I need to wait until now? I already reached an agreement with your ancestral vine, just the calabash will be enough.”

The rest of the group became quite emotional after hearing this. Keep in mind that regardless of what Li Qiye wanted, the citadel would have to give it to him. However, he only wanted the calabash in the end.

“My lord, the citadel will forever remember your kindness. If you ever need us in the future, just send the command. Our citadel will answer your call and run through fire without question!” The forefather kneeled to the ground and made a solemn promise.

The citadel lord and Teng Jiwen prostrated as well. In their minds, they would owe a debt to Li Qiye, one that was higher than the sky and deeper than the sea.

“Let's go.” Li Qiye looked at them before turning and walking away. The forefather calmed down and immediately followed

behind him.

The group eventually came before a mountain. Li Qiye slowly pressed his hand against its rocky wall. With a buzz, vine branches drilled out from the muddy ground.

The snake-like vine branches instantly wandered all around the cliff. In a short period of time, they wove into a door on its surface.

The Sunflower Forefather murmured after seeing this: “The portal into the inner world of the ancestral vine is right here...”

For millions of years, only the son of the ancestral vine was able to enter this inner world. Li Qiye stepped inside with the rest of the group hurrying after him.

The scene inside was an eye-opener even for the forefather since this was his very first visit.

The master and disciple duo were amazed as well after seeing the branches that resembled dragons. This truly made them understand how invincible their treefather was.

Teng Jiwen eventually asked after calming down: “Can cultivators reside in this world?”

Li Qiye smiled: “Why should its descendants be allowed to stay in this place? So that they can extract the immense vitality within as well? To suck out all of the essences from the depths of the earth?

The reason why an ancestral tree can live for so long is due to the life force and essences of this world circulating around their roots without rest. The loss in this process is very minimal. Otherwise, the trees wouldn't last more than two generations.”

He felt that Li Qiye's answer was very reasonable. If future generations were allowed into this world, they would refine these energies into their own. After a while, they would squeeze their ancestral tree dry. He understood why they weren't allowed inside either. This was another defensive measure.

Chapter 1186: Calamity

Within the vine was a vast world of gigantic and circling roots. Some soared to the sky to reach close to the clouds...

Waterfalls descended from above with mud piles as high as mountains. Some green roots intricately twisted together to resemble gigantic monsters.

Dazzling glimmers shone from all over the sky, as if many stars were hanging up there.

If there was a difference between the inner worlds of the Peacock Tree and the Heavenvine Tree, it would be that the roots here were much more powerful and full of life. The stars above were brighter as well.

Teng Jiwen noticed the starlight above and asked: “Are those stars?”

The Sunflower Forefather and the citadel lord lifted their heads as well since they didn’t know the answer.

“Those are Age Stars.” Li Qiye glanced at them and explained: “The dimming of these Age Stars signifies the time of withering. It is just like the life rings of a tree — they signify how long the tree has left to live.”

Teng Jiwen continued to observe the sky. There were too many

stars to the point of them being innumerable. However, it was not difficult to find that some of them were significantly darker than their peers.

Teng Jiwen heaved a sigh of relief after seeing the countless stars. The forefather and citadel lord felt the same way. The plentiful stars meant that their ancestral vine still had a long lifespan left, so long as Li Qiye takes care of the calamity.

After a long search, he finally found the main root. It was huge and thick. Standing before it was the same as standing in front of a cliff.

He stood at a particular position to peer over everything before speaking: “Right here.”

The rest of the group looked over to find a little hole. Inside was a blade of grass only around three inches tall. There was nothing about it that warranted any attention. It was light green in color with a shade of white due to the lack of sunlight.

However, upon a closer inspection, this was not a small blade of grass but tiny particles invisible to the naked eye. These little green particles connected together to form a green electrical arc that looked just like a small grass.

“Why is it like this?” The forefather’s expression changed after seeing this, forcing him to take a deep breath.

“This is our ancestral vine’s calamity?” Both Teng Jiwen and the citadel lord were surprised as well.

In their minds, their ancestors had been helpless for generations because of it, so it should at least be a frightening and dangerous existence. They imagined that this calamity would have the body of a devil with a demonic smile. Each strand of its aura could burn everything in this world.

Who would have thought that this little blade of grass was actually the calamity agonizing their ancestral vine?

“We can pull out something like this with one hand.” Teng Jiwen blurted, but he immediately realized that he was wrong. If that was possible, why didn’t the ancestors do it before instead of waiting for generations? Were these invincible ancestors weaker than a junior?

“Then you can try to pull it out.” Li Qiye smiled.

The citadel lord realized that his disciple had chosen the wrong words. Not only did they offend Li Qiye, they also insulted all the generational ancestors, including the forefather before them.

He busily tried to smooth things out: “Sir, well, my little disciple is ignorant without any sense of propriety. He doesn’t see how dangerous—”

Li Qiye gently waved his hand to interrupt him: “It’s nothing,

I'm not mad at him. He can go ahead and try it once to understand the situation."

With that, Teng Jiwen glanced over at his master. The lord, at this moment, was helpless and couldn't do anything but nod. In fact, he also wanted to see what kind of ability this little blade of grass had.

Teng Jiwen took a deep breath and reached for the grass to pull it out. However, before even touching it, his hands started to tremble; he no longer dared to do so.

The reason was very simple: this was their ancestral vine's calamity. Just how frightening and dangerous was this thing? If he touched it, wouldn't it be the same as throwing his life away?

"Relax, pull it." Li Qiye naturally could tell what he was thinking and smiled: "I'm right here, I won't let you die."

With this guarantee, Teng Jiwen calmed down and finally made up his mind. After gritting his teeth, he reached for the grass once more.

"Bzzz—" However, the moment his hand touched the grass, a series of lightning crackles came about. The grass dispersed into countless particles that disappeared into the main root.

The whole process gave a sense of something proliferating into the main root with extreme speed. No one could react in time, let

alone catch those tiny particles.

“What is going on?” The masters and disciples were lost.

At this time, all the roots, regardless of their size in this world, had little lights flashing and crackling inside them.

Because of the many roots here that were tightly clinging together or completely woven as one, a lightning arc emerged when all of them flashed together. It came as quick as a bolt of lightning before instantly disappearing.

Even though the individual lights were not bright, all of them appearing together was another story. This world completely lit up with each crackle.

It was a shocking process like a sun exploding; it was quite difficult to keep their eyes open in the midst of this light. Who could imagine that this was a scene created by these tiny flashes?

Darkness ensued soon afterward. This sudden change was quite difficult to get accustomed to.

Teng Jiwen eventually calmed down and asked in horror: “What is this?”

“The calamity.” The forefather took a deep breath and replied: “It has invaded every root of the ancestral vine. Once it gathers enough power, it will squeeze the ancestral vine dry until there is

nothing left.”

Teng Jiwen shuddered. Every single root that made up the foundation of their citadel was infected.

Li Qiye dismissively commented: “It is because you all dragged it out for too long. The countless years gave it this chance.”

The others could only sigh. They never thought that it would escalate to this level.

The citadel lord couldn’t help but ask: “The ancestral vine is invincible, why can’t it crush this calamity?”

Li Qiye chuckled and pointed at the sky to say: “Do you know what kind of existence is suppressing your ancestor? It is that thief, the high heavens! Returning and taking root in this earth is already going against him. If your ancestor rebels again, it would bring about a supreme repression that would instantly render the tree into ashes unless there was someone as strong as an Immortal Emperor helping to stop this heavenly punishment. Otherwise, the relentless onslaught from both inside and out isn’t something it can withstand!”

“Rather than immediately turning into ashes, it is better to live a borrowed life and wait for you juniors to expel the calamity.” He looked at the Sunflower Forefather after saying this.

The forefather’s old face turned red as he coughed. This situation

was the fault of ancestors like him. He had to admit: “It is all due to our incompetence. We couldn’t help our ancestral vine and thought that the calamity had been successfully sealed.”

“Bzzz—” A tiny crackle resounded from Teng Jiwen’s body. Faint lights emerged from his body in the form of bright particles. He was suddenly wrapped in this layer of lightning.

“What’s happening?” He was scared out of his wits after seeing this. He tried to pat the particles away from his body, but before he could touch them, the particles immediately dispersed and entered his body.

Chapter 1187: Treatment

“Crackle!” The particles resurfaced just a moment later. Moreover, their numbers had greatly increased, as if more had just been produced.

The aghast youth screamed: “Master, save me!”

“Sir, please save my little disciple.” The citadel lord didn’t expect this to happen at all. His soul left his body from fear as he quickly asked Li Qiye for help.

“Don’t move about!” The Sunflower Forefather shouted: “This is an infection. The more you try to resist, the stronger it will become. You are not the ancestral vine, so it can refine you right away!”

After hearing this, Teng Jiwen couldn’t stand straight anymore from fear. He asked Li Qiye to help as well: “Sir, please save me!”

After seeing the boy’s appearance, Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: “You are exaggerating things. With me here, there’s no need to be so alarmed. It is not like I will stand by and watch you die.”

Teng Jiwen heaved a sigh of relief after hearing this. With Li Qiye’s assurance, it seemed that his life would be saved.

“Not bad.” Li Qiye glanced at the particles on his body: “Not only is it untouchable as it will disperse right away, it can also spread

with extreme speed. Unfortunately, it has met me.”

With a smirk, he took out the Myriad Heavenly Cauldron and easily extracted a bunch of fiery strands.

Li Qiye looked at Teng Jiwen and said: “Don’t move or resist, just let it be.”

He nodded after taking a deep breath: “I’ll keep that in mind—”

Before he could finish, Li Qiye had already begun inserting strands of fire into his body one after another. All of a sudden, he was like a ragdoll with numerous strands of fire going in and out of his body.

As these tiny fire strings drilled into his body, he didn’t feel hot at all. On the contrary, he felt cold lines running through his blood vessels. This chill seemed to be able to freeze his blood.

One would find this difficult to believe, especially if they weren’t personally experiencing it. The scorching fire from Li Qiye’s cauldron was actually cool.

After a while, he had the illusion that blood was no longer running through his body, that a cold fire had replaced it.

At this time, Li Qiye began to recall the strands of fire. In the beginning, Teng Jiwen didn’t feel anything, but shortly afterward, he felt as if very tiny particles were being pulled out along with

these strands. These particles latched onto the strands and left his body.

More and more light particles attached themselves to Li Qiye's fire, as if it was a magnet that was absorbing all of them from the youth's body.

Teng Jiwen eventually felt his body becoming lighter. There was an indescribable sense of ease. He knew then that all of the particles had been dragged out by Li Qiye.

“Boom!” In a split second, the flame in the cauldron surged and turned vicious. It refined all of the particles taken out of Teng Jiwen's body.

Although these particles wanted to attack, the cauldron was simply too ferocious. Under Li Qiye's control, there was no chance for a reversal; they were incinerated right away.

“Thank you for saving my life, Sir.” Teng Jiwen was relieved and prostrated on the ground.

The citadel lord did the same and gratefully said: “Sir, your skill is unrivaled in this world.”

The forefather witnessed Li Qiye's supreme alchemy and became relieved as well. Their citadel has finally met their savior. The ancestral vine can finally be saved...

In the next couple of days, the disciples of the citadel could feel a change in the atmosphere. The whole place became quite tense. Several days later, their ancestral vine suddenly trembled, as did the citadel. Some palaces and mountains even collapsed...

In this short period of time, all of the disciples became restless and felt that a disaster that could descend at any time was looming over their heads.

In particular, the ancestors knew the gravity of the situation. The entire citadel entered the highest state of alert and was ready to help at any time in case something happens.

These anxiety-filled days eventually came to an end. Although the disciples didn't know what was going on, they could sense that the clouds had melted along with the dispersing mists. Some even felt that their ancestral vine's branches were stretching as if the disaster had passed.

The ancestors finally found solace. The citadel was saved.

In these few days, Li Qiye was brought outside by the forefather's group. He was very tired from extinguishing the calamity at this moment.

He was treated as the most esteemed guest. Even the forefather himself personally stood guard for him, not letting anyone come close to disturb his rest.

Li Qiye took out all types of immortal medicines. He had spent a lot of blood energy to destroy the calamity, but his recovery was quite swift.

After he recovered, the forefather came to see him. He bowed the moment he saw Li Qiye and said: “Your kindness cannot be described by words. Just give us a command in the future if you ever require our service.”

Li Qiye gently nodded and waved his sleeve: “Rise, a deal is a deal. Since I have promised you, I will naturally carry out my end of the bargain.”

Nevertheless, the forefather still felt very grateful. He respectfully held the Heavenvine Calabash and spoke: “This is the calabash that you wanted, please take a look.”

Li Qiye glanced at it and put it away. This brought him one step closer to replenishing the Peacock Tree’s lifespan.

The forefather hurriedly asked: “May I ask if you would be willing to spend more time at our citadel so that we can do our best as your host?”

Li Qiye looked at him and quipped: “Don’t tell me you want me to become your citadel’s disciple?”

“No, I wouldn’t dare!” The forefather quickly waved his palms back and forth: “Ah, Sir, you are the true dragon above the nine

heavens. The Heavenvine Citadel is too tiny and cannot accommodate you. If you are willing to take the title of being our Vine Controller, it would be our honor.”

The forefather was certainly eager for Li Qiye to stay. If this was possible, then their citadel could rise once again.

Li Qiye only smiled and shook his head: “I am only a passerby for your citadel and the Heaven Spirit World. This horizon is not my home, I am only here for some sightseeing.”

The forefather sighed and replied: “Sir, you are a peerless master. I suppose the citadel doesn’t have this fortune.”

He understood that an opportunity like this couldn’t be forced. It was not meant to be for their citadel.

Li Qiye flatly stated: “Teng Jiwen from your citadel is not bad, so I will have him follow me for a bit...”

“... I won’t teach him other things, but with regards to your ancestral vine, I will teach him a few secrets. I have gained some insights after communicating with your ancestral vine, so I’ll be passing that back to your citadel.”

After reaching an agreement with the ancestral vine, Li Qiye had a deeper understanding of its origin.

“This is his fortune.” The forefather was ecstatic and quickly

cupped his fists before immediately calling someone to bring Teng Jiwen over.

In just a moment, both Teng Jiwen and his master came. After hearing this, Teng Jiwen was elated. His master was quite happy for him as well.

Today, Teng Jiwen becoming the next successor was set in stone. If he could learn more from the ancestral vine, he would definitely be able to shine in the future.

“Thank you for your guidance.” The citadel lord calmed down and quickly dragged Teng Jiwen, who was still standing there silly, to the ground to express his gratitude.

“Rise.” Li Qiye said: “After communicating with your ancestral vine, I only focused on a few matters that I found interesting. As for your vine’s knowledge, it is of no use to me, so I will return it to your citadel. This is a type of fate, a natural part of life.”

In spite of this, the citadel lord was still very happy for his disciple. This would definitely be a way to help him communicate with the ancestral vine.

“Okay, go back and prepare.” Li Qiye gently waved his hand: “You are to meet me at Shallow Beach. I will go on ahead.”

Teng Jiwen respectfully bowed and immediately went to prepare.

Li Qiye had other business. He had obtained the calabash, so he didn't want to stay at the Heavenvine Citadel for too long. He departed on this very day.

At this time, outside of the Sunflower Forefather himself, all of the high ranking ancestors also went to see him off.

The forefather really wanted Li Qiye to stay for several more days so that they could treat him even better, but he didn't dare to hold Li Qiye back as he insisted on leaving.

"Take care of yourselves." Li Qiye looked at the forefather before casually pointing with his finger. A portal emerged. He stepped inside and instantly crossed through space.

Chapter 1188: Shallow Beach

Shallow Beach was surrounded with blue skies and white clouds as well as a green sea laden with underwater shoals. Occasionally, some peaks would be exposed on the surface of the water. One side was a cliff while the other was a beach with white sand wetted by the undulating waves.

There were also seabirds flying in the air while fishes leaped out of the water. It was a peaceful and beautiful scene.

The truth was that the beach was not actually quiet. This was only on the surface of the sea. The undersea was where it was lively.

Mountains ran next to chasms while seaweed swayed to the current among the forests of coral. Some sea trees towered from down below as well...

The name “Shallow Beach” didn’t mean that it was a shallow sea. It was because this place was close to the surface, hence the name.

Pavilions and palaces were built below the beach, coming together to form an underwater city. Streets and bridges led to all the corners of the city. It was very prosperous and busy, a beautiful world under the sea.

The structures were immersed in water. Some expelled water and formed their own space just like the mainland.

People came and went to Shallow Beach. Some rode seahorses straight through the water without being stained at all while others rode their silent shuttles with great speed. Those who were part of the sea rode gigantic whales and glided through the water without losing their elegance.

Among the crowd were elegant charming spirits, treants with oppressive wood affinities, and many bizarre sea demons.

Some walked through the city completely unstained by the water so they looked quite graceful. Some avoided the sea and chose passages with invisible walls that pushed the water out. Others were completely soaked by the water and some sea demons maintained their demonic form to move even quicker.

This beach was a property of the Void Imperfection Three Schools. To be more exact, it was part of the Void Imperfection School. Because of this, the city was very peaceful; sea demons and treants wouldn't dare to cause trouble here.

The Void Imperfection Three Schools weren't only famous in the Jade Sea, they were even renowned across the entire Heaven Spirit World. They were monsters that could cause a huge flood with one stomp.

The Void Imperfection School was created by Immortal Emperor Wu Gou. In future generations, it was divided into three different schools: the Void Imperfection School, the Evil Devourer School, and the Sacred Spring School.

Even though it was divided into three separate schools, it was still a singular heritage. More often than not, they still communicated with outsiders as one sect.

This was the lineage with the greatest amount of Immortal Physiques. Someone once said that in terms of having the most Immortal Physiques, there was no sect but the Void Imperfection Three Schools, even when taking into account all of the nine worlds. The progenitor of the school was Immortal Emperor Wu Gou. Not only was he an emperor, he had also cultivated the Void Imperfection Physique to grand completion! Later on, they had another two grand completion Immortal Physiques. These two didn't cultivate the Void Imperfection Physique but the Heaven Devourer Evil Physique and the Sacred Spring Physique respectively.

In other words, the school once had three different people with different grand completion Immortal Physiques. This was a great achievement in all of the nine worlds, hence their reputation.

Shallow Beach belonged to the Void Imperfection School. Because of this, people built this great undersea city without seeing trouble or opposition.

In an inn down below, Li Qiye sat near a window to watch the street while drinking his wine.

This inn was quite interesting. It was built next to a mountain, and above it was a whirlpool that was used to brew the very

famous wine they served.

He continued to drink while watching fishes swim right beside him. Occasionally, one or two naughty crabs would climb on his table and, to his amusement, raise their claws to intimidate him.

He was untouched by a single drop of water. It was no different than sitting in an inn on land.

After finishing another cup, he shouted: “Boss, another cup!”

“Coming!” The boss of this place answered right away. He was a sea demon with a muscular build. Perhaps his ancestor used to be a whale demon because there were still two clumps of flesh that resembled a beard on his chin — this was the most recognizable characteristic.

A tiny whirlpool split from the larger one at the top of the inn and streamed down into Li Qiye’s cup after the boss’ affirmation, instantly filling it to the brim.

Li Qiye smiled and continued to drink. Such an amazing scene could only happen at the Heaven Spirit World.

As a human, he was the most conspicuous in this inn. After all, humans were quite rare outside of Peacock Land and the Exquisite Valley. It wasn’t easy to spot them in other locations.

Of course, no one came to cause trouble either. The customers

were only curious about a human, so they looked at him a few more times out of curiosity.

While Li Qiye was drinking, a luxurious boat docked outside of the inn. The entire hull was outlined with gold and decorated with an emblem reserved for royalty. It was both extravagant and imposing.

Such a big ship swimming in the sea seemed to become one with the ocean. However, it was also completely unstained by the water, which made it very obvious to others that it was an incredible treasure.

Someone noticed the royal emblem hanging on the ship and asked in astonishment: “A ship from the Profound Sea Dynasty, why is it here?”

Shortly afterward, a maiden walked down from the lavish boat. She was charmingly beautiful like an oriole. Her long dress dragging on the ground revealed a very noble aura.

There were several followers behind her, making her great status apparent.

Someone recognized her identity after she came inside the inn and whispered: “Gongsun Qianer, why is someone from the Profound Sea God-Monarch’s camp here at the Jade Sea?”

The girl went up to the inn and ordered some wine and dishes

without saying anything else.

Li Qiye only looked at her once without paying too much attention. He finished his wine and called for the boss. After handing the money over, he asked: “Boss, have the doors to the Void Imperfection School opened yet?”

“Great immortal, this lowly one doesn’t know too well.” The boss rubbed his palms together and smiled awkwardly: “I am only a little merchant, so I don’t know anything about the world of immortals.”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh then leisurely say: “Is that so? I was actually hoping to ask you more about the ancestral whale.”

“How could this lowly one know anything about such grand events? Immortal, you should ask the disciples from the Void Imperfection School about it.” The boss smiled wryly.

Not too many people cared when Li Qiye mentioned the ancestral whale because they didn’t know what it was. However, the girl who sat not too far from him furrowed her brows after hearing the words “ancestral whale”.

She came from a great background and had heard her master talk about it, so after Li Qiye brought it up, she looked at him and shouted: “Hey! You were asking about the ancestral whale of the Void Imperfection Three Schools?”

Li Qiye lazily glanced at her without responding. He looked back at the boss and said: “In that case, nevermind then.”

Gongsun Qianer was not happy about being ignored. Her expression sank as she coldly said: “Just a human yet you still dare to be pretentious?!”

She was used to being arrogant. Her boss was a concubine of the Profound Sea God-Monarch. As her master’s confidante, she could be said to be able to call for winds and rains back in the Profound Sea Dynasty. But now, a little human was ignoring her.

“Boy, are you listening? My master is talking to you.” Her follower immediately shouted at him.

Li Qiye didn’t bother with them and turned to leave. Her entourage couldn’t stand it any longer, so they slammed the table before standing up, wanting to stop him.

“Great immortals, great immortals, please don’t be angry.” The boss immediately tried to smooth things over: “Arguing here will disturb the peace of Shallow Beach, please take it easy on us.”

“Forget it, it’s only an ignorant junior.” Gongsun Qianer waved her sleeve in a cold fashion and snorted while looking at Li Qiye’s back.

She didn’t really care for a human brat like him, but this was the territory of the Void Imperfection School, so she didn’t want to

cause trouble here.

After leaving the inn, Li Qiye headed south until he arrived in front of a huge trench.

With the sun shining down, this was a place full of green rocks and seagrass, giving people a very comfortable and peaceful feeling.

In the Heaven Spirit World, every single sea, even at their deepest depths, could enjoy sunlight.

Legend states that there were two suns in the Heaven Spirit World. One illuminated the sky and the continents while the other shone down on the bottom of the seas. Because of this, underwater creatures could bask in its gentle warmth as well.

Chapter 1189: Ye Tu

A little courtyard was located in this trench. The seawater steered clear from it, revealing old green tiles. One glance was enough to tell that this little home had been built a long time ago.

Li Qiye went inside to find a young man lazily basking in the sun. He looked a little over twenty, but despite his young age, he had an aura of sophistication and maturity.

The young man immediately stood up when Li Qiye approached. He cupped his fists and smiled: “May I ask what you are here for, Sir?”

Li Qiye looked him up and down before speaking: “You are a disciple of the Void Imperfection School, correct?”

The youth answered right away: “Yes, my name is Ye Tu from the Charming Spirit Race, the Void Imperfection supervisor of the Shallow Beach Branch.”

Li Qiye insipidly revealed: “I know, charming spirits make up the majority at the three schools and have been in control for generations. The demon boss at the inn is an exception, a disciple like that is quite rare in your sect.”

“Ah.” Ye Tu smiled and said: “Sir, you must be talking about my senior uncle. He likes to play around.”

He looked at the youth and declared: “I want to visit the Void Imperfection School. It is good that you are the supervisor here, let me in so I won’t have to barge in myself.”

Ye Tu scratched his head in response: “May I ask for your name, Sir?”

“Li Qiye.” Li Qiye calmly answered: “There’s no need to tell you my race, right?”

“Li Qiye...” When Ye Tu heard this name, he was shocked to the point where he almost jumped. He took a careful look at Li Qiye.

“Are you wondering why I don’t have the aura of an imperial bloodline?” Li Qiye nonchalantly spoke after noticing the youth’s reaction.

“Well...” Ye Tu rubbed his palms and coughed before smiling: “I wouldn’t dare. It is just that my vision is lacking and can’t see through Brother Li at all.”

“Your choice of words isn’t bad.” Li Qiye smiled: “Did Golden Isle inform your schools?”

“We received their message not long ago.” The youth replied: “I heard Brother Li had left Golden Isle, so the elders there asked our Charming Spirit Race to keep an eye out and help you if necessary.”

The Void Imperfection Three Schools were lineages of charming spirits while Golden Isle was a treant lineage. Logically speaking, Golden Isle should have informed the treants first.

There was a reason why Golden Isle did it this way. It was because the charming spirits were even more eager than them to marry humans with noble bloodlines. In fact, they married more humans than the sea demons and treants added together.

“As their groom?” Li Qiye laughed. He understood their hidden intentions.

“Ah, I heard you haven’t married the golden daughter from the isle yet, correct?” Ye Tu smiled and immediately brought a chair for Li Qiye to sit in.

Golden Isle informed them in order to let the three schools know that Li Qiye was already their groom and to not compete for this bloodline with them!

In fact, at the Jade Sea, the behemoths like the three schools had received a lot of information. For example, Li Qiye, with his imperial bloodline, had been kidnapped by someone.

Li Qiye sat down coolly without any reservation. Meanwhile, Ye Tu was very enthusiastic and showed good hospitality as well.

“It is our honor to have Brother Li here at Shallow Beach. I represent the beach to thank you for granting us this chance...” Ye

Tu quickly poured some tea for Li Qiye, playing his part as a good host.

Li Qiye smiled after hearing the flattering words. He touched his chin and leisurely mused: “I never thought I had such charm before.”

“Brother Li is a master the likes of which rarely appears. A meeting with you has to be the blessing of fate. Despite your noble status, you have no hint of arrogance...” The youth smiled.

Li Qiye took a sip and asked: “So? You want to betroth your senior sister or your junior sister to me?”

“Er—” Ye Tu had no response to Li Qiye’s directness. After a while, he grinned: “If you are willing to be our guest at the Void Imperfection School, you can have your pick.”

Li Qiye just smiled and shook his head: “Forget it, don’t make me participate in this ‘noble’ cause. In your minds, I am only a stallion to produce more royal bloodlines for the charming spirits to groom another Immortal Emperor, just like Immortal Emperor [Yan Shi](#).”

“Immortal Emperor Yan Shi...” Ye Tu was moved by this name. He murmured: “It would be a great honor if the Void Imperfection Three Schools could have a human Immortal Emperor.”

Immortal Emperor Yan Shi was the second emperor from [Gu Chun](#)’s four branches. Legend states that her father came from the

Exquisite Valley. Moreover, she was also a descendant of Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo, thus she had an imperial bloodline running through her veins.

Later on, her father married a beauty with a pure bloodline from Gu Chun's four branches. In the end, they gave birth to a daughter, the [unfathomable Immortal Emperor Yan Shi](#).

In the minds of the charming spirits, Immortal Emperor Yan Shi's achievements were incredible. She was someone comparable to their first emperor, Immortal Emperor Gu Chun! Because of this, her title was Yan Shi. It meant that under her reign, the nine worlds would have peace, a golden era!

Because of this, the charming spirits wanted to marry humans even more than treants and sea demons. They wanted to produce a better bloodline, a second Immortal Emperor Yan Shi in order to bring about prosperity to their race.

Li Qiye glanced at Ye Tu and said: "Forget about this stallion matter. The beauties here at the Heaven Spirit World and I are not meant to be." He laughed after making this statement.

Some people considered being a stallion to be their pride while others deemed it a shameful matter. However, Li Qiye thought nothing about it. Of course, he wouldn't become any race's stallion either.

"Ah, ah, we can take our time talking things through." Ye Tu smiled in response: "I welcome your presence here at our school

very much. If you are willing to stay, I can take you there.”

Of course Ye Tu wanted Li Qiye to stay. Although the Void Imperfection School was relatively low-key and not famous among the three since they didn't want to compete with the rest of the world, they also didn't want to give up someone with a bloodline like Li Qiye's. Nothing could be better than having this bloodline join their school.

The enthusiastic youth gave some orders to other disciples before bringing Li Qiye to his school.

Very few people could enter the Void Imperfection School, only certain talents with some influence were able to. Moreover, not too many knew where the school was located.

The only thing others knew was that the school's ancestral ground was not stationary. They were aware that it was built around the sea-territory of the school itself, but the exact location was unknown.

On the other hand, Li Qiye knew exactly where the school was located. However, he wanted to go there in a friendly manner this time, so he didn't forcefully enter.

Blue skies along with the blue sea and the occasional wafting clouds painted a scenic view worthy of a poem.

Ye Tu and Li Qiye stepped onto a white cloud. The scene

suddenly changed. A flying continent was before them with rolling mountains and faint valleys. This was a nature-filled place with gurgling streams accompanied by buildings and temples.

This continent floating in the sky seemed incredibly surreal, just like a painting. People would think that this was a paradise, taking their breath away with its beauty.

It turned out that the ancestral ground of the Void Imperfection School was hidden among the clouds. This group of clouds traveled around this region of the sea. Because of this, no one knew where the school was actually built.

Visitors were met with serenity. Many of the ancient buildings with closed doors had been unoccupied for a long time. Even the ones with opened doors seemed to have no signs of people.

Occasionally on one or two hills, a few disciples could be found sweeping the leaves away from relatively newer temples. Nevertheless, this didn't break the tranquility of this area.

Outsiders would be shocked at this scene. With so few disciples, no one would believe that this was the greatest lineage in the Heaven Spirit World!

In the minds of many, a great lineage should have plenty of talents and geniuses that appeared in waves. As for regular disciples, they should number in the millions.

“After so many years, your branch is still the same — peaceful and taking things easy. It is remarkable that such an inheritance has continued this way until now.” Li Qiye emotionally murmured while looking at the tranquil mountains and rivers.

The Void Imperfection School was different from the other two schools. It rarely appeared or let anyone inside. Outside of the three schools themselves, outsiders didn't know how many disciples it had.

Ye Tu explained: “Many senior and junior uncles are traveling and training. A few senior brothers and sisters also went outside, leaving only us, the young ones, behind to take care of the trivial matters in the sect.”

Yan Shi means peaceful/repose/prosperous/feast era, or a golden age.

Gu Chun = First Immortal Emperor of all races, a charming spirit.
Mu Zhuo = Wood Refinement. I'm not sure what the four branches are though, not clear here.

Remember that only Hong Tian has Empress in her title. Keeping true to the raw, even female Immortal Emperors have emperor in their title. It works in the narrative this way because the author likes to hide the sex sometimes, if we change it to empress to keep it grammatically correct, it might create some problems with the narrative. This particular issue has popped up several times before.

Chapter 1190: Void Imperfection Schoolmaster

The great Void Imperfection School was unique and very different from other lineages.

Each generation slowly spread outside. Regardless of their status, both high elders and ordinary disciples would travel everywhere. More often than not, they wouldn't participate in worldly affairs or get involved with cultivation feuds.

To a large extent, they pursued freedom and serenity. Because of this, it was difficult to find the disciples from this sect in the Heaven Spirit World.

For many lineages, especially the larger ones, their disciples would band together to live in the cultivation world for both resource competition and wars. Thus, it was often quite eventful for these sects.

In this respect, the Void Imperfection School was different from others. Its gate and ancestral courtyard were completely empty. If one didn't know about this place beforehand, they would wonder if they had come to the wrong location.

Thus, the traveling disciples were rather undisciplined, but no one in the Heaven Spirit World has been able to shake the school's status or have any ideas about them.

From this, one could see that the three schools have enough power to deal with any kind of trouble. Their true power was difficult to fathom.

Ye Tu took Li Qiye to an old temple with a very imposing presence. Just one look was enough to tell how extraordinary it was.

However, one would find that this place had not been cleaned in a long time. Dust had accumulated into layers in some places.

An imperial lineage being so lazy was truly difficult to believe. When inside the temple, one would see a rocking chair with a man lying on it. In fact, it was very easy to miss him due to the leaves that covered him. He was deep in sleep. After seeing this situation, others would most likely think that he was already dead.

“Schoolmaster, Brother Li is here to see you.” Ye Tu bowed in front of this sleeping man.

Leaves began to fall as the man opened his eyes and stood up. Just how long had he been sleeping here to accumulate this many layers of leaves?

He eventually revealed his appearance without the leaves. This was a very thin elder dressed like a commoner. He looked like an ordinary old man without any noteworthy aspects. However, the occasional glimmer in his eyes showed that he was a hidden master.

“Is this the Young Noble Li with the imperial bloodline?” He immediately judged Li Qiye after waking up.

Ye Tu quickly replied: “Schoolmaster, Brother Li is indeed the groom from Golden Isle—”

Before he could finish, the Void Imperfection Schoolmaster interrupted him and corrected: “Little Ye, how can you say that? Young Noble Li has yet to marry and he won’t necessarily marry that little girl from Golden Isle, so how can he be their groom?”

“That’s true, that’s true.” Ye Tu understood and smiled while nodding.

Li Qiye only chuckled after seeing this. Meanwhile, the schoolmaster circled around Li Qiye to take a good look. He seemed to be carefully appreciating Li Qiye, similar to how in-laws might like their son-in-law more and more.

Li Qiye happily let him do as he pleased while taking a seat on the rocking chair...

The schoolmaster ignored his lack of formality and cheerfully smiled: “Virtuous Nephew, your fame is like thunder ringing in my ears. You are the prodigy of the human race, the hero of the world —”

“These words are too fake.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile while shaking his head: “Schoolmaster, there’s no need to flatter me, I

know myself very well. I am only a nobody at the Heaven Spirit World, this ringing thunder bit, it is just artificial rhetoric.”

The schoolmaster didn't mind being called out. He gave a thumbs-up and said: “Virtuous Nephew, you are quite straightforward and genuine like a real man. Since you are here as a guest, it truly brightens up this place. Don't be reserved, just consider my school as your home.”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head, then he went straight to the point: “My time is limited so I won't stay for long. I want to meet your ancestral whale to take something away.”

“The ancestral whale?” The schoolmaster was startled. He dryly coughed and shook his head: “Virtuous Nephew, I'm not trying to make things difficult for you, but since you know of the ancestral whale, you should know how hard it is to meet it. In fact, even I would find it difficult...”

“I know, which is why I'm asking you to learn where it has run off to.” Li Qiye nodded.

The schoolmaster gently shook his head: “I won't lie to you. I don't know where it is going either, this is a secret.”

Li Qiye looked at him: “I do not doubt your words. The ancestral whale of the three schools travels around the vast seas in the Heaven Spirit World without leaving behind a trace. Outside of your whale riders, no outsiders truly know of its whereabouts.”

“Yes, yes.” The schoolmaster smilingly replied: “It is good that you understand, but—”

“But...” Li Qiye slowly continued: “I know that the school has a method of communicating with the ancestral whale. I believe you should know about it.”

“Well...” The schoolmaster contemplated for a bit before looking back at Li Qiye with a grin: “That is true as well. If you really want to see the ancestral whale, I can discuss it with the ancestors. If they agree, then you can definitely see it, but before then, why not stay at our place? We definitely welcome you here.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head again: “I think you misunderstand something. I am not only here to see the ancestral whale, I also want to go to the Void Imperfection Spring to fetch some water.”

This alarmed both the schoolmaster and Ye Tu. The schoolmaster, in particular, took one step back right away and put on a vigilant expression.

“Schoolmaster, there’s no need to be so alarmed. If I wanted to take some by force, I wouldn’t be here speaking to you like this.” Li Qiye noticed their response and smiled.

“I don’t know too much about the Void Imperfection Spring.” The schoolmaster shook his head. At this time, he had become a lot colder and didn’t have the same enthusiasm as before. It was a tremendous change in attitude.

Li Qiye only laughed: “Schoolmaster, I’m not here to exchange friendly words with you or to hear your excuses. I only want to tell you that I will meet the ancestral whale as well as fetch water from the spring.”

“Virtuous Nephew, do you wish to use force?” The schoolmaster’s face turned darker: “This old man is not deliberately making things difficult for you. If you know about the spring, then you should definitely know that not just anyone can go there. Outside of a few ancestors, others aren’t allowed!”

“I am aware.” Li Qiye said: “The Void Imperfection Spring is a place that has obtained the fortune of the heavens. In the past, Immortal Emperor Wu Gou spent countless efforts to bring the spring here. One can say that it didn’t originally belong to you.”

Here, he glanced at the schoolmaster and continued: “The emperor moved the spring to the ancestral whale first. From then on, it became yours and outsiders couldn’t see it any longer.”

“I don’t know much about the past.” The schoolmaster dismissively said: “I can only apologize since I am not in charge of anything relating to the spring.”

Li Qiye smirked and declared: “Regardless of whether you are in charge or not, I will see the ancestral whale and take water from the spring.”

“Are you always so forceful like this?” The schoolmaster’s eyes turned fierce and flashed a glint that crossed through time and

space. This truly showed how powerful he was.

“Who said that I’m being forceful?” Li Qiye smiled and stood up while reaching out with his hand.

Ye Tu was scared by this and thought that Li Qiye wanted to fight. At the same time, the schoolmaster put up his guard to fight against Li Qiye at any moment.

However, Li Qiye didn’t attack the two. He simply took down a group of clouds from the sky. He casually kneaded them to make the clouds float in front of him. Next, he sat down on them, letting them slowly lift him up for a spin before coming back down.

“The Void Imperfection Clouds!” The schoolmaster was surprised after seeing this, not believing his own eyes.

Ye Tu was shocked as well. He had heard about these clouds since a young age. They had always been floating there, but he had never heard of anyone capable of bringing them down or riding them.

This was Li Qiye’s first time here, yet he could easily ride them — to Ye Tu, this was simply incredible.

“My ancestors had a relationship with Immortal Emperor Wu Gou. They left behind a certain something that has allowed me to take down a group of clouds today.” Li Qiye said in a matter-of-fact manner.

Of course, this was only a casual excuse. The person who knew Immortal Emperor Wu Gou was none other than him.

Chapter 1191: Bloodline

After seeing the Void Imperfection Clouds, the schoolmaster became less tense and patted his chest: “Then you are one of us, we can talk freely.”

With that, his face turned a bit bitter as he looked at Li Qiye: “If you only took the clouds down in the beginning, then we wouldn’t have had to do anything. I received quite a scare just now, my old bones can’t handle this torture...”

“Sorry, sorry, I just arrived at the school so I forgot.” Li Qiye smiled in response.

Both the schoolmaster and Ye Tu calmed down. They didn’t want to fight at all.

The schoolmaster told Li Qiye: “Our Void Imperfection Three Schools do have an ancestral teaching. Seeing as how you could bring down the clouds, you are part of our family, so we won’t say no.”

Li Qiye gently nodded: “If Immortal Emperor Wu Gou has left behind a teaching, then nothing can be better. I have no other requests, like before, I only want to take water from the Void Imperfection Spring.”

“I’m sure it will be fine.” The schoolmaster quickly said: “Let me go report this to the ancestors to find out the ancestral whale’s location. Once we find out, I’ll inform you immediately.”

Li Qiye agreed: “Very good, let me know when you find out. I’ll be staying at Shallow Beach in the meantime.” Having said that, he stood up.

The schoolmaster noticed that he was about to leave, so he rubbed his palms together and attempted to hold the guest back. With a big grin, he insisted: “It wasn’t easy for you to come here, so why not stay for a while? Check out our pretty sceneries and allow me to play the part of a good host.”

Li Qiye laughed and told the schoolmaster: “Don’t tell me you want me to pick a bunch of ladies from the school?”

Such words were very direct, so the schoolmaster coughed awkwardly. He became a bit embarrassed and smiled: “If you like any lass from our school, you can take her away anytime.”

“A girl isn’t an object.” Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head.

The schoolmaster grinned, but he spoke with a serious tone: “All along in the Heaven Spirit World, many things remain unchanging. It was this way in the past and shall be this way in the future. Who can escape the trend of reproduction for the greatness of a race?”

“Yes, and it’s not just the Heaven Spirit World, a few things will never change in the nine worlds.” Li Qiye had grown accustomed to this type of marriage.

This matter happened a lot in the rest of the nine worlds as well. Countless lineages sought alliances forged through marriage.

However, the three grand races here were a bit different. They wanted excellent human bloodlines to have descendants with brilliant talents and bloodlines.

The schoolmaster earnestly said: “Virtuous Nephew, you have an imperial bloodline. Even if you don’t care for the charming spirits or the other races, you should still consider doing something for your own sake. Your precious bloodline should be passed down. In this regard, do you think there is a more suitable race than us charming spirits to be your match?”

This was not boasting. There were many races in the nine worlds, but none of them dared to claim to be better than the charming spirits. They were called the favorites of the heavens — this was not something they claimed themselves but a fact recognized by many races.

Li Qiye looked at him and said: “Your Void Imperfection School wants more than just an excellent bloodline. You also want to imitate Immortal Emperor Gu Chun’s four branches as well as train an ultimate Immortal Emperor, even if it is a human.”

“It is not just our school. The other charming spirits, treants, and sea demons are also doing the same, am I wrong?” The schoolmaster replied.

Li Qiye insipidly said: “The legend is not necessarily true.”

Among the charming spirits and even the entire Heaven Spirit World, there was a legend. It states that when an imperial bloodline from the human race comes together with an excellent charming spirit bloodline, the result would be the further perfection and strengthening of the human bloodline.

At the same time, the charming spirit’s bloodline would increase in potency and its potential would be excavated to the extreme.

This all started with Immortal Emperor Yan Shi. She was an extremely unbelievable Immortal Emperor, so people took note of the conditions surrounding her.

In fact, there was some evidence of this later on as well. After the emperor, the four branches of Immortal Emperor Gu Chun passed down even better bloodlines, giving them a large number of outstanding bloodlines.

With this result, the future generations believed that a human imperial bloodline had a great effect in enhancing the bloodlines of charming spirits.

Due to this, human imperial bloodlines were especially welcomed whenever they appeared in the Heaven Spirit World. They were absolutely the best among stallions.

“Well, well, without trying, how would we know if it is true or

not?” The schoolmaster chuckled.

The schoolmaster really wanted Li Qiye to stay at the three schools. If they could have his bloodline as well, it would fortify their status.

“Oh? You want to steal Golden Isle’s groom?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but chuckle: “If I am not mistaken, your Void Imperfection School has never interfered with mundane matters or competed with others.”

The schoolmaster gave a natural smile in response: “Nephew, you still haven’t married the miss from the Ye Clan yet, so how can this be considered stealing their groom? Plus, even if you had married, this is no big deal. Since the start of time, heroes would always have many companions.”

“I see, you want me to turn into the best stud to spread my seed everywhere.” Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: “Unfortunately, I have no interest in this.”

The schoolmaster opened his mouth in order to say something, but Li Qiye waved his hand: “I’m not interested, even if you provide better conditions. It’s not like Golden Isle hasn’t tried before, either.”

The schoolmaster could only softly sigh after hearing this, but he didn’t give up: “You are still one of us, our doors will always be open for you. One day when you are tired of drifting in this world, you can come and stay with us here, at Void Imperfection.”

“Thank you.” Li Qiye didn’t refuse the schoolmaster’s kindness. He flashed a quick smile before turning around to leave.

He went back to Shallow Beach afterward. Meanwhile, Ye Tu stayed with him the entire time, entertaining him with great enthusiasm.

“You are the regional supervisor here, don’t you have work to do?” Li Qiye looked at him with one eye and asked after seeing the youth working so hard.

Ye Tu smiled and replied: “Our Void Imperfection School aims for serenity and going with the flow. There is normally nothing to do, so we just sit there in a daze. Since you are here as our guest, let me be as good of a host as possible, lest others consider us to be inadequate with our hospitality.”

Li Qiye smiled and knew that this was the schoolmaster’s idea, so he didn’t chase him away.

After two days, Teng Jiwen finally came. He bowed after seeing Li Qiye: “By the command of the forefather, this junior is here to obey your commands, Sir. Just let me know when you require my service.”

“There’s no need for formalities, I am not that old.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve and told him to stand up.

Ye Tu also recognized Teng Jiwen and quickly chatted with him.

“If the two of you want to follow me, come then.” Li Qiye glanced at the two before leaving Shallow Beach.

The two looked at each other, not knowing what Li Qiye wanted to do. Regardless, they hurried to catch up to him.

After leaving the beach, they continued traveling quite far on the seabed.

This was the Void Imperfection School’s territory, so whether it was the surface or the seabed, Ye Tu was very familiar with it. He looked at the scene along the way and murmured: “Ahead is the Bottomless Trench, are we really going there?”

“Yes and no.” Li Qiye answered while comfortably leading the way. He strode forward while remaining untouched by the water as if he was gliding through the liquid. This manner of movement was very elegant, like drifting clouds flowing with the current.

Ye Tu calculated the time and said: “The season of the needlefish is almost upon us. Young Noble, could it be that you are here for them?”

“Needlefish?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “You are underestimating me too much. Needlefish can indeed be regarded as precious. However, a fish king can barely be considered top grade, they can’t get into my eyes.”

“The Bottomless Trench?” Teng Jiwen thought about a legend and speculated: “Sir, are you here for the legendary sea-crossing shuttle then?”

“Yes and no.” Li Qiye smiled and flatly said: “Your thinking might not be as quick as Ye Tu, but you are much more meticulous than him.”

“Sea-crossing shuttle?” Ye Tu heard this name and was surprised: “Legend states that the shuttle hasn’t appeared for a very long time. Until now, all three great races of the Heaven Spirit World have been searching down at the Bottomless Trench, especially us charming spirits who do so every single generation.”

“Certain things will appear when the time is right. The disappearance was only due to outsiders not knowing about its existence.” Li Qiye plainly explained: “Like your ancestral whale, it also disappeared to those who are unable to see it.”

Ye Tu felt that this explanation made sense.

Chapter 1192: Bottomless Trench

According to legend, the Bottomless Trench was the deepest and longest trench in the Heaven Spirit World.

For many years, many people have explored this particular trench, but none were able to do so fully.

Someone once said that this trench was long enough to cross the entire Jade Sea. Its depths remained a mystery because no one had been able to reach the bottom.

It spanned further than the territory of the Void Imperfection Three Schools and brought about a different landscape to this region.

This was especially true when they were closer to the three schools. It had been said that this end of the trench near Shallow Beach was the most beautiful stretch.

When Li Qiye's group got close, they saw a beautiful sight full of coral forests.

This coral field might span for thousands of miles along the two sides of the trench. Such a great field was truly spectacular, a sight only found at the Heaven Spirit World.

There were all kinds of colorful coral of varying shapes and sizes as far as the eye could see. Some were as large as trees that grew

from the bottom of the sea all the way to the surface. Under these trees, groups of seaweed swayed about with happy fishes. There were also caves full of shrimps and crabs as well as large turtles lounging about...

Some grew in a criss-cross pattern and intertwined into a huge maze. If one entered this cave of coral, they would surely get lost.

All in all, this field was a dazzling spectacle of indescribable and unforgettable charm.

A depression could be found after crossing through this field completely. This was the renowned Bottomless Trench. It was broad to the point that it seemed to split the whole sea apart.

It was completely black; looking down into the trench was like looking into the gaping jaws of a monster that would devour anything that fell into it, a cause for fear and awe.

The group stopped inside the coral forest and didn't proceed further. Here, Li Qiye meticulously examined a huge coral.

The two of them didn't know what Li Qiye wanted to do. They stood behind him with bated breaths and didn't dare to disturb him.

Next, Li Qiye moved as swift as lightning. His fingers swept forward with a speed beyond the two's perception.

He then spread his palms before Teng Jiwen and Ye Tu to show [an insect with fuzzy hair around the length of a finger](#). This insect was squirming on his palm and gave quite a creepy feeling.

“Okay, since the two of you are here, I’ll entrust this important matter to you both. Catch these insects for me, the more the better. Afterward, roast and grind them into a powder.” Li Qiye then threw the insect over to these two.

The two were quite perplexed and didn’t know the purpose of this bug catching session. Nevertheless, they followed his orders and searched through these coral reefs without saying anything.

These two both had great statuses. One was a supervisor of the Void Imperfection School while Teng Jiwen was even better off as the prestigious successor of the Heavenvine Citadel. However, they obediently acted as Li Qiye’s followers to find these insects.

After passing this menial matter over to the pair, Li Qiye immediately left for the surface of the sea and began to walk on the water.

After walking a bit while gazing at the sky, he plopped down and began to float with his face out of the water. He closed his eyes as if he was sleeping.

The sea was quiet and moved Li Qiye along. The entire process was without sound, as if Li Qiye was one with the sea.

He slept and let the sea take him wherever it wished. The day passed by just like this.

“Are you Young Noble Li?” Some time later, a sweet and clear voice came about as Li Qiye was drifting about.

Li Qiye opened his eyes to see a pretty fairy-like maid standing on the waves. It was a beautiful scene.

“Yes?” Li Qiye closed his eyes and lazily replied.

The pretty maid told Li Qiye: “Young Noble Li, my madam wishes to invite you. Will you please follow me?”

“I’m busy.” He replied in a carefree manner: “Tell her to come and see me.”

The pretty maid didn’t know what to say in response to this rudeness. After a while, she said: “Young Noble Li, my madam is the schoolmaster of the Sacred Spring—”

“This uncle is not free.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve and didn’t bother opening his eyes: “Even if it is the supreme ruler of the heavens, let him come if he wants to see me.”

The pretty maid turned red. She had never been in such a situation before with this type of arrogant and rude person.

She hesitated for a bit before silently floating away.

Li Qiye acted as if nothing happened and let the waves push him again as he immersed himself in the water.

More time passed and an extremely melodious voice came about: “I didn’t know Young Noble Li was busy. Please excuse my uninvited visit.”

This voice was very pleasant — sharp and clear yet silky soft. In the softness was a hint of allurement. In the allurement was a touch of elegance. Anyone would feel comfortable and relaxed after hearing this.

It was easy to imagine how elegant this woman was just from listening to her voice. She was mature and charming in a refined manner. This was a natural born empress.

Li Qiye opened his eyes again to see a woman standing on the sea. She wore a faint yellow dress with a simple white flower on the front. Her figure was graceful and ripe.

A quick first glance showed that she was nearly thirty with an exceptional aura full of grandeur. Her maturity made it seem like she was a married woman, yet within this sophisticated charm was the refreshing sensation of a young maiden.

These juxtaposing auras perfectly combined to provide an exquisite appeal.

She was not at the level of being peerless. Her appearance was not as incredible as Ming Yexue's or Mei Suyao's, and she was inferior compared to Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao as well.

However, her special charm of a new bride could truly pull on others' heartstrings. Her dress didn't wrap too tightly around her body, but her curves were apparent and attractive.

This charm resembled a grape ripe to perfection. She was neither overly mature nor completely innocent. Inside the purple skin was sweet flowing juice, anyone would want to pick this grape and have a taste of the flavor within.

“Not a bad job at cultivating the Sacred Spring Physique.” Li Qiye glanced at her and stated before closing his eyes again.

The girl shuddered after hearing this. Li Qiye could tell what she was cultivating from just a single glance. This type of perception was simply too frightening.

She bowed and said: “Thank you for your praise. [My name is Zhuo Jianshi](#), currently in charge of the Sacred Spring School. Please excuse my lack of courtesy for the sudden visit.”

Li Qiye plainly spoke: “I know, to be able to cultivate the physique to this level, you can indeed handle the schoolmaster position.”

She was not offended by his rather rude and haughty attitude and sat down next to him on the water's surface.

“We haven't been able to show our hospitality to you ever since you arrived...” Her noble demeanor was also natural and quite approachable.

Li Qiye waved his hand and interrupted her: “Speak if you will and fart if you must, do not beat around the bush with me. I'm not in the mood to guess and waste time.”

Such an overbearing attitude made her secretly lament the situation. As one of the schoolmasters from Void Imperfection, she was quite an influential person. However, Li Qiye simply didn't take her to heart.

Eventually, she took a deep breath and earnestly spoke: “I would like to invite you to my Sacred Spring School as a guest.”

“I see, so it is still the same. Everyone views me as the greatest stallion. No doubt, you want me to go there and find various ladies to get close to and take my seed.”

These words were too direct and sexual, leaving Zhuo Jianshi momentarily speechless.

An imperial bloodline like Li Qiye's was too precious for the charming spirits. This was the same for their Sacred Spring School, so they wanted to recruit him.

Not sure what kind of insect this is since it isn't clear. Not a clear word for worm, caterpillar, or something else, so keeping it as insect to play it safe.

She is very respectful this time, referring to herself as "little girl". "This little girl is Zhuo Jianshi".

Chapter 1193: Zhuo Jianshi

In the end, Zhuo Jianshi was still someone who had experienced countless waves. She took a deep breath and answered with an elegant smile on her face: “I do not deny your claim. Many lineages in the Heaven Spirit World desire an imperial bloodline like yours. It has always been a custom for sects to pay attention to these bloodlines. The sect masters all have a responsibility to find excellent bloodlines for their sects.”

“You are very eloquent.” Li Qiye smiled and asked: “The old geezer from Void Imperfection wants me to stay and now you do as well. Aren’t your three schools afraid of an inner conflict?”

She smiled, her mature and noble appearance made people palpitate from excitement: “Young Noble, you are misunderstanding something. Our three schools are one and the same. The Void Imperfection Schoolmaster wants to keep you behind, as do we. This is only giving Young Noble more choices, it is not a competition.”

Li Qiye chuckled with his eyes closed: “If you have talked with the old geezer, you should know that I am not interested in this matter.”

“We want you to stay, but this doesn’t necessarily mean that you have to become our groom. You can just stay at our schools for a while if you like.” Her demeanor was calm and gentle: “Maybe we should approach this differently. In my eyes, your inner physique is quite powerful, so our schools are the best choice for you. We will have a suitable physique law for you to choose.”

Zhuo Jianshi was not just boasting. In the Heaven Spirit World or even all of the nine worlds, no other lineage had as many physique laws as the three schools since they had three different Immortal Physiques.

“Physique laws?” Li Qiye opened his eyes to look at her and smiled: “You have good eyesight, but as for physique laws...”

He burst out into laughter at this point.

She didn’t become angry for elegance exuded from her core. She spoke softly: “May I ask for the reason behind your laughter?”

Of course, she wasn’t aware that no one had more physique laws than Li Qiye in this world. He simply had them all.

“Nothing.” Li Qiye replied with a grin: “Your three schools have many physique laws. Not to mention the others, just the three Immortal Physique laws alone are truly precious. The Void Imperfection Windchase Law, the Evil Devourer Graceful Law, and the Surging Golden Spring Law... these three laws can be considered peerless in this world...”

With a brief pause, he continued: “Outside of the physique laws created by Immortal Emperors, your three laws are quite rare. This is especially true for the Void Imperfection Windchase Law; it is infinitely close to perfection. This level of physique law is very rare. For example, the physique law from the Soaring Immortal Sect of Immortal Emperor Fei could be considered another.”

It was truly difficult to receive such high praise from Li Qiye. After all, he had the Physique Scripture that contained all the perfect and profound laws in existence.

In fact, for cultivators, creating a physique law was even more difficult than creating an emperor law. This was one of the reasons why grand completion Immortal Physique users could assail Immortal Emperors.

The scale of difficulty soared when it came to Immortal Physique laws. There were quite a few wonderful masters who were able to create these laws, but they had defects and were incomplete. There weren't that many at a level that could be considered complete, let alone perfect.

The physique laws of the three schools were considered complete. Of course, there was still a large way to go before true perfection.

"It is thanks to our predecessors' achievements, we descendants have not been able to do anything so we need to work even harder." She answered in a demure manner without pride.

Li Qiye looked at her and smiled: "Your eyesight is not bad since it can see that my inner physique is powerful. The temptation of physique laws might work for everyone else in this world, but it is nothing to me."

For cultivators with powerful inner physiques, to be able to

cultivate an Immortal Physique would be their greatest pursuit in life. They would find it impossible to refuse such a temptation.

However, he promptly added: “However, your Void Imperfection Three Schools does have something that tempts me.”

“What might that be?” She became curious as well. Since Li Qiye wasn’t interested in Immortal Physique laws, was there anything else in this world that was even more precious to peak his interest?

He emphatically replied: “Your Immortal Emperor Wu Gou’s creation, the Windchase Break!”

Despite her normal calm demeanor, his answer shocked her: “The Windchase Break! One of the Immortal Physique Strikes!”

Immortal Physique Strikes were mysterious techniques that very few people had seen.

Legend states that only grand completion Immortal Physique emperors were able to create these attacks. Without reaching grand completion, even an Immortal Emperor wouldn’t be able to do so. Conversely, grand completion users wouldn’t be able to create them without having the Heaven’s Will.

Because of these strict requirements, these attacks were extremely rare. Furthermore, future generations speculated that there was an additional requirement, that the emperor’s physique law must be self-made. Only those who had created their own

physique laws to become an emperor with a grand completion Immortal Physique would be able to develop these attacks.

There were many stories about these attacks themselves. Some said that they were more powerful than Heaven's Will Secret Laws. However, the opposition stated that these attacks couldn't oppose a secret law if its user had the Heaven's Will.

Another group speculated that a grand completion user training in these attacks could definitely ambush an Immortal Emperor. They could even contend against the emperor's secret law!

Alas, these were all guesses because there were too few Immortal Physique laws in this world and even fewer Immortal Physique Strikes. A grand completion user with these attacks was a hundred times rarer than an Immortal Emperor!

As such, no one was able to witness such a duel, especially those from the younger generations.

Zhuo Jianshi was trembling after hearing this. After all, the Windchase Strike was once the most powerful and frightening technique from her three schools. A Void Imperfection user with the Windchase Strike held unimaginable power!

"However, you lot have lost the Windchase Strike!" Li Qiye insipidly stated: "This is very regrettable and is also the reason why the Void Imperfection Three Schools lost some of its deterring influence."

Zhuo Jianshi pondered in silence for a moment. Across the generations, this had been a truly regrettable matter for their school. In fact, they had tried to look for it all this time to no avail...

She eventually calmed down and took a deep breath to look at Li Qiye: “Our schools have many disciples training in different types of physiques, including Saint and Immortal Physiques—”

“I know what you are trying to say.” Li Qiye smiled and interrupted her: “An imperial bloodline combining with an Immortal Physique bloodline would make a perfect combination. If the offspring could inherit both legacies, then they might be able to surpass the old Immortal Emperor Yan Shi if they were to become an Immortal Emperor...”

“This is a great temptation for any lineage.” Li Qiye continued: “However, I have never thought about spreading my bloodline to the nine worlds. Even if I were to do so, the woman must be worthy of my entrustment!”

“May I ask what kind of woman would be worthy of Young Noble Li’s entrustment?” She looked at him with eyes as soft as water and directly met his gaze.

Li Qiye was still lying on the sea. He laughed and answered: “If you come have some intimate fun with me for a while, I may consider.”

Such words changed her expression. They were direct and

assailed her with obscenity. It was no longer teasing, this was the most straightforward call for sex!

Ultimately, she was still a schoolmaster. This direct invitation to mate was provocative to the point of being humiliating.

“Young Noble Li must be joking.” She regained her composure and demure appearance to say: “I am a married woman, your request is too much of an imposition.”

“I know.” Li Qiye looked at her and said: “I understand the meaning of the white flower on your chest. I didn’t really want to reveal your scar, but I can let you know that I don’t mind you being a widow. Plus, you are still a maiden.”

The lady, despite her experience, couldn’t stay calm while handling this type of provocative conversation. After all, the topic was too much.

“Forget it, I was just kidding.” Li Qiye flatly added: “But remember, in order to get something, one must pay for it. Without an ace, you better think carefully before doing anything. Are you all worthy of my favor?”

Such words were quite domineering. If it was someone else, they would want nothing more than to be the groom of the three schools.

Zhuo Jianshi turned quiet again in the face of this dilemma. Her

schools could indeed propose some very tempting conditions. However, Li Qiye was dismissive of them all.

Chapter 1194: Mythical Divine Weapon

She eventually composed herself and looked at Li Qiye to say: “Perhaps you are interested in the great maelstrom. We may be of assistance in this respect.”

After hearing this, Li Qiye opened his eyes wide. A glint shot out from within while he stared at her intensely.

She didn’t know why, but the glint that flashed from his eyes frightened her in an indescribable manner. She felt like an ancient beast was awakening.

However, she met his gaze head-on for a long time without fear because she had no malicious intent in the first place.

“It seems like you have seen a few things.” Li Qiye slowly said, still fixated on her.

“I wouldn’t dare to hide it from you. I was at the Profound Sea that day, but it was still quite far away from the maelstrom. I only caught a glance.” She nonchalantly said: “However, I didn’t expect this coincidence, for you to have an imperial bloodline. Perhaps this is a type of fate.”

“Fate...” Li Qiye only smiled and closed his eyes without caring too much.

“If you wish to venture into the maelstrom in the future, our

three schools can help you. After all, we are part of the ancient Charming Spirit Race, we have things other lineages lack.”

Li Qiye laughed while looking at her: “Little Beauty!”

She couldn’t help but ask: “Young Noble, why are you laughing? If I have said something wrong, please point it out.” She was negotiating with great sincerity.

“You have no idea.” Li Qiye shook his head and replied: “You think that I am trying to go into the maelstrom, but the truth is that I want nothing from it.”

He had already obtained the Life Origination he wanted and didn’t care about the other things in there. Even if it had a few heaven-shattering secrets and incredible treasures, they still had nothing to do with him. Others were free to covet these treasures all they want.

Zhuo Jianshi found this surprising. On that day, she saw him entering the maelstrom, so she thought he had some ideas about it.

“You are mistaken about this matter, the maelstrom is meaningless to me. On the other hand, you charming spirits should pay more attention to it.”

She shuddered internally and immediately asked: “What do you mean?”

Li Qiye slightly raised his brow: “Don’t play this mind game in front of me or I’ll rip off your clothes. If you are one of the schoolmasters from Void Imperfection, you should know a little about this.”

Her heart sank a bit. Of course, it was not because of Li Qiye’s threat of tearing off her clothes, it was because she had heard some legends before. There were records within the sect, but they were too vague for her to learn anything substantial.

She sincerely asked while looking at him: “I am not trying to conceal anything. The records left behind are only legends, making it quite difficult to tell whether they are accurate or not. Since you dared to enter the maelstrom, I’m sure you know more. Would you be willing to enlighten me?”

He looked at her for a moment before answering: “Even if I say more, you won’t necessarily be able to distinguish its validity. I can only say that if one day something actually happens to the maelstrom, it will be a catastrophe for the entire Heaven Spirit World, especially for charming spirits!”

She curiously asked: “What kind of catastrophe?”

“That depends on the things in there. One accident will bring about a disaster, so when that day comes, run for your life, flee from the Heaven Spirit World. The farther the better.” He smiled and added: “Of course, that day might also never come.”

She quietly contemplated after hearing this. The maelstrom had

always been a mystery, but ever since a very distant era the charming spirits had been wary of it.

“Is it true that there are supreme items within the maelstrom?” She had to ask the question that was lingering in her mind because there were too many different versions of this legend.

“Yes, truly supreme treasures.” He answered: “But it also depends on what you have in mind. If you are thinking about weapons, then yes, they are indeed there.”

“How do we obtain those weapons then?” She couldn’t help but ask: “How do they compare to the sea demon’s Trident?”

Li Qiye laughed and said: “Do you know the origin of the Trident? Or of its true power?”

She answered: “It is the supreme divine artifact of the sea demons. Those who are accepted by the Trident can become the Sea God. Its power is boundless and invincible in myriad realms and even more formidable than an Immortal Emperor True Treasure.”

Sea demons were similar to treants. Their strongest existences were not Immortal Emperors; their equivalent to treefathers were called Sea Gods.

However, these unrivaled existences must be recognized by the Trident. After meeting this requirement, they would become a Sea

God capable of wielding the artifact.

Historically, these supremes of the sea demons wielding the Trident could put up a good fight against an Immortal Emperor with a true treasure!

“What you know is only superficial drizzle, but there’s no need to elaborate on this. Even if there are divine weapons comparable to the Trident in there, who among your race can wield such artifacts?”

With that, he finished: “Charming spirits should continue to pursue the path towards Immortal Emperor. This is the correct way. The others are only alternative methods for when there is no other choice.”

Having said that, he closed his eyes again and gently waved his sleeve: “Okay, now don’t bother me again.”

Zhuo Jianshi sighed and stood up then bowed: “Our doors will always be open to you. Come visit us anytime.”

Li Qiye seemed to have fallen asleep at this moment; it was impossible to know if he actually heard her or not.

She stopped bothering him and gently rode the waves away before disappearing completely. She was not offended by this meeting and only felt disappointment instead. This trip was essentially meaningless; in the end, she understood that her

schools didn't interest him at all.

Li Qiye was still lying quietly on the sea and drifted with the flow. This process continued for a while. Eventually, he suddenly opened his eyes and drilled into the sea. A moment later, a huge trench appeared before him.

This was a small part of the Bottomless Trench distant from the previous sea region.

Li Qiye entered the trench in one go. In this split second, he released his divine intent to sweep through this area. Nothing could escape from his sense.

Eventually, he stood before a particular cliff inside the trench. There was a depression with a clam the size of a basin that occasionally spat out bubbles.

It looked quite ordinary. The only thing worth noticing was the pearl within it, emitting a faint light.

Li Qiye smiled upon the sight of the clam and the pearl: "It really isn't easy to find this pathfinder clam. Only by following the current of the ocean would one be able to eventually find this clam and the correct path."

Li Qiye was drifting with the sea in order to catch this type of clam.

Of course, there were countless clams in the Jade Sea and the Bottomless Trench. One could find as many as they wanted. However, very few clams were capable of pathfinding.

In the past, he had searched and caught many clams before finally learning the mysteries within and understanding their usage. With the successful capture, he identified the correct direction and headed back to Shallow Beach.

His trip here was to find two things in order to replenish the life of the Peacock Tree. One of them was the Void Imperfection Spring inside the ancestral whale while the other was hidden in another secret location.

This was precisely why he needed this pathfinder clam; he needed it to find the second well-concealed item since a thoughtless search would yield no results.

Chapter 1195: Teeming Sea Tribe

In recent days, Shallow Beach had become quite lively. Many lineages and cultivators from the Jade Sea came here. Even those from the Profound and Dragon Demon Seas came as well.

They came for the precious needlefish. In the Heaven Spirit World, these fish were used for both food and medicines due to its nutritious properties. They lived in the Bottomless Trench, so it was difficult to find them normally. Even those who entered the trench might not see them.

Only in the season of coral blossoming would these fish come out of the trench to eat the pollen.

The best time to catch them was when the flocks came. Because of this, many people ran to Shallow Beach and waited for this season to come.

Despite the number of people, there weren't any powerful cultivators here. The majority of them were only [disciples of the third generation](#).

Needlefish weren't precious to the point that they would make people go crazy, so experts wouldn't come in person.

Because of this, no extremely famous people could be found here, only a few people with some influence that could garner some attention.

For example, Gongsun Qianer. During her stay at Shallow Beach, many young disciples came to greet and befriend her like little bees swarming to flowers.

Qianer was the favorite maid of Gongsun Meiyu while Meiyu was a concubine of the Profound God-Monarch. He liked her to the point that rumors spread about how she might become the first wife. Because of this, her servants caught her momentum as well, thus making Gongsun Qianer a character that could call for the wind and clouds at the Profound Sea Dynasty.

Naturally, ordinary disciples would want to acquaint themselves with such a person.

Besides her, there were a few others such as Dao Attendant Lin and Yan Yanglong.

Dao Attendant Lin came by himself. He descended from the sky directly into the sea where the water split to make way for him.

This dao attendant was around sixteen or seventeen years old with a slight immortal and ethereal aura. His face was jade-like. If it wasn't for his daoist robe, others would actually think that he wasn't part of the mundane world.

Many young cultivators came to greet him the moment he arrived. It was a warm welcome. Even the youths with some status came to greet him as well: "Please send my regards to the Daoist."

Many were envious of him being able to cultivate the Stainless Void Imperfection Physique Law, so they continuously sung his praise.

One of the youths spoke: “Dao Brother, your Immortal Physique is out of this world. It won’t be long until you find some success with it, such as half completion at the age of thirty.”

“No way, no way...” Dao Attendant Lin smiled humbly in response: “I am only a firefly compared to my master, I can’t reach the apex.”

Despite the humble response, he seemed quite pleased with himself.

The “master” he was referring to was Daoist Lin of the Immaculate Expanse, a famous contemporary talent.

The Immaculate Expanse was a lineage created by a grand completion Immortal Physique user. It had the Stainless Physique Law that could be trained into the Void Imperfection Physique.

Daoist Lin was the current master of the Immaculate Expanse. It was rumored that his Void Imperfection Physique was at half completion and on the way towards grand completion!

Meanwhile, Dao Attendant Lin was only a servant of Daoist Lin. Nevertheless, he began to follow the daoist at a young age and was

held in high regard, so he became an influential figure as well.

The other big shot who was present was Yan Yanglong, a disciple of the [Extreme Yang Monarch](#).

A red shuttle was docked at Shallow Beach. It was quite huge and cast a shadow down below. Many shuddered in awe after seeing the crimson emblem on the shuttle due to its master — the Extreme Yang Monarch.

It didn't stop there. After letting a youth down, it quickly disappeared. This youth that came down from the shuttle was very handsome and dazzling. It seemed that he would illuminate whatever place he went.

This was Yan Yanglong, a brilliant disciple of the Extreme Yang Monarch. Those who were familiar with the Extreme Yang School came to greet him.

Both the Extreme Yang School and the Immaculate Expanse were famous lineages in the Jade Sea. The Extreme Yang School was also created by a grand completion Immortal Physique user and had the Limitless Divine Yang Immortal Physique Law.

Of course, both of these sects had quite a sizable gap compared to the Void Imperfection Three Schools. Nevertheless, as lineages of the Charming Spirit Race, they still had a very powerful influence in this region of the sea.

Li Qiye returned to the festive Shallow Beach with people coming and going by the minute. This initially quiet place had now become quite rowdy.

He bought some materials necessary for refinement then returned to his inn to process them.

“Step aside, out of the way!” At this time, a commotion could be heard on the streets, creating a chaotic mess.

There had been many cultivators walking through these streets, but now, they had to make way.

A large group of fish at least one thousand strong aggressively swam through these alleys. Each was about three feet long and looked quite similar in appearance with silver bodies and red fins. A sharp spur jutted out of their foreheads, resulting in a ferocious appearance that only became more vicious when they revealed their glistening razor-sharp teeth.

This group of fish could speak. A few of their fins had turned into hands, but they still couldn't evolve from their original form.

“Teeming Sea Tribe...” Expressions changed with the appearance of these ferocious fish. No one wanted to antagonize them.

“Pop!” One cultivator was slow and couldn't get out of the way in time, so the biggest fish in the front mercilessly unleashed his whip.

The cultivator immediately evaded it and was astounded. To be publicly humiliated like this was something that he couldn't bear. This anger gleaned from his eyes as he declared: "You think you're all that just because you're part of the Teeming Tribe? You think you can do as you please?!"

"Hehehe..." The big fish sneered and arrogantly replied: "That's right, our Teeming Tribe is indeed amazing. My children, go, show him our tribe's overbearing domination!"

"Crackle!" The spurs on their heads suddenly flashed with lightning. With a thunderous crackle, the cultivator was struck by it and fell straight down to the ground before he could react.

An even more terrifying event occurred right afterward. The more than one thousand vicious fish suddenly rushed forward and tore him into pieces. They ate him completely without leaving a trace of blood behind. Even his bones were completely and thoroughly chewed up.

The crowd was creeped out even more. In just a moment, everyone quickly retreated with not one daring to block these fish any longer.

"Hehehe, this is our Teeming Tribe's domination, got it?" The leading fish looked around with an imposing momentum.

The crowd was moved by the bullish behavior from this tribe, but they didn't dare to say anything. No one really wanted to

provoke the Teeming Sea Tribe!

This was a great tribe among the sea demons, especially in the Jade Sea. Some even said that the Teeming Sea Tribe was the most populous demon race in the Heaven Spirit World.

Even though they were sea demons, they weren't welcomed by the other sea demons. On the contrary, they were considered a low-level race or even a wretched race.

The truth was not far from this. Despite their vast population, the Teeming Sea Tribe consisted of low-level demons that couldn't get rid of their true appearance. They needed a very long time to cultivate into a human form. Their humanoid members were all powerful existences and part of the royal clans.

They might be weaker than the other sea demons, but in their own way, they were also the most fearsome because of their unimaginable numbers. It could be said that their numbers rivaled the rest of the fish in the Heaven Spirit World.

There was a phrase in this world: any place with water would have the Teeming Sea Tribe. Just this belief alone was indicative of their massive hordes.

Their reproductive capabilities could only be described with the word madness. There was no way to kill all of them. In the long years, their lairs had been attacked several times. However, they rose time after time by reproducing. Ultimately, the sects and tribes that had destroyed the Teeming Sea Tribe were wiped out by

them.

This was the scariest aspect of this weak tribe; it was impossible to kill them all!

Ancestor -> Master -> Disciple (Third Gen)

Yang represents sun/hot/male, yin represents moon/cold/female.

Chapter 1196: Eating Dragon Tendon

After seeing the quick meal they made out of the cultivator, a lot of people were frozen stiff and didn't dare to block their way.

The thousand fish became even more emboldened by the silent crowd. They arrogantly trod forward on a rampage without any hesitation.

However, they didn't get far before having to stop because someone was taking a stroll on the street.

The other pedestrians had all ran away long ago, so the path was fairly empty. But now, a single youth was standing there, so he seemed especially conspicuous with no intention of backing off.

Moreover, this person was a human, so it seemed even more out of place.

The biggest fish snapped: "Brat, are you blind? You dare to block our path?!"

The spectators on both sides of the streets were sweating for the human youth. This boy must not know how terrifying the Teeming Sea Tribe was.

Of course, it was Li Qiye walking down the street. He didn't bat an eyelash since he didn't care for this fish at all.

The fish leader was furious after being shown such disdain by a human boy. It yelled: “Brat, You ignore the accepting heavens and barge into the unwelcoming hell! My children, feast on him until there is not a single pulp left!”

A different fish added with an evil tone: “Heh, boy, we like to eat human flesh the most, so plump and fresh!”

“Crackle!” The spurs on the thousand fish’s heads began to channel lightning that was then shot right at Li Qiye.

The spectators nearby couldn’t bear to watch any longer. They could already see Li Qiye being torn into pieces in an instant.

“Pop!” The powerful lightning bolt struck his body, but there wasn’t even a tiny spark. It seemed to be completely absorbed by him.

Keep in mind that even the lightning pond from a tribulation couldn’t do anything to him. His Ancient Void Rune could absorb all tribulations in this world, so this tiny lightning bolt was nothing to him.

The vicious fish were all shocked to see the attack have no effect. During their daze, Li Qiye pointed his finger forward. Next, one could hear a thunderous crackle. Extremely powerful lightning burst from the tip of his finger like a brilliant sun. Clusters of lightning suddenly surged wildly in an unstoppable manner.

Fiery sparks sprang up as the lightning clusters swept by with an indescribable speed.

Time seemed to stop for a moment. Next, the sounds of bodies falling echoed as more than one thousand fish dropped to the street.

The only fish standing was the biggest one. After seeing his children fall down, he knew he had hit a steel wall and didn't dare to think too much before turning around to escape.

However, he couldn't take two steps before Li Qiye had him gripped by the jaw; he couldn't move at all.

Despite being restrained, the fish was still as arrogant as before and shouted: "Boy, let me go right this instant. I am a vanguard of the Teeming Marquis. If you so much as touch a scale of mine, the army of millions under him will tear you to shreds. They will even uproot you humans from the Heaven Spirit World altogether."

"Teeming Marquis?" Li Qiye smiled and said: "I've never heard of him. Not to mention this insignificant fish marquis, even your entire race is less than an ant in my eyes."

After hearing such disdainful words, the fish immediately cried out: "Little animal, you dare to shame our race? There will be no peace for you humans in the Heaven Spirit World!"

Li Qiye simply smiled and pointed his finger again. With a buzz,

the fish's entire body split into thin and neat fillets.

At this time, a very magical scene happened. Every inch of the fish's meat was separated. Its intestines and internal organs were also removed along with all the meat. Eventually, only the fish bones remained.

On the backbone of this skeleton was a glittering jade-like tendon just like the tendon of a dragon. What was even more incredible was how the pieces of the fish were jumping as if they were still alive.

After Li Qiye tore out the tendon, all of the pieces finally screamed and stopped jumping, becoming devoid of life.

This translucent fish tendon in Li Qiye's hand emitted a beautiful light, as if it was full of life force.

Li Qiye threw it into his mouth and carefully chewed a bit before swallowing. Then he flatly said: "Though it is not a real dragon tendon, it is still quite delicious. Now I'm just missing some sauce."

The crowd was stunned after seeing this. Li Qiye dared to say such things after eating the fish tendon.

Li Qiye glanced at the one thousand fish on the ground and said: "Well, that's another dish for today. It has been awhile since I've eaten a dragon tendon of the Teeming Sea Tribe."

He swept his sleeve forward and stored all of them into his spatial pouch before entering the inn in front of him.

The crowd was still looking at him as he disappeared into the inn. After a while, one person calmed down and swallowed their saliva before whispering: “I heard, I heard that the dragon tendon of the Teeming Tribe is very delicious, but I have never eaten it before.”

His friend next to him immediately warned him: “Are you insane? If the Teeming Tribe heard those words, they will exterminate your family!”

The Teeming Sea Tribe had a straight spine with their muscle surrounding it. They called this part the dragon tendon and this was their most important body part. Without the dragon tendon, they wouldn't be able to survive.

However, it was rumored that this tendon was a special delicacy, one of the most delicious dishes in the sea. Alas, ordinary people wouldn't dare to eat these dragon tendons because once the Teeming Tribe found out, it would bring about their merciless, wrathful vengeance. It could even result in the complete annihilation of their race.

Only top-level experts such as invincible Godkings, Immortal Emperors, treefathers and sea gods would dare to openly eat dragon tendons.

Of course, the Teeming Tribe wouldn't dare to do anything against these top-level experts and had to pretend as if nothing had happened.

In the Heaven Spirit World, some people said that sea gods and treefathers had all eaten dragon tendons before. No one really knew if this was true or not.

Li Qiye stepped into the inn with the whirlpool again. It was the one opened by Ye Tu's senior uncle. The boss here enthusiastically greeted him because of the school's command. In their territories, they must do their best to treat Li Qiye well.

"Boss, give me a good root of turmeric and some fermented bean paste." Li Qiye sat down and swung his sleeve. All the vicious fish fell to the ground.

The boss and customers were astounded to see the mountain-like heap of fish before them.

"Teeming Fish!" The boss's expression changed along with many of the guests'.

In spite of this, the boss didn't do anything and immediately brought some turmeric and aged sauce over for Li Qiye.

Despite being struck by his lightning, these fish were not dead. They were only limp on the ground and couldn't move at all.

After preparing the turmeric and paste, Li Qiye casually picked up one of the fish. With a silver knife in his left hand, he cut into the fish's back to reveal the dragon tendon. With a pair of chopstick in his the other hand, he swiftly pulled out the tendon.

“Ah!” The fish screamed and died immediately after its tendon was taken.

Li Qiye dipped the tendon into the sauce and carefully chewed while nodding his head approvingly: “This is the taste, one of the seafood delicacies in the Heaven Spirit World.”

After he finished, he grabbed another fish. His hands were as smooth as flowing water as they instantly removed the dragon tendon and dipped it into the sauce before putting it into his mouth. Everything seemed so coordinated and perfect. He was enjoying this just like an emperor savoring his meal.

The guests were slack-jawed from this scene. This was far too domineering.

Daring to eat dragon tendons in public — this was simply provoking the entire Teeming Sea Tribe, the millions and millions of Teeming Fish in the Heaven Spirit World!

In the present day, only the top level experts would dare to eat these tendons out in the open. Of course, some weaker experts couldn't help but catch them and eat them as well, but they didn't dare to do so publicly.

However, this human boy didn't care for any of this. This was the most overbearing and arrogant display of a feast.

“Ah!” Another scream resounded as Li Qiye repeated his delicious procedure.

A dao attendant stood up and warned him: “Fellow Daoist, your actions are too brutal. It is too much to eat dragon tendons before everyone like this.”

Chapter 1197: Dao Attendant Lin

This dao attendant was situated in a corner near a window. There were some other cultivators sitting with him that seemed to be moon gazing. When the dao attendant called Li Qiye out, these cultivators looked at him with unfriendly gazes as well.

The guests in the inn held their breaths after seeing this. Some even moved further back lest they get involved in this mess.

Many of the guests recognized this attendant. It was Dao Attendant Lin, the servant of Daoist Lin from the Immaculate Expanse.

Not to mention this attendant's powerful backing, this young man ahead surely wasn't a nice person either since he dared to eat dragon tendons publicly. At the very least, he must be very fierce.

Moreover, this involved the Teeming Sea Tribe, and no one with a sense of self-preservation wanted to deal with them.

Li Qiye chewed another dragon tendon then gulped it down before slowly turning towards the attendant: "Immaculate Expanse, right? Your progenitor also ate dragon tendons. He swallowed millions of tendons in one gulp, it is no big deal."

Dao Attendant Lin wanted to question Li Qiye because the Immaculate Expanse had some friendship with the Teeming Sea Tribe. After all, this tribe numbered in the billions, so it made sense that it had some relationships with the sects in this world.

However, he didn't expect such a response from Li Qiye. In the Heaven Spirit World, the majority of the top level experts had all eaten dragon tendons before. After all, they were a type of delicacy.

Even though he didn't know if his progenitor had eaten them or not, he didn't dare to deny this claim.

"Well, well, it is not the same in this case." He struggled to blurt out a reply.

Li Qiye took out another tendon and chewed on it carefully before lazily speaking: "Oh? Not the same? How is it not similar? Do tell. Is it because your progenitor used fire to broil them instead? Then I would really be disappointed, that is like steaming a good pear. The best and most delicious way to eat dragon tendon is with turmeric and aged seasoning..."

"... Back then when Immortal Emperor Wu Gou was young, he used this very type of seasoning and ate tens of millions of dragon tendons. The Teeming Fish were so scared that they ran to the bottom of the sea and didn't dare to come out for a period of time. This became a well-known legend. As for your Immaculate Expanse Progenitor, who knows what he did back then?" Li Qiye ate one more tendon at this point.

He seemed to be quite pleased with this feast. In fact, many spectators were quietly swallowing their own saliva, but they didn't dare to join in.

This delicious meal was no secret in the Heaven Spirit World. Everyone knew that the Teeming Fish were the most vicious and numerous. However, few people dared to say that their tendons were also extremely delicious!

Li Qiye truly made many people hungry, but no one wanted to incite the anger of the Teeming Tribe. His words also silenced Dao Attendant Lin and shocked the inn's boss as well. He suddenly involved the Void Imperfection School. After all, this was no longer Immortal Emperor Wu Gou's generation, his school also didn't want to provoke this fish tribe even if they were stronger. The real problem was that there were too many of them.

"You..." Dao Attendant Lin couldn't retort. He struggled to say: "You are eating dragon tendons before all of us, this is a very cruel and evil display. The Teeming Tribe is part of the sea demons, a great race in the Heaven Spirit World. You are eating living cultivators, an extremely vicious path far from the dao!"

"Extremely vicious and straying away from the dao?" Li Qiye laughed in response: "If you are saying that I am vicious, then I will accept it. However, if this is because of me eating dragon tendons, then my teeth are about to fall out from laughter..."

"... Teeming Tribe? They're nothing special, merely living creatures no different from beasts. Not to mention that I am a human, even the sea demons in this world do not consider them to be cultivators."

He carefully chewed on more tendons before leisurely continuing: “Don’t think so highly of yourself. In their eyes, you cultivators are no different from food. They have eaten countless cultivators and mortals, so me eating them today is part of the natural order.”

At this point, he coldly glared at the boy: “When you eat meat, do you consider yourself to be cruel as well?”

“You...” The attendant was speechless once again. Because of some ties with the Teeming Prince, he wanted to speak up for the Teeming Tribe, but he didn’t expect to be left tongue-tied by Li Qiye’s swift rhetoric!

The guests didn’t dare to openly praise Li Qiye’s response despite agreeing in their minds. The Teeming Tribe being cruel was not anything new. Their enemies would eventually be eaten until there was nothing left. Countless cultivation sects had been destroyed and innumerable mortals had been devoured. Alas, the angry cultivators and lineages were apprehensive of them and didn’t dare to speak up.

Li Qiye, today, said many things that resonated with the crowd, so they cheered him on in their minds.

Li Qiye stopped paying attention to Dao Attendant Lin and got bored after eating for a while. He immediately burned all of the fish and stood up to leave.

The dao attendant snorted while watching his departing back.

The youth didn't expect to be humiliated like this. He had a hard time swallowing this anger. His master was Daoist Lin, the leader of the Immaculate Expanse. As his master's confidant, he was respected everywhere he went while basking in the spotlight. But today, this human junior didn't spare him any face at all in front of the crowd — he absolutely wouldn't let go of this grievance!

After refining the necessary items, he left Shallow Beach and headed for the coral forest.

Many cultivators were already here, waiting. They came from all corners of the oceans for the needlefish.

Some were riding huge ships on the ocean while others were controlling swift shuttles. There were also those who rode sea turtles or gigantic whales. It was a colorful and diverse scene.

These people had occupied some places at the coral forest, such as the hills. Many began to place traps around the coral trees just to wait for the needlefish...

Fortunately, the forest was vast, so for the time being there was no fighting for spots.

Li Qiye found Ye Tu and Teng Jiwen. The two of them had caught many insects for Li Qiye and already ground them to dust in accordance to his instructions.

He found an open place and casually took a lap around to pick a

spot before ordering the two boys: “Sprinkle this dust over the forest, do it all over the trees and ground.”

The two immediately followed his command. Meanwhile, Li Qiye placed his refined materials onto the ground. He wanted to refine something else here. It was an item that resembled a fish hook with a very long string. This overly long string actually covered the fish hook completely.

When Li Qiye was ready and the two had sprayed the insect powder everywhere, Ye Tu asked with curiosity: “Young Noble, what are you trying to do?”

To which Li Qiye responded while calmly sitting on the highest position in this location: “Fishing!”

He asked: “Fishing? Fishing for the needlefish?” However, he immediately felt that this wasn’t right. Li Qiye had said that he didn’t care for the needlefish.

He changed his question: “Is there something else besides the needlefish?”

He was the supervisor of Shallow Beach and was very familiar with this area. Outside of the blossoming coral trees leading out the precious needlefish, the other marine creatures here were not worth fighting over.

Li Qiye replied with a smile: “Yes, there is a devil shark, but you

haven't seen it before.”

“Devil shark?” Ye Tu carefully thought about it, but he had never heard of such a fish in this neighborhood.

Teng Jiwen was a bit more knowledgeable than Ye Tu. He recalled a legend after hearing Li Qiye and spoke with surprise: “The Archdevil Armored Shark?”

“Indeed, that’s it.” Li Qiye said: “I want to catch it, otherwise I wouldn’t have gone to these lengths to prepare.”

“Archdevil Armored Shark?” Ye Tu asked Teng Jiwen: “What kind of fish is it?”

Teng Jiwen shook his head: “I am not clear on the specifics. I only heard that it is an extremely vicious creature. It’s also quite powerful as well. Legend states that it appeared in the Bottomless Trench, but no one has spotted it before.”

With that, he became a bit worried and asked: “People say that it is extremely strong, can we actually handle it?”

“Not us.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Just me. Stand to the side and watch to avoid accidents, or I won’t be able to explain it to your sects.”

Chapter 1198: Lively Coral Forest

Both Ye Tu and Teng Jiwen didn't oppose or support his decision.

Li Qiye looked around the area a bit to make sure everything was ready before telling the two: "Okay, the two of you should change as well. Transform and conceal your identities, it's up to you."

"Transform?" Teng Jiwen was surprised. After all, he was the descendant of the Heavenvine Citadel. His conduct was open and straightforward, there was no need to hide or do anything in secret.

Li Qiye smiled and said: "There will be disputes when benefits are up for grabs. Conflicts are inevitable, so when one of you happens to be from the Void Imperfection School and the other from the Heavenvine Citadel, it will have a negative influence if you two follow me around killing."

Ye Tu quickly said: "Young Noble, rest assured, the schoolmaster told me to guide you and be a good host. If anything happens in our territory, we will maneuver all three schools."

This was not an exaggeration or a careless statement. There were very few things that the three schools couldn't handle due to their sheer strength.

Teng Jiwen supported him as well: "Ye Tu is right, your enemy is our citadel's enemy. We will always tread together with you."

The Sunflower Forefather had instructed him earlier. This type of little trouble didn't matter to their citadel, so they naturally wanted to take on some risk for Li Qiye.

"The two of you are mistaken." Li Qiye shook his head and smiled: "That isn't what I meant. Not wanting to cause trouble for the two of you is only a small part of the reason. The truth is that I don't want you to block my way."

"Block your way?" The two of them were a bit confused after hearing this.

Li Qiye explained: "With you two and your sects, who would dare to come and provoke me? How can I find a reason to kill then?"

Such words astounded the two; it was as if the guy was overzealous in his quest to become a mass murderer.

"There's no need to overthink things." Li Qiye chuckled: "I love trouble, especially those who come to chase me. The more the better so I can have a baptism of blood. This is the only thing that makes me feel alive and gets my blood boiling."

With that, a glimmer of amusement flashed deep in his eyes. He could imagine this day play out already.

The two of them glanced at each other. For some reason, Li Qiye's smile creeped them out; it was like a beast showing a kind

smile to a little rabbit. Anyone would be scared after seeing this smile.

This had a greater effect on Teng Jiwen. He remembered when Li Qiye didn't care for anything back at the Heavenvine Citadel. He held the ancestors in disdain and ignored absolutely everything. Just imagining the possible massacre back at the citadel left him shuddering. He could smell a sanguine stench right now. There was a faint scene of carnage with mountains of flesh and rivers of blood.

The two of them quickly hid their true identities and turned into ordinary attendants before standing next to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye sat down in a meditative pose inside the coral forest and slowly closed his eyes as if he was hibernating.

He was not the only one to occupy an area here at the coral forest. Many people had occupied their own locations and drawn circles around their chosen zones to warn others.

In a few short days, the vast coral forest became quite crowded. The latecomers didn't have any spots, so conflicts became inevitable. In this enclosed situation, those who came from powerful sects or were personally strong were at a great advantage. No one dared to compete with them for the hills. Even if they came later, they could easily seize others' territories.

Thus, the place became particularly lively in a short amount of time. All kinds of cultivators from all the races appeared in the

forest to wait for the flowers to blossom.

Battles and robberies were common everyday occurrences. Many cultivators had yet to see the blossoming coral flowers before they fell in these struggles.

Yan Yanglong came as well during this waiting period. He came by himself; the places he stepped on were illuminated by sunlight.

After walking around the coral forest, he chose a hill near the Bottomless Trench. The problem was that some other cultivators had already claimed it.

He stood above them while sweeping over them with his eyes and told these cultivators: “This place is mine. Will you leave by your own volition or will I have to resort to force?”

The people who occupied this land didn’t want to fight against Yan Yanglong, so they packed their items and handed this hill over to him.

No one would laugh at them for conceding in this fashion. Yan Yanglong was a disciple of the Extreme Yang Monarch. This meant that he had enough strength to look down on them. Which minor sect or vagrant cultivator was willing to mess with the monarch’s disciple?

Not long after this event, Gongsun Qianer arrived as well. Her entourage was much bigger than Yan Yanglong’s. Her followers

were all powerful. Their group, under her lead, was quite bullish; everyone had to make way for them.

No one dared to say a word about her aggressive attitude. Even though she was only a maid, they didn't look down on her status and strength.

Her master was a concubine of the Profound God-Monarch — this was a young character known by all in the Heaven Spirit World. He came from Gu Chun's four branches and had already become a God-Monarch. It could be said that he was invincible among the younger generation.

In terms of status and power, Yan Yanglong was not necessarily higher than Gongsun Qianer at all.

She took fancy to a bay close to the trench due to its excellent location. It had changed masters several times, so the current cultivator occupying it wasn't friendly at all. He also came from a big sect and had just killed the last person who occupied this location.

She glanced over and told this cultivator: "Scram, this place is mine."

However, he didn't leave. He came from a big sect that was also quite famous at the Jade Sea. If he was to scram after she told him so, how could he have any face left?

He replied with a cold expression: “You are too overbearing, I have already occupied this place.”

She declared in a domineering manner: “I’ll make you scram then.” She had a high status back at the Profound Sea Dynasty, one of the four branches, so she didn’t care for a young cultivator of the same generation as her.

This cultivator stood up and sneered: “Fine, let me see the great techniques of the Profound Sea Dynasty, I hope you have at least learned a little from them.”

The followers next to her scowled and wanted to teach this guy a lesson, however she stopped them and revealed a cold smile: “Such impudent words, worthy of death!”

The phoenix hairpin in her hair flew out before she finished speaking.

It was violet in color and turned into a purple ray that moved at an indiscernible speed. It would pierce through people’s forehead before they could react.

This cultivator was also strong and had great reaction speed. With a changed expression, he formed a mudra to stop the hairpin.

“Pluff!” Blood slowly spilled. The cultivator’s eyes were wide open as he fell down. It was useless even if he was faster; his mudra couldn’t stop this hairpin. Not only did it penetrate his mudra, it

also went straight through his forehead. It was a fatal blow.

She recalled her hairpin and coldly spat out: “Just an ant.” This hairpin was a treasure bestowed by the Profound Sea God-Monarch. It was quite powerful, so ordinary cultivators couldn’t stop its lethal might.

The crowd was astonished by this and didn’t dare to say a word or come closer. Back at Shallow Beach, she would have scruples about killing people due to it being under the jurisdiction of the Void Imperfection School. However, in this coral forest, she could kill whoever she wanted.

Many people were unwilling to near her in order to avoid getting killed.

Li Qiye’s hill was quite far from the Bottomless Trench. Very few people would care about his location, so it was a quiet stay for him. Of course, he wasn’t here for the needlefish, so he didn’t need to pick a place too close to the Bottomless Trench.

He was sitting here with his eyes closed as if he was sleeping.

Not long after Yan Yanglong and Gongsun Qianer got here, Dao Attendant Lin came as well. He also took a lap around the forest before stopping at Li Qiye’s hill.

“A bit courageous. In a world dominated by the three great races, a human actually dares to occupy a mountain by himself.” He

stopped and coldly stared at Li Qiye.

Back at the inn, he had been completely humiliated by Li Qiye. If they weren't at Shallow Beach, he would have taught the fool a lesson already.

Chapter 1199: Needlefish

Li Qiye turned a deaf ear to the attendant's taunt. He remained there in his meditative pose and simply ignored the attendant.

Such an arrogant display enraged the attendant once again. He snorted and said: "Ignorant junior, and arrogant as well. I'm afraid you will die without a burial not long from now!"

Some cultivators noticed this from the distance. Humans were quite rare in the Heaven Spirit World, but this youth was arrogant enough. Not long ago, he opposed the Teeming Sea Tribe and now, he was looking down on Dao Attendant Lin. From this, he offended two big lineages in the Jade Sea right away. Just what was this human boy's background?

Li Qiye finally opened his eyes and revealed a smile: "Come if you dare, your uncle will crush you with one hand. If you are afraid, then get the hell out of here, don't disturb my peace!"

The attendant's expression quickly shifted as a murderous glint flashed across his pupils. However, he restrained himself from taking action.

The crowd became even more confused about this human junior who was spouting such overbearing words.

Everyone thought that the attendant would attack right away to kill Li Qiye. However, the attendant took a deep breath and suppressed his anger.

He gave a cruel smile and sneered: “Ignorant brat, it is not difficult for me to take your dog life. However, the Teeming Marquis has declared that he wants to personally take your life and let you experience a fate worse than death. Just wait, at that time, you will regret having been born into this world. Maybe you will even beg me to end your life then.”

Many people became afraid after hearing this. Someone murmured: “Teeming Marquis, will there not be a single blade of grass left?”

The Teeming Marquis was a royal member of the Teeming Sea Tribe and one of its fierce generals. He had previously led an army of millions to eradicate several lineages. Rumor has it that wherever his army went, not even a single blade of grass would be left. They didn’t only eat their enemies but also all vegetation. Anything with life would be completely chewed up.

Not long ago, Li Qiye had killed a group of Teeming Fish. These fish were the marquis’ soldiers. The marquis was famous for his brutality in the Jade Sea, so he was infuriated when someone publicly ate his soldiers and dragon tendons. Thus, he declared that he would make Li Qiye suffer!

Li Qiye caught a quick glimpse of the attendant before slowly closing his eyes again.

The attendant didn’t pursue the matter. If it wasn’t for the marquis’ declaration, he would have taken this brat’s head

already.

He snorted and left. Not long after, he selected a hill. The cultivator here saw that he wanted it and quickly gathered his stuff and handed over the land. This smart cultivator made the attendant's expression much better. His prestige was still there, very few people in the forest would dare to provoke his authority.

The sea creatures didn't dare to appear. Whether they be crabs or fish, all were hiding since they could sense the terrifying murderous intent from the large number of cultivators present.

As the day of blossoming approached, the cultivators became more and more quiet in anticipation. They would take action the moment the needlefish came out and immediately retreat after catching the first batch.

Eventually, the coral flowers were about to blossom. The entire forest turned silent like the calm before the storm. The little buds finally came out from these flowers. All of them had different colors in the center, making them resemble stars.

Many beautiful flowers bloomed throughout the entire forest in a quiet yet spectacular manner. To see these flowers blooming at the same time was quite shocking and difficult to describe with words.

In a short amount of time, the star-like buds of different colors made this entire area look like a magnificent galaxy, pulling at the spectators' heartstrings.

Everyone held their breaths since they didn't want to break this beautiful serenity while the millions of coral flowers blossomed. In this moment, many people felt that they were immersed in a sea of stars and became in touch with just how vast this world truly was.

Eventually, all the flower buds finally came out. The pollen began to shed from the flowers' core and drifted away with the current. Shortly after, this colorful pollen dyed everything with their shades. The entire area was gorgeous and spectacular.

The crowd became even more nervous while gazing at the Bottomless Trench. They were all waiting for the needlefish to appear.

Only Li Qiye remained calm on his hill without even bothering to look at the trench.

“Crash!” Finally, the sea current surged with waves. The coral forest's water began to move violently as well.

They saw silver shadows rushing out from the trench. The moment these shadows appeared, a net was cast over the sky above the coral forest.

Upon a closer inspection, these shadows were fish swimming for the coral flowers. This was the meaning behind their name. Each of them was as small as a needle and their eyes were even smaller than sesame seeds.

Their speed was quite frightening, like a meteor flashing by. Because of this, when they rushed out, the net immediately blotted out the forest.

Someone shouted after seeing them: “Needlefish!” The rest of the crowd got ready.

“Ah!” However, someone screamed before anyone took action. A weak cultivator wanted to catch these fish, but he couldn’t stop these fast creatures. When a big flock of them rushed over, they pierced him and turned him into a sieve in their quick frenzy.

At this time, everyone else shouted and immediately maneuvered against these fish in order to catch them!

The majority of cultivators came prepared. One took out a huge net and instantly covered many of the fish. This net was a great treasure, but he couldn’t pull it back. He was stuck in the net as well and was pulled by the fish all the way down the Bottomless Trench...

Gongsun Qianer, Dao Attendant Lin, and Yan Yanglong finally took action. They all came from imperial lineages, so they were quite powerful. They caught a large group of fish right away, unlike the other cultivators here.

In this fashion, cultivators were busy catching these fish. However, more were still rushing out from the trench in an endless manner as if they wanted to crush this whole region.

The ones that weren't caught crazily ate the pollen from the flowers. They were like rampaging winds; wherever they went, the initially colorful seawater would turn clear again. It was quite a majestic scene.

Li Qiye's location was quite far from the trench. Although some fish managed to break through the barricade, there weren't many of them that came to this place to eat. Li Qiye continued to ignore them by sitting there.

"Boom!" While everyone was trying to catch these fish, the current became turbulent. A group of sea demons split the water to come to this place. This new group resembled an army more than a school of fish.

"Get out of the way! Scram!" They came with an aggressive momentum. Anyone who stood in their path was instantly killed and their blood dyed the water red.

"Teeming Fish! It is the marquis!" A cultivator screamed after seeing the army that consisted of tens of thousands of fish and quickly retreated.

In a short moment, this army of sea demons completely surrounded Li Qiye's hill with several layers of fish.

A chilling aura pervaded this region with the arrival of this demon army.

Chapter 1200: Teeming Marquis

The atmosphere of the coral forest was strained to the extreme after being invaded by the mass of Teeming Fish. Even those who were catching needlefish stopped in their tracks.

Many were frightened at the sight of the nearly 100,000 Teeming Fish surrounding the hills nearby. They quickly left this troubled location in order to stay safe.

In terms of individual strength, these fish were not that strong. Many cultivators were confident in killing an ordinary fish in a one-on-one. However, their sheer numbers made them dreadful.

Killing one Teeming Fish would be the same as provoking thousands or even hundreds of thousands of Teeming Fish. This was the most frightening matter.

“Someone is about to be very unlucky.” A cultivator murmured after seeing the fish encircling Li Qiye.

Li Qiye still didn’t open his eyes despite being completely trapped.

One person stepped out at this time. It was a Teeming Fish in full human form.

In this great army, very few fish had a human form. Although a few of them were very strong, they still had characteristics of fish

remaining. For example, some had two hands and a human head, but their body was still that of a fish. As for others, they only had a human's head... The majority of them were still in fish form.

The humanoid expert wore armor and had an imposing demeanor. He emitted a powerful aura and a bloodthirsty glare. His entire being gave off the smell of blood as if he had bathed in it, resulting in a chilling air.

“Teeming Marquis.” A person shuddered after seeing him.

This was a noble of the Teeming Tribe. It was said that he had several hundred thousand troops, and this number might have reached the millions mark. He was a marquis that recently rose to prominence in their tribe and was notorious for his cruelty.

“You are the brat that ate dragon tendons!” He stared at Li Qiye with bloodthirst in his eyes.

Li Qiye finally opened his eyes. However, he was not looking at the Teeming Marquis but at one particular needlefish.

Although millions of these fish were trapped in this forest by cultivators, some still made it to this particular region and were crazily devouring the pollen in the water.

This fish was not that much different from the others. If one had to point something out, it would be that this fish had a pair of feelers that others didn't. They were extremely small, one on each

side and were quite difficult to see even upon carefully scrutinizing it.

The other needlefish were eating the pollen in the water, but this one was eating the insect powder that Ye Tu and Teng Jiwen ground and scattered on the ground.

The marquis was not happy at being scorned by Li Qiye, so his expression turned sour.

He smiled cruelly: “Ignorant brat, today, I will show you a fate worse than death!”

Li Qiye finally turned back to look at the marquis and slowly said: “Run now and I’ll spare your dog life. Otherwise, I will massacre the entire Teeming Tribe in the future.”

The crowd was speechless after hearing this. People looked at each other and felt that this statement was too outrageous.

Someone murmured: “He’s not afraid of biting his tongue while bragging at all.”

Over the millions of years, a few people had made this claim that they would destroy the Teeming Tribe. Some had even attacked their lairs, but in the end, they couldn’t wipe out this race due to its great numbers.

But now, this human junior was making this claim. This was

simply not knowing the immensity of the heaven and earth and, in the eyes of the spectators, being too naive.

“Which hole did this kid come out from? He doesn’t know how terrifying the Teeming Fish are.” A cultivator shook his head.

“Good, good, good.” The marquis actually smiled instead of becoming angry. He turned back to the tens of thousands of fish behind him and shouted: “My children, did you hear that? This little animal says he wants to destroy our tribe!”

Boisterous laughter immediately resounded. All the fish started laughing and felt that there couldn’t be a better joke than this.

“Well, since this animal dares to make this claim, we don’t need to be polite anymore.” The marquis smilingly said: “Children, it is time to eat. Remember, one bite per person, but don’t kill him just yet. Peck his flesh but let him survive, I want to torture him!”

“Affirmative!” All of the Teeming Fish shouted and immediately rushed towards Li Qiye like hungry sharks.

At this time, they didn’t try to attack him with lightning, they wanted him to feel his flesh being torn apart so that he would suffer the agonizing pain.

The marquis exposed a cruel smile as his horde rushed towards Li Qiye. In his mind, it would only take an instant for Li Qiye to be eaten by his underlings until only his bones were left, letting him

survive with only a single breath remaining.

That would be when he would use the most vicious method to let this brat live on. His wails would echo across the entire region.

The cultivators here couldn't bear to watch. They could already see the brutal scene and Li Qiye's miserable end. However, some of them were gloating as well. They believed that this human junior was courting death. He chose to barge into hell instead of heading for heaven. Opposing the Teeming Fish would bring about a genocide.

"Mere ants wanting to commit suicide!" Li Qiye was too lazy to look at the fish for his eyes were still fixated on that one needlefish.

Right when all the fish rushed over and were about to attack Li Qiye, Li Qiye spread out his palm and coldly declared: "Die!"

A huge black hole emerged from his palm, engulfing all of the Teeming Fish like a tidal wave.

The black hole twisted all the fish into fleshy suds before swallowing them whole.

"Ah!" Screams shrieked left and right. Before the Teeming Fish knew what was happening, all of them were devoured by the black hole without even leaving behind a corpse.

Myriad Dao Fist, Heaven Devourer Evil Fist. This was based on the Heaven Devourer Evil Physique. The moment it came out, the fish were no different from moths flying towards a flame. It was an attack that resembled a shark capable of swallowing everything while the Teeming Fish were only tiny prey barely enough to satiate the fist's appetite.

This reversal shocked everyone, including the Teeming Marquis. In the next second, his body was up in the air.

Before the crowd could grasp the situation, Li Qiye was gripping the marquis by the neck. This only took a split second so no one really saw it happen.

Li Qiye glared at the fish and chillingly uttered: "Just an ant that's barely at the Heavenly Sovereign level, yet you dare to prance around in front of me?"

"You..." While spasming, the marquis had difficulty speaking with his neck gripped.

Eventually, he gasped for breath but didn't change his ferocious nature. He cried out: "Little animal, even if you kill me, my race will not spare you. Our billion-strong armies will tear you into pieces and eradicate your ten clans!"

Countless people held their breaths while watching this scene. They knew that this was not just an exaggeration, the Teeming Race had established numerous countries in the vast oceans.

What was even more scary was that they were quite unified. Killing one of their marquises would bring about revenge from these innumerable fish.

The marquis was not strong by himself, but behind him were hundreds of countries and billions of citizens — this was the scariest part.

“I’ll be waiting.” Li Qiye smiled and placed his palm on the marquis’ body.

“Pop!” The marquis let out a shrill scream. His cultivation was destroyed by Li Qiye, thus his true body was revealed. He was a gigantic fish.

Li Qiye’s palm ran on the fish’s body, stripping him into thin slices. In the blink of an eye, the skeleton of the fish appeared. One could still see a heart beating inside.

Li Qiye instantly ripped the dragon tendon from the fish’s backbone, severing it of its life.

He casually threw the tendon into his mouth and began chewing. He looked around at the other cultivators before swallowing and spoke: “If you see any Teeming Fish, let them know that I, Li Qiye, do not like them. They better scam to the ends of the world to get away from me. Otherwise, not only will I tear them apart, I’ll also eat their dragon tendons as an appetizer for my wine!”

Table of Contents

[Emperor's Domination](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1101: Elusive Heavenly Golden Water](#)

[Chapter 1102: Challenge](#)

[Chapter 1103: Warm Up](#)

[Chapter 1104: Mighty Spear](#)

[Chapter 1105: Divine Ascension War Emperor Dao](#)

[Chapter 1106: Heaven Suppression Fist](#)

[Chapter 1107: Ambush](#)

[Chapter 1108: Long Distance Chase](#)

[Chapter 1109: Knowing That There Is A Tiger On The Mountain Yet Still Continuing To Climb](#)

[Chapter 1110: Divine Ancestor](#)

[Chapter 1111: Immortal Dao Decapitator](#)

[Chapter 1112: Bu Lianxiang's Rage](#)

[Chapter 1113: Love And Hate](#)

[Chapter 1114: A Love Lasting For Million Years](#)

[Chapter 1115: The Journey Begins](#)

[Chapter 1116: Hard To Say](#)

[Chapter 1117: Meeting Little Autumn Again](#)

[Chapter 1118: Nihility Temple](#)

[Chapter 1119: Myriad Thoughts Pot](#)

[Chapter 1120: A Gambling Bout](#)

[Chapter 1121: Buddhist Debate](#)

[Chapter 1122: Leaving](#)

[Chapter 1123: Space Scripture](#)

[Chapter 1124: Shaking The Plateau](#)

[Chapter 1125: Qian Suyun](#)

[Chapter 1126: Eternal Parting](#)

[Chapter 1127: The Storm](#)

[Chapter 1128: Siege Before The City Walls](#)

[Chapter 1129: Mysterious Prisoner](#)

[Chapter 1130: Mu Shaodi](#)

[Chapter 1131: Ancient Triangular School](#)

[Chapter 1132: Counter-Offensive](#)

[Chapter 1133: Xiao Qingtian](#)
[Chapter 1134: One Halberd Rampaging The Nine Heavens](#)
[Chapter 1135: Benevolent Armament](#)
[Chapter 1136: Sweeping Through The Opposing Horde](#)
[Chapter 1137: Immortal Emperor](#)
[Chapter 1138: Grand Completion Eternal Physique](#)
[Chapter 1139: The Invincible Magu](#)
[Chapter 1140: Fallen Imperial Corpse](#)
[Chapter 1141: I Alone Am Invincible](#)
[Chapter 1142: Magu's Oath](#)
[Chapter 1143: Old Devil's Past](#)
[Chapter 1144: One Mistake; An Eternal Sin](#)
[Chapter 1145: Geezer Su](#)
[Chapter 1146: Indignation](#)
[Chapter 1147: Apricot Vase](#)
[Chapter 1148: Deepest Love](#)
[Chapter 1149: Hidden Immortal Hall](#)
[Chapter 1150: Old Xian's Decision](#)
[Chapter 1151: Appointing A Successor](#)
[Chapter 1152: Setting Out](#)
[Chapter 1153: Parting](#)
[Chapter 1154: Great Maelstrom](#)
[Chapter 1155: Secret Of The Maelstrom's Depths](#)
[Chapter 1156: The Beginning At The Heaven Spirit World](#)
[Chapter 1157: Golden Isle](#)
[Chapter 1158: Life Origination](#)
[Chapter 1159: Golden Isle Lord](#)
[Chapter 1160: Ye Xiaoxiao](#)
[Chapter 1161: You Have To Marry Me](#)
[Chapter 1162: The Fiery Ye Xiaoxiao](#)
[Chapter 1163: Ye Xiaoxiao's Mysterious Bloodline](#)
[Chapter 1164: Mysterious Girl](#)
[Chapter 1165: Exquisite Valley Lord](#)
[Chapter 1166: Kong Qinru](#)
[Chapter 1167: Humans Are Only Sojourners](#)
[Chapter 1168: Peacock Land](#)
[Chapter 1169: Peacock Tree](#)
[Chapter 1170: Fate Of The Peacock Tree](#)
[Chapter 1171: Replenishing Life For The Peacock Tree](#)

[Chapter 1172: Teng Jiwen](#)
[Chapter 1173: Deal With Teng Jiwen](#)
[Chapter 1174: Ongoing Plan](#)
[Chapter 1175: Heavenvine Citadel](#)
[Chapter 1176: Heavenvine Citadel Lord](#)
[Chapter 1177: Ancestral Vine's Calamity](#)
[Chapter 1178: Negotiation](#)
[Chapter 1179: Hao Yuzhen](#)
[Chapter 1180: Fairness](#)
[Chapter 1181: Teng Jiwen's Ability](#)
[Chapter 1182: Kill Without Mercy](#)
[Chapter 1183: Sunflower Forefather](#)
[Chapter 1184: Vine Controller](#)
[Chapter 1185: The Missing Calamity](#)
[Chapter 1186: Calamity](#)
[Chapter 1187: Treatment](#)
[Chapter 1188: Shallow Beach](#)
[Chapter 1189: Ye Tu](#)
[Chapter 1190: Void Imperfection Schoolmaster](#)
[Chapter 1191: Bloodline](#)
[Chapter 1192: Bottomless Trench](#)
[Chapter 1193: Zhuo Jianshi](#)
[Chapter 1194: Mythical Divine Weapon](#)
[Chapter 1195: Teeming Sea Tribe](#)
[Chapter 1196: Eating Dragon Tendon](#)
[Chapter 1197: Dao Attendant Lin](#)
[Chapter 1198: Lively Coral Forest](#)
[Chapter 1199: Needlefish](#)
[Chapter 1200: Teeming Marquis](#)